

Grammatica Anglo-Lusitana & Lusitano Anglica:

O R, A

NEW GRAMMAR,

ENGLISH and PORTUGUESE,

A N D

PORTUGUESE and ENGLISH;

Divided into two PARTS:

The FIRST, for the Instruction of the ENGLISH,
who are desirous to attain a Knowledge of the *Portu-
guese* Language.

The SECOND, for the Use of the PORTUGUESE,
who desire to be Instructed in the *English* Tongue.

By J. CASTRO, *Mestre e Traductor de ambas as Linguas.*

THE FIFTH EDITION.

Revised and Corrected by A. DE PAZ, Teacher of
the Portuguese Language.

L O N D O N:

Printed for T. DAVIES, in Russel-Street, Covent-Garden;
G. BURNET, near Norfolk Street, in the Strand; RI-
CHARDSON and URQUHART, at the Royal Exchange;
and P. ELMSLY (Successor to Mr. VAILLANT) facing
Southampton Street, in the Strand. 1770.

NEW GRAMMAR
OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

AND
A
NEW GRAMMAR
OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

THE FIRST, IN THE
KNOWLEDGE OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

THE SECOND, IN THE
KNOWLEDGE OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

THE THIRD, IN THE
KNOWLEDGE OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

THE FOURTH, IN THE
KNOWLEDGE OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

THE FIFTH, IN THE
KNOWLEDGE OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES

THE SIXTH, IN THE
KNOWLEDGE OF THE
PORTUGUESE AND ENGLISH
LANGUAGES





TO THE
READER.

SINCE the *Portuguese* Language is of great Use in Commerce, we justly admire how it comes that it is so little known among us. Most people think it a harsh and unpolite Language; and as the *Spanish* is commonly imagined to be its Mother, we generally apply ourselves to this, and neglect the other; but that these are vulgar Errors, and that the *Portuguese* is as valuable a Language as the *Spanish*, both in Respect to its Original and Use, I hope to prove by the following Remarks.

To trace the Rise of this Language, as well as of all others, we must look back into History, to know what Nations have inhabited this Country. The earliest Account we have is, that the *Grecians* and *Carthaginians* had several Colonies in *Spain*; but as the *Romans*, when they made themselves Masters of the Kingdoms of *Spain* and *Portugal*, soon expelled them, there is hardly any Sign of their Language either in the *Spanish* or *Portuguese* remaining.

As the *Roman* Language, by reason of their powerful Conquests, became a Kind of an universal Language, so it obtained likewise in *Spain* and *Portugal*, where (for about five Centuries) it was spoken as familiarly as in *Latium* itself. Then the *Goths* and *Vandals* made themselves Masters of these Countries, and possessed them almost 200 Years, till the *Saracens* were called over from *Africa*, to revenge an Injury their *Gothic* King *Roderick* had done to a Lady of an antient and noble Family. Upon this, the *Saracens* rendered themselves Masters of *Spain* and *Portugal*, and remained in Possession of them till they and the *Jews* were expelled by King *Ferdinand* in 1485; who, as the most secure Means of keeping out those Nations, set up an Inquisition, for which Pope *Innocent* gave him the Surname of *Catholick King*.

All these Nations, who made themselves Masters of *Spain*, subdued likewise the Province of *Lusitania*, now called *Portugal*, because of its lying so conveniently on the Ocean, which opened a Commerce to other Parts, and secured the quiet Possession of the rest.

Thus we see the *Portuguese* Language is coeval with the *Spanish*, and that it cannot be said to proceed from the *Spanish*, since it had the same original with that Language.

But that it has a different, or which some will call a more barbarous Sound, proceeds from this, that *Henry* Duke of *Burgundy*, one of the Family of the Dukes of *Lorraine*, (who married

married a Daughter of *Aphonso VI.* King of *Castile*, with whom he had the Province of *Lusitania* for a Portion) introduced the *Gaulic* Dialect: And this we may conclude with the more Probability, since that *French* Prince was the Occasion that the Province *Lusitania* received the Name of *Portugal*; for great Numbers of his Countrymen followed him, who intermarried with the People of *Oporto*, where his Court then resided; and from this Mixing of the *Gauls* with the people of *Oporto*, the Kingdom obtained the Name of *Portu-gal*.

And if we observe, that the Difference there is betwixt the *Spanish* and *Portuguese* Pronunciation is all conformable to the *Gaulic* or *French* Dialect, I hope this Conjecture will be allowed a good one. Those that know *French*, and compare their Pronunciation with the *Portuguese*, require no farther Demonstration; but for the sake of others, who have not that Advantage, I here observe the following Particularities.

The *Portuguese* then differ from the *Spaniards* in the sound of their *g*, *j*, *m*, *x*, *lh*, *ao*, *oes* *aa*. The *Spaniards* sound the *g*, *j*, and *x* as a Guttural, with a strong Aspiration in the Throat; but the *Portuguese* sound the *g* and *j* exactly like the *French*, and the *x* they use instead of the *French ch*, except in some Words derived from the *Latin*, as is shewn in the Grammar, where it keeps the Sound it has in the *English* Tongue. The *m* sounds like *eng* in *English*: This is a true *French* Sound;

for

for when the *Portuguese* found *bon* good, and the *French* their *bon* good, there is no Difference at all to be perceived. Likewise the *Portuguese* words *son*, *ton*, a Sound, a Tone, the *French* write *son*, *ton*, but pronounce exactly alike. The *the* sounds like the *French* *ll* when an *i* stands before it, and another Vowel follows; thus the *French* Word *filie*, a Daughter or Girl, would be wrote by the *Portuguese* *filhe*. The *ao* is pronounced like *aung* in *English*, which is also of *French* Extraction; and the *French* Words *faon*, *paon*, a Deer, a Peacock, if wrote in *Portuguese* Characters, must be *faõ* or *fam*, or *paõ* or *pam*. Besides, it is obvious that the *French* often sound the *em* like *aung*. The *oens* is pronounced like *oings*; this also is easily perceived to be a *French* sound, and therefore, for Brevity's Sake, we'll say no more on this Head, but take it for granted, that the Sounds wherein the *Portuguese* differ from the *Spanish* are of *French* Extraction.

And as the *French* Language has so generally obtained all over *Europe*, by reason of its Softness of Sound and Expression, it is surprizing that what is admired in the *French* Tongue should be condemned and despised in the *Portuguese*. What I have said here is to vindicate the *Portuguese* Tongue from the Prejudices which it labours under in the Opinion of Men. And, to conclude this Argument, we may very justly say, that the *Portuguese* Tongue has a Mixture of the *Spanish* Gravity and *French* Softness, and is as useful in Commerce as the *Spanish*,
and

and therefore equal (if not superior) to its Rival.

Was I to enumerate the many *Portuguese* Settlements on the *African* Coast and both the *Indies*, I could easily verify what I advance; but that is too obvious to need being taken Notice of here; I will only observe, that the *Portuguese*, being near a-kin to the *Lingua-Franca*, is current upon all the Coasts of the *East-Indies* and *Africa*; and as a *Portuguese* is easily understood by a *Spaniard*, one may correspond to all their Dominions in *Europe* and *America* in that Language; to which I may add, that the *Portuguese* is easier for an *Englishman's* Tongue than the *Spanish*; and that that Nation are better and more constant Friends to the *English* than the *Spaniards*.

By Reason of the aforesaid Prejudices, Men have had in Favour of the *Spanish* Tongue, the *Portuguese* has lain disregarded and uncultivated among us; insomuch, that hardly any *Portuguese* Books are imported, and within these thirty Years past but one Grammar has been printed; which Work was done in so confused a method, that many did not learn the Language for Want of a proper Guide; and those who resolved to make a Progress in it were confused by the many Contradictions, and led into gross Mistakes by the erroneous Account the Author gives of the Declensions and Conjugations.

All these Disadvantages, I hope, have been removed in this present Undertaking. I have

con-

consulted the Grammars of all the *European* Languages, to bring this into the best Method possible; and since I am acquainted with all those Languages, I have endeavoured to explain, in an easy Manner, the Difficulties of the *Portuguese* Tongue, by comparing them with one or other of the modern Languages.

First, the Letters and their Pronunciation, and the reading of them, is shewn in an easy Method, from *English* Examples: That done, the Accents are treated on; and then, to acquaint the Learner with what he is going to do when he handles Nouns, Verbs, &c. all the Parts of Speech are explained to him in so familiar a Manner, that the weakest Capacity may learn thereby, that Nouns, Verbs, Participles, Adverbs, &c. are not such Mysteries, as in some Grammars they seem to be. The Signification of Cases, and Numbers, Singular and Plural, both in Nouns and Verbs, is afterwards explained; so that this Grammar, may serve as well as any to one who has a Desire of knowing the Rudiments of Grammar, be it for what Language soever, the Foundations being laid down here in a clear, intelligible, concise, and methodical Order.

When the Reader takes a View of the Contents of the Chapters, the Work will speak for itself.

The Articles, which most Beginners are strangely perplexed at, are in no Grammar, that I have seen yet, explained in so plain and ample a Manner as in this. The Declensions of
Nouns

Nouns and Pronouns, I flatter myself, will be found clear and satisfactory. In the conjugating of Verbs I have avoided the unnecessary Multiplication of Moods, and only set down the Indicative, Imperative, Optative or Subjunctive, and Infinitive. Some are fond of others they call *Potential*, *Permissive*, and *Conjunctive*, which many and hard Words deter and discourage the Learner, thinking he has so many different Moods and Terminations yet to learn, when, in Effect, those Moods are nothing else but the Indicative or Subjunctive, conjugative with some Conjunction prefixed, which governs either the one or the other of these Moods: and if the Multiplication of strange and hard Things adds to the Beauty of a Grammar, I have shewn the Reader how at Leisure he may compose as many different Moods as there are different Kinds of Conjunctions. The *Permissive* Mood, taken Notice of, p. 82, seems somewhat confused on Account of the Word *amasse*, which is said to be of the perfect Signification; but as some Authors make Use of it in that Sense, I hope the Critic will lay the Fault on the Idiom of the Language, and not on me. The Use of these Moods must be learned by Practice; and when the Learner once knows how to apply the Conjunctions, which we have shewn in the Syntax, he will in Course speak in the Permissive, Potential, &c. Moods, without knowing there are any such perplexing Things belonging to Grammar.

The

The Syntax is short, because I would not overload the Learner with Numbers of Rules, as some Grammarians do; and as the Syntax is to shew the Use of the Parts of Speech in combining them together, I have done that in as simple and concise a Manner as possible. The Treatises on the *Orthography*, *Etymology*, or the Nature of the Language itself, and the *Prosodie* and accenting of Syllables, I hope will also be found satisfactory.

The Vocabulary is composed of Nouns Substantive and Adjective, and Verbs, the most useful and common in their Kind, and so full, that, in some Measure, it may supply the Place of a Dictionary. The Dialogues treat of the most common Occurrences of Life; and a Person who knows them by Heart, may help himself in all Manner of Conversation.

And lastly, to make this Grammar likewise useful to a *Portuguese* who wants to learn *English*, I have subjoined a Compendium of the *English* Grammar; by which Assistance, I flatter myself, the Learner will be led so far, as to be able to make use of the first Part of this Grammar to perfect himself in the *English* Tongue. If any Faults should be observed in this Work, I hope the Critic will be the gentler with me, considering I had no Pattern of this Kind to copy from; and but a very confused and indirect Grammar to consult, when any Difficulty occurred.

THE CONTENTS.

Chap. I. <i>Of the Letters, and their Pronunciation</i>	P. 1
Chap. II. <i>Of the Accents and Apostrophe</i>	8
Chap. III. <i>Of the Parts of Speech</i>	10
Chap. IV. <i>Of Genders, Numbers, and Cases</i>	14
Chap. V. <i>Of the Articles and their Declensions</i>	16
Chap. VI. <i>The Declensions of the Nouns Substantives, and their Termination</i>	18
Chap. VII. <i>Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular, their Genders, Terminations, Declensions, and Comparisons</i>	25
Chap. VIII. <i>Of the Pronouns, their several Sorts, &c.</i>	31
Chap. IX. <i>Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenses, and Persons</i>	37
Chap. X. <i>Of the Division and Conjugations of the Verbs</i>	41
Chap. XI. <i>Of the auxiliary Verbs Avoir and Être</i>	43
Chap. XII. <i>Of the Verbs Je suis and Je suis, I am</i>	57
Chap. XIII. <i>Of the regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations</i>	64
Chap. XIV. <i>Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three Conjugations</i>	83
Chap. XV. <i>Of the irregular Verbs, and their Formation</i>	89
Chap. XVI. <i>Of the Reciprocal Verbs</i>	100
<i>Of the Impersonal Verbs</i>	104
<i>The SYNTAX. Some general Remarks</i>	110
Chap. I. <i>Of the Genders</i>	111
Chap. II. <i>Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles</i>	116
Chap. III. <i>Of the Use and Concordance of Nouns</i>	120
Chap. IV. <i>Of the Pronouns</i>	122
Chap. V. <i>Of the Verbs</i>	126
Chap. VI. <i>Of the Participles</i>	136
Chap. VII. <i>Of the Adverbs</i>	138
Chap. VIII. <i>Of the Conjunctions</i>	141
Chap. IX.	

CONTENTS.

Chap. IX. Of the Prepositions	Page 143
Chap. X. Of the Interjections	150
The Orthography of the Portuguese Language	ibid.
The Etymology and Observations on the Language itself	153
The Prosodie, or the accenting of Syllables	157
The VOCABULARY. Nouns Substantive	163
Nouns Adjective	192
The Numbers	195
The Colours	197
The Verbs	ibid.
The DIALOGUES	202



GRAM-

GRAMMATICA

Anglo-Lusitanica.

CHAP. I.

Of the Letters, and their Pronunciation.

THE *Portuguese* endeavour to pronounce as they write, and to sound all their Letters; several of them have Sounds peculiar only to that Nation, which we have attempted here to represent by Examples from the *English* Tongue, to the End that the Reader, with very little Assistance, may be able to attain the true Pronunciation of that Language.

They have Twenty-four Letters, as

ABCDEFGHIJLMNOPQRSTUVWXYZ.

Six of them are vowels, viz. *a, e, i, y, o, u.*

A is pronounced like the *English* *au* or *a* in *all, wall, fall*; as *amór* Love, read *aumór*; *amo* a Master, r. *aumo*.

It is sometimes long, sometimes short, according as the Accent is placed, as shall be shewn hereafter.

E sounds like the *English* *e* in *every*; or *a* in *same*; *edificár*, to build, r. *adificaur*; *escola*, a School,
B

2 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitânica.

School, r. *Ascolau*. It is both Masculine and Feminine, the Masculine is marked with an Accent, the Feminine not; as *Pedro*, Peter, r. *Pa-dro*; but *busqué*, I looked for, r. *booská*.

I sounds like *e* or *i* in *intimate*; as *indiciar*, to disclose; *intimar*, to intimate.

R stands also for *e*, but with this Difference, that it is pronounced longer, or like *ee*, *Rey*, the King, r. *Rai*; as *monumento*, a Monument, r. *monumento*; and before *a* and *o* it is perceived most; as *joya*, a Jewel, r. *joe-iau*, *joyo*, Darnel, or Tare, r. *joe-io*.

O sounds like *o* in *over*, *open*, &c.

U is pronounced like *oo* in *shoot*, or *ou* in *you*; as *absoluto*, absolute, r. *absoloote*.

The CONSONANTS are.

B, which has the same Power or Sound as the *English*.

C before *e* and *i* sounds like *s*, and before *a*, *o*, and *u*, like a *k*; but when it is marked with a little *s*, or a Stroke underneath, which they call a *Plica*, it also assumes the Sound of an *s*, or rather a *ff* before *a*, *e*, and *u*; as *capato*, a Shoe, r. *saupauto*, *açoute*, a Whip, r. *assoete*; *çumo*, Juice, r. *sumo*.

D and *F* always retain the same Sound they have in other Languages.

G before *a*, *e*, and *u*, sounds like the *English*, but before *e* and *i* like a *French* *g*, much softer than the *English*, or like the *g*, in *Edge*, if that Word could be imagined to be pronounced without the *d* in it, which is always heard before the *English* *g*, and causes that Difference there is in the Sound between the *English* and *French*, or *Portuguese* *g*; but as we have no Example truly to represent its Sound, we must leave it to be learnt from a Voice. *Gue* and *gui* are pronounced hard, and the last Vowel only heard, as *guerra*, War,

War, r. *garrau*; *guisa*, a Manner, r. like *gi* in *give*, *gisau*.

When *g* stands before *ua*, the two Vowels must be sounded distinctly; as *guarda*, a Guard, r. *gaurda*.

H before a Vowel has hardly the Force of any Sound; as in *bomem*, *berdeyro*, *bonrado*, r. *ómeng*, *erda-eero*, *onraudo*.

But this Letter is of Use in a peculiar Manner among the *Portuguese*, when placed after the Letters *c*, *l*, *n*; as *cb*, *lb*, *nb*.

Cba, *cbe*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, pronounce as you do the *cb* in Chamber, Cherry, Child, Choice, Church: Thus *chave*, a Key, r. *chau-ve*; *chegar*, to arrive, r. *chegaur*; *chinela*, a Slipper, r. *cheenálau*; *chorár*, to cry, r. *choraur*; *chupar*, to suck, r. *choopaur*.

Some pronounce the *cb* as the *English* do *sh*, but as that custom has not yet universally prevailed, we cannot lay it down for a Rule.

Lba, *lbe*, *lbi*, *lbo*, *lbu*, r. *lian*, *liée*, *le-á*, *li-o*, *li-oo*; as *abelba*, a Bee, r. *aubal-eau*; *Mulher*, a Woman, r. *Mool-eár*; *colhido*, gathered, r. *col e-eedo*; *filho*, a Son, r. *feet-e-o*; *olbudo*, full of Eyes, r. *ol-e-oodo*.

Nba, *nbe*, *nbi*, *nbo*, *nbu*, r. *ne-au*, *ne-a*, *ne-ee*, *ne-á*, *ne-oo*; as *unba*, a Nail, r. *oon-e-au*; *dinbéyro*, Money, r. *deen-e-áero*; *grunbir*, to grunt, r. *groon-e-eer*; *linbo*, Flax, r. *leen-e-o*; *nenbum*, Nobody, r. *nan-e-oom*.

N. B. Observe the *b* in *cha*, *cbe*, *chi*, *cho*, *chu*, and *nba*, *nbe*, *nbi*, *nbo*, *nbu*, stands for an *i*, or *English e*, which, however, ought to be pronounced very short.

J or the *j* consonant, sounds like their *g*, with this Difference, that it is soft before all Vowels, without Exception.

L, whether single or double, always sounds

4 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitana.

like the *English* *l*; *lado*, a Side, *r. laudo*; *allt*, there, *r. allee*.

M sounds like the *English* *m*; as *macho*, a Male, *r. maucho*; but *am*, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, at the End of Words, read *aung*, *eng*, *ing*, *ong*, *oong*, as *carvam*, a Coal, *r. caurvaung*; *bem*, well, *r. beng*; *assim*, so, *r. aussing*; *bom*, good, *r. bong*; *algum*, somebody, *r. algoong*.

Am, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, in the Beginning or Middle of Words, retain their natural Sound: but *em*, either in the Beginning or Middle of a Word, sounds like *eng*; as *emgano*, a Cheat, *r. eng-gauno*; *dezemlbe*, they tell him, *r. deesenglié*; except in the Words that come from the *Latin*, where the *m* keeps its natural Sound; so *emperador*, an Emperor, *r. emperadór*; *exemplo*, an Example, *r. ex-emplo*.

N sounds like the *English*.

P sounds like the *English*.

Q before *ua*, *r. kuaw*; thus *qual*, which, *r. kuall*; but *que* and *qui*, *r. ka* and *ke*; *quebrar*, to break, *r. kabraur*; *quinta*, a Country Seat, *r. keenta*.

R, or *rr*, is pronounced as in other Languages.
S, or *ss*, the same.

T, the same, except that before *i* it never assumes the Sound of a *c*, as in *English*; thus, *fatiar*, to cut, *r. faut-e-aur*; *fatia de pam*, a Slice of Bread, *r. fauteeau de paung*.

V sounds like the *English*.

X, pronounce like *sh*; *queyxáda*, a Cheekbone, *r. kaishauda*; *queyxarse*, to complain, *r. kaishaurse*; but in some Words derived from the *Latin*, beginning with *a* and *e*, it retains its natural Force, as in *axungia*, *exemplo*, &c.

Z is pronounced like *s*; thus *produzir*, to produce, *r. prodooseer*; *prezar*, to value, *r. presaur*; *resão*, Reason, *r. rafaung*.

The

The DIPHTHONGS.

The Portuguese have many Diphthongs, which they generally pronounce like distinct Letters, with this Difference, that the first Letter must be sounded longer than the second; as, *máis*, more, r. *mau-is*; *não*, a Ship, r. *nau-o*; *auto*, an Act, r. *au-uto*; *dáto*, I fling away, r. *dá-ito*; *vestio*, I cloath, r. *vesti-o*; *pois*, then, r. *po-i*; *peessoa*, a Person, r. *peesso-au*; *rúa*, a Highway, r. *roo-au*.

The Diphthongs or Combinations of Vowels are of five Sorts.

The first is the *ae*, as *cae*, *caem*, he falls, they fall; also in *ay*, as *pay*, Father; in *ao*, as in *páo*, Wood; *mão*, bad; and in *au*, as in *causa*, a Cause; *pausa*, a Pause.

The second is in *ea*, *ey*, *ei*, *eo*, and *eu*, as *cêa*, a Supper; *rey*, *ley*, a King, the Law; *vêo*, I see; *meu*, *teu*, *seu*, mine, thine, his.

The third in *ia* and *io*; *Clemencia*, Clemency; *fugio*, he fled.

The fourth in *oa*, *oe*, *oy*, and *ou*, as *peessoa*, a Person; *póem*, they put; *boy*, an Ox; *dóu*, I give.

The fifth in *ua*, *ue*, *ui*, and *uo*, as *guarda*, a Guard; *guerra*, War; *guinchar*, to cry aloud; *quotidiano*, daily.

Observe, The *i* before the *o* in Words derived from the Latin is short; as, *necessario*, necessary, r. *necessaur-e-o*; *contrario*, contrary, r. *contraur-e-o*.

Also when two Consonants follow, the first Vowel of the Diphthong is short; as, *poente*, the West, r. *po-ente*; *doente*, sick, r. *do-ente*; *migalha*, a Crum, r. *mig-auliau*.

i before *u* is short when a Syllable follows; as, *viuva*, a Widow, r. *ve-óovau*; *miuda*, small, r. *me-óodau*.

Likewise when an *r* or *z* follows after a Diphthong, the first Vowel is short; as *doér*, to feel Pain, *r. do-ár*; *roer*, to know, *r. ro-ár*; *juíz*, a Judge, *r. jou-ees*.

And the *i* in *uim* and *oim* is long; as, *ruina*, Ruin, *r. roo-eenau*; *roim*, evil, *r. ro-íng*.

óens is pronounced *o-ins* and *o-ings*; as *galióens*, Galeons, *r. gaulio-ins*; *rezóens*, Reasons, *r. rezo-ings*; others write *óes* instead of *oens*; as *galióes*, *rezóes*, *dilações*, *cargoes*, &c.

Ou is sounded by some like *oi*; thus, *ouro*, Gold, is pronounced by some like *óiro*; *óutro*, another, they read *óitro*; but the politer Way is to pronounce it like the *ow* in a *Bow*; thus, *outro*, *r. owtro*; *ouro*, *r. owro*, &c.

ao with a Stroke over them, called *Til*, sounds like *am*, and they are indifferently wrote one for the other; though some pretend, that putting *am* instead of *ão*, is the most elegant Way of Writing, thus, *naçam*, or *nação*, a Nation, *r. naussaung*; *provisão*, or *provisam*, Provision, *r. provisaung*.

ãa pronounce *aung*; thus, *irmãa*, a Sister, *r. eer-maung*; *maçãa*, an Apple, *r. maussaung*.

ães, *r. au-engs*; thus, *escrivães*, Writers or Clerks, *r. escree-vauengs*.

They have also some Triphthongs, which always have the Accent placed on the middlemost Vowel; as *poeira*, Dust, *r. poé-ira*.

Many other Exceptions might be added; but as too many Rules commonly perplex the Reader, we leave the rest to be attained by Practice.

To put these Rules about Pronunciation in Practice, we'll give the Reader here a few Lines of *Portuguese*, expressed after the *English* Way of Spelling, to shew how easy it is for any one to learn, almost by himself, to read that Language by the Help of those Rules.

PORTUGUESE.

Tive a honra de suas
de quinze e vinte do
mes passado pello cor-
reo, e de 22 ditto pello
navio A. Capitam j pel-
las quais recebi suas or-
dens de carregar por seu
risco e Conta a bordo do
primeiro bom navio, fa-
zendo a viagem para
Amburgo 25 caixas de
Agucares com 6. Caixas
de brancos, e 50 rolos
de Tabaco consignados
aos seus amigos e Cor-
respondentes os senhores
A. B. e Companhia o
que tudo a seu tempo
fêra puntualmente com-
prido. Pello Correo
proximo passado remety
a V.M. 2 Letras de cam-
bio huã por II. Esterl. 250
e outra por 320 ditto,
das quaes despois de
chagadas não duvido de
devido comprimento;
pella primeira occasiam
avizarey a V. M. o ne-
cessario mais largamen-
te.

ENGLISH.

Teevê au honra de
suas de kinze e veente
do mes paussado pello
Corráo, a de 22 ditto
pello Nau-veeo A. Cau-
pitaungj pellaus qu-avis
recebee soo-aus ordengs
da cauregaur por sa oo
risco a Conta au bordo
do primá-iro bong nau-
veeo, fauzendo au vee-
augeng paura Aum-
boorgo 25. Cau-ishaus
de Ausooeures cong 6
Cau-ishaus de brauncos,
a 50 rolos de Taubauco
consignaudos auos sa oos
aumeegos e Correspon-
dentes os Saniores A. B.
a Companee-au, o ke
toodo au sa-oo tempo fa-
rau poontooaulmente
compreedo. Pello Cor-
rao proximo paussado
remetee au Vossau Mer-
ced. 2 Létraus de caum-
bio, hooma por II. E-
sterl. 250 a owtrau por
320 ditto, daus qu-avis
despo-es de chegáudaus
nau-ong dooveedo de
deveedo comprimento;
pellau prima-ira ocau-
fiauong avecz-aura-ee a
V. M. o necessaurio
mau-is largamente.

C H A P. II.

Of the Accents and Apostrophe.

ACCENTS are little Notes, invented to mark the Tone of the Voice in the Pronunciation.

These Inflections of the Voice are of three Sorts; the raising it, the falling it, and that which partakes of both raising and falling the Voice in the same Syllable.

Therefore Men have invented three Sorts of Accents, two of them simple, viz. the Grave and Acute; and the third composed of both, to wit, the Circumflex.

The Acute raises the Syllable a little, and is marked by a little Line that rises from the Left to the Right; thus, (').

Thus Grave falls the Syllable, and is marked by a little Line descending from the Left to the Right; thus, (").

The Circumflex is composed of both, and is marked thus, (^).

The Portuguese don't use many Accents; but when they do, it is to distinguish the different Signification of some Words depending upon the placing of the Accent; for which use they commonly apply the Acute, as *ésta*, the Accent being placed upon the first Letter, is the Pronoun *this*; and *está* the Accent on the last, is the Verb *estou* I am, in the third Person Singular, of the Indicative Mood, Present Tense; *Partíram*, the Accent over the *i*, is the third Person Plural, of the Imperfect Subjunctive, of the Verb *partir*, to part, and *partirâm* the third Person Plural of the future Indicative.

The

The *Grave* has but little Share in their Writing, and is only placed over some few Monosyllables, as the Feminine Article in the Dative Case, and the Adverb *já*, already: But many mark even these with the *Acute* Accent.

The Circumflex is also but seldom made use of, it being looked upon as no Fault to put the *Acute* instead of it, as *nô* a Knot, is likewise wrote by some *nó*. Here an Accent is absolutely required to distinguish it from the Particle *no*, in the, e. g. *Day bum nô nó Cordel*, make a Knot in the Rope.

To know which Syllables are long and to be marked with Accents, belongs to another Part of Grammar, and shall be shewn under the Head of the *Prosodia*.

We have made use of more Accents in this Grammar than is customary, which we beg the Criticks not to find fault with, it being done to point out the Letters the Strefs should be put upon, for the Sake of Beginners.

The *Apostrophe* likewise takes Place in this as in other Languages, being designed only for the more pleasant and easy Pronunciation of Words, by cutting off a Vowel; as *de ouro*, *de arroz*, *de ovos*, the Vowel *e* of the Particle *de* is supplied by a Synalepha or Vocal Note, or what we commonly call an *Apostrophe*, and is writ as follows, *d'ouro*, *d'arroz*, *d'ovos*; but they generally put the Letters close together, and place an *Acute* on the first Vowel instead of the *Apostrophe*; as *déuro*, *dárroz*, *dóvos*, *néste*, *nêlle*, *dêlle*, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of the Parts of Speech.

THE *Portuguese*, as well as the *Latins*, have Eight Parts of Speech, which we think proper to explain before the Declensions and Conjugations, that the Learner may know what is meant by the Word Noun Substantive or Adjective, Pronoun, a Verb, &c. before he undertakes to decline, or conjugate them.

A Speech or Discourse is composed of Sentences, a Sentence of Words, a Word of Syllables, and a Syllable of Letters. N. B. Some Words have but one Syllable, which are called Monosyllables, as *bem*, well; *sem*, without; *por*, for.

By the Parts of Speech we mean here Words, which of what Signification soever they may be, are reduced under the eight following Heads, viz. *Noun*, *Pronoun*, *Verb*, *Participle*, *Preposition*, *Adverb*, *Conjunction*, and *Interjection*. Some call the *Article* the ninth Part of Speech, which however, upon due Consideration, will be found to belong to the Class of the Pronouns.

A Noun expresses a Thing that may be felt, heard or understood; it is of two Kinds, as the Substantive and Adjective.

A *Noun Substantive* (from the *Latin*, *nomen a Name*, *substantivum* standing by itself, from *subsisto*, I subsist) may be understood by itself, without the Addition of any other Word; and is divided into two different Classes: As Appellative and Common.

The Noun Substantive Appellative is the Christian or Surname of any Man or Woman, Town or Country; as *Joam*, John; *Carlos*, Charles; *Anna*, Anne; *Catherina*, Catherine; *Londres*, *França*, London, France, &c.

The Noun Substantive Common, is a Word that is common to all Things of the same Sort; as *homem*, a Man; *mulher*, a Woman; *caza*, a House; *pam*, Bread; *cam*, a Dog; *gallo*, a Cock; *pedra*, a Stone; *navio*, a Ship; *livro*, a Book; *ouro*, Gold; *fogo*, Fire; *agua*, Water, &c.

A Noun Adjective (from *adjicio*, I add) is a Word that has no determinate Signification of its own, but is commonly joined to a Noun Substantive to signify its Quality: Therefore whenever you can join the Word Thing with it, it is a certain Sign of its being a Noun Adjective. Thus you may say a great, handsome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, &c. Thing; but a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, House, is a Noun Substantive; because you cannot say a Man, Woman, Child, Table, Pen, Book, House, Thing.

And *grande*, great; *bello*, handsome; *branco*, white; *negro*, black; *bom*, good; *longo*, long; *cheyo*, full; *duro*, hard, &c. cannot be understood till some Noun Substantive is joined with them, to explain who or what is great, handsome, white, black, good, long, full, hard, &c. as a great House, a handsome Woman, a white Hand, black Ink, a good Law, a long Street, a full Measure, a hard Metal or Stone, &c. and you may say a great, handsome, white, black, &c. Thing.

A Pronoun (i. e. *pronomen*, a Fore-name, or something before the Name) is a Word which stands instead of some other Noun to denote a Person or Thing; as, *eu*, *tu*, *elle*, I, thou, he; *que*,

que, what; *quem*, who; *este*, this; *aquelle*, that; as, *que diz elle ou ella*, what doth he or she say? Here the Pronouns *elle* and *ella* denote the Person of a Man or Woman that spoke before; and *que*, what, the Thing spoke of; *quem he este*, who is that? here *quem* and *este* indicate the Person of some Man.

A *Verb* (i. e. *Verbum* a Word) is a Word that signifies either some Action or Passion; as, *quero*, I will; *figuo*, I follow; *encho*, I fill; *tolero*, I suffer; *sou*, or *estou*, I am; *ey* or *tenbo*, I have.

A *Participle* (from *participo*, I partake) is made of a Verb, and partakes of it in such a Manner, that it may also be used for a Noun, and always has Regard to some Person. There are participles of three different Kinds, as of the Preterperfect Tense, in *Latin amatus*, beloved; of the Present Tense, loving, *amans*; and the Future, as *amaturus*, he that shall or will love.

We make use here of Examples from the *Latin*, because they, expressing the Thing in one Word, may best serve to illustrate the Nature of this Part of Speech; which the modern Languages have retained, though they cannot express themselves in so simple and pure a Manner, but are fain to make use of some auxiliar Verbs for that Purpose; as may be seen in its Place in the Conjugation of the Verbs, whither we refer the Reader.

The *Adverb* (from *ad* to, *verbum* a Word) is joined to the Verb to signify some Qualification: Thus to express the Manner how I read, write, &c. cannot be done without the Help of an Adverb, e. g. *leyo bem*, *escrevo mal*, I read well, I write ill. *Vid. the Chap. of Adverbs.*

The *Conjunction* (from *conjungo*, I join together) is a Particle which joins Verbs and Sentences together; as, *e*, and; *se*, if; *ou*, or; *que*, that; *mas*, but; *meo pây e mãy*, my Father and Mother; *se tudizes que esta cõsa he verdadeira ou falsa*, if you say, that this Thing is true or false, &c.

A *Preposition* (from *præpono*, I put before) is an indeclinable Particle, and is often joined with Nouns, Pronouns, and Verbs, to modify their Signification: Such are the Words *em*, in; *fora*, without; *sem*, without; *a*, to; *de*, from, &c. (*Vid. the Chap. of Prepos.*) as *estar em casa*, to be in the House, or at Home; *escrever á hum amigo*, to write to a Friend; *não pode viver sem elle*, he cannot live without him; *em amar*, in loving; *para ler*, for to read.

An *Interjection* (from *interjicio*, to cast between) is a Particle not declinable, used to express some Emotion of the Mind, as Surprise, Admiration; as *bây de ti*, woe be to thee! *O que me pesa*, O how sorry am I! *O que Deós he grande*, O how great God is! *O mofino de mim*, O miserable that I am!

❧ If you should find these Rules too few and short, to conceive a perfect Idea of all the Parts of Speech and their Use, you may turn over the Syntax, where you will find more ample Instruction.

CHAP. IV.

Of the Genders, Numbers, and Cases.

THE Portuguese Nouns have but two Genders, viz. the Masculine, which is signified by the Article *o*, and the Feminine, by the Article *a*, answering to the Latin *hic* and *hec*. Some of their Pronouns have also the Neuter Gender, which may be seen under the Head of the *Pronouns Demonstrative*; some Nouns both Substantive and Adjective are of the Masculine and Feminine Gender at once.

The Declension, which is a Changing of a Noun into several Cases, has two Numbers, viz. the *Singular*, which speaks but of one, and the *Plural*, comprehending many; as in Singular *livro* a Book, in Plural *livros* Books.

The Plural is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular: As *caza*, a House; *muro*, a Wall; *cidade*, a City; in Plural *cazas*, Houses; *múros*, Walls; *cidádes*, Cities.

They have fix Cases, or Changes, viz. the *Nominative*, *Genitive*, *Dative*, *Accusative*, *Vocative*, and *Ablative*, to denote so many different Senses the Word should be taken in.

The *Nominative* (from the Latin *nominare*, to name) only names the Person or Thing, as *homem*, a Man; *pédra*, a Stone.

The *Genitive* (from *generare*, to beget) betokens that one Person or Thing proceeds from, depends from, or is another's Property; as *filho de Joam*, the Son of John; here *Joam* stands in the *Genitive* Case, being the Person the Son belongs to, proceeded or depended from: *Caza de Pedro*, the House

House of *Peter*, or *Peter's* (his) House, *Peter* stands in the Genitive, he being the Person the House belongs to.

The *Dative* (from the Latin *dare* to give) denotes the Person to whom a Person or Thing is given; as *dou a Pedro*, I give to *Peter*.

The *Accusative* (from the Latin *accusare*, to accuse) signifies the Person or Thing we do or intend to act upon; as *escrevo a carta*, I write the Letter; *lerey o livro*, I will read the Book; *açoutarey a Pedro*, I will whip *Peter*; here *carta*, *livro*, and *Pedro*, stand in the Accusative, being the Subject of some Action.

The *Vocative* (from the Latin *vocare*, to call upon) signifies that a Person or Thing is called upon; as *O filho que fazes!* O Son, what dost thou! *O desgraçada casa!* O unhappy House! *filho* and *casa* being here called upon, stand in the Vocative Case.

The *Ablative* (from the Preterperfect Participle *ablatus*, the Verb *aufero*, I take from) shews that Person or Thing, a Person or Thing is taken away from; as *venho da cidade*, I come from the City; *Pedro o salvó do fogo*, *Peter* saved him from the Fire; here *cidade* and *fogo* stand in the Ablative, because something comes from, or is taken from the City and the Fire.

For a further Information about the Use of the Cases, and how they are often governed by Prepositions, I refer the Reader to the *Syntax*; the present being only to instruct him so far, that he may know what he doth when he declines a Noun through the Numbers and several Cases.

CHAP. V.

Of the Articles, and their Declensions.

THE Articles properly belong to the Pronouns, as we said above; but as no Noun can be declined without them, I thought it necessary to shew how they are declined, before we enter upon Nouns Substantive and Adjective.

The Articles are either *definite* or *indefinite*.

The Masculine Article
definite.

The Feminine Article
definite.

*Singular Number.**Singular Number.*

N. o, *the*.

N. a, *the*.

G. dó, *of the*.

G. dá, *of the*.

D. ao, pera o, pello, *to the*.

D. à, pera a pélla, *to the*.

Ac. o, ao, *the*

Ac. á, *the*.

V. o, ô.

V. o, ô.

A. dó, *from the*.

A. dá, *from the*.

*Plural Number.**Plural Number.*

N. os, *the*.

N. as, *the*.

G. dos, *of the*.

G. das, *of the*.

D. aos, pera os, pellos, *to the*.

D. às, pera as, péllas, *to the*.

Ac. os, aos, *the*.

Ac. ás, *the*.

V. o, ô.

V. o, ô.

A. dós, *from the*.

A. dás, *from the*.

When the *Portuguese* would express the *English* Article *it*, they make use of the Article *o*, and say *eu não o vi*, I have not seen it; and therefore, we justly ascribe also a neuter Gender to this Article; which

which has only a Singular Number, and is declined in the Manner following :

Sing.

N. o, *it.*
G. dô, *of it.*
D. ao. *to it.*

Ac. o, *it.*
V. caret,
A. dô, *from it.*

The Article *a* in *English*, is expressed by the *Portuguese hum, huma*, and declined as follows :

Sing.

N. hum, *ma, a.*
G. de hum, *ma, of a.*
D. a hum, *ma, to a.*
Ac. a hum, *ma, a.*
V. caret.
A. de hum, *ma, from a.*

Plur.

N. huns, *mas, some.*
G. de huns, *mas, of some.*
D. a huns, *mas, to some.*
Ac. a huns, *mas, some.*
V. caret.
A. de huns, *mas, from some.*

Observe, the *English* Article *a* has no Plural, but borrows another Word to express the Plural Signification.

Of the Article Indefinite.

This Article has no Distinction of Genders, and only four Cases (in the *Spanish* and *Portuguese*, and but three in *French* and *Italian*) which serve both in the Singular and Plural Number, *viz.*

Gen. de, *of.*
Dat. a & pera, *to.*
Acc. a & pera.
Abl. de or por, *from.*

By the following Example you may see, that the Words which are declined with the *Article indefinite*, have no Article in the Nominative and Vocative Case.

C

N. Roma,

N. Roma, *Rome.*

G. de Roma, *of Rome.*

D. a e^a pera Roma, *to Rome:*

Ac. a Roma, *Rome.*

V. Roma, *Rome.*

A. de Roma, *from Rome.*

The Article Indefinitive serves to decline the Names of Angels, Men, Towns, the Names of the Months, and the Pronouns.

This Article is also put with any other Noun, when two Nouns meet together, the last being in the Genitive Case, and having no determinate Signification assigned to it; as *bum duzia de meyas*, a Dozen of Stockings; *bum número de cazas*, a Number of Houses; *bum arratel de carne*, a Pound of Flesh. Here it is not determined what Stockings, Houses, or Flesh you speak of; and when you employ the indefinite Article *of* in *English*, the *Portuguese* do so likewise.

When the Article indefinite *de* precedes a Word which begins with a Vowel, the *e* is often cast away, and the next following Letter marked with an Acute Accent; as *algum d^elles*, some one of them; and some leave a little Space betwixt the *d* and the next following Letter, with an Apostrophe on the Top; as *algum d'elles*; but the first Way is most practised at present, as we have said above.

* * For the Use, Application, and Distinction of these two Articles, see the *Syntax*.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Declensions of the Nouns Substantives, and their Terminations.

THE *Portuguese* have but one Sort of Declension; and their Cases, which admit of no Variety of Termination, as was usual with the
Romans,

Romans, are only distinguished by prefixing the Articles, and the Plural Number is commonly made by adding an *s* to the Singular.

An Example of the Masculine Gender.

The Singular Number.

- N. o Têmplo, *a or the Church.*
 G. do Têmplo, *of the Church.*
 D. ao & pera o, pello Têmplo, *to the Church.*
 Ac. o, ao Têmplo, *the Church.*
 V. ó Têmplo, *ô Church!*
 A. do Têmplo, *from the Church.*

The Plural Number.

- N. os Têmplos, *the Churches.*
 G. dos Têmplos, *of the Churches.*
 D. aos & peraos, pellos Têmplos, *to the Churches.*
 Ac. os, aos Têmplos, *the Churches.*
 V. ó Têmplos, *ô Churches.*
 A. dos Têmplos, *from the Churches.*

An Example of the Feminine Gender.

The Singular Number.

- N. a Casa, *a or the House.*
 G. da Casa, *of the House.*
 D. á & pera a, pella Casa, *to the House,*
 Ac. a Casa, *the House.*
 V. ó Casa, *ô House.*
 A. da Casa, *from the House.*

The Plural Number.

- N. as Casas, *the Houses.*
 G. das Casas, *of the Houses.*
 D. ás & pera as, péllas Casas, *to the Houses.*
 Ac. as Casas, *the Houses.*
 V. ó Casas, *ô Houses.*
 A. das Casas, *from the Houses.*

Declensions of the Nouns in *m*.

Singular.

Plural.

N. a Adem, <i>a</i> or <i>the Duck</i> .	N. as Adens, <i>the Ducks</i> .
G. dá Adem, <i>of the Duck</i> .	G. das Adens, <i>of the Ducks</i> .
D. à & pera a, pella Adem, <i>to the Duck</i> .	D. às & pera as, péllas Adens, <i>to the Ducks</i> .
Ac. a Adem, <i>the Duck</i> .	Ac. as Adens, <i>the Ducks</i> .
V. ó Adem, <i>ó Duck</i> .	V. ó Adens, <i>ó Ducks</i> .
A. dá Adem, <i>from the Duck</i> .	A. das Adens, <i>from the Ducks</i> .

Declension of the Nouns terminating in *az*.

Singular.

Plural.

N. o Rapáz, <i>a</i> , or <i>the Boy</i> .	N. os Rapázes, <i>the Boys</i> .
G. dó Rapáz, <i>of the Boy</i> .	G. dós Rapázes, <i>of the Boys</i> .
D. ao & pera o, pello Rapáz, <i>to the Boy</i> .	D. aos & pera os, pellos Rapázes, <i>to the Boys</i> .
Ac. o, ao, Rapáz, <i>the Boy</i> .	Ac. os, aos Rapázes, <i>the Boys</i> .
V. ó Rapáz, <i>ó Boy</i> .	V. ó Rapázes, <i>ó Boys</i> .
A. dó Rapáz, <i>from the Boy</i> .	A. dós Rapázes, <i>from the Boys</i> .

They have Nouns Substantive of many other Terminations, which it will be necessary to set down here, to shew how they change their Singulars into Plurals.

All Portuguese Nouns Substantive end either with the six Vowels, *a, e, i, o, u, y*, or these five Consonants, *l, m, r, s, z*; which, complicated with the Vowels, make

al	am	ar	as	az
el	em	er	es	ez
il	im	ir	is	iz
ol	om	or	os	oz
ul	um	ur	us	uz

Examples of the several Terminations.

The Singular.

The Plural.

A. Maria, <i>Catherina</i> .	Mariās, <i>Catherinas</i> .
a Alma, a <i>Soul</i> .	Almas, <i>Souls</i> .
a Vida, <i>Life</i> .	Vidas, <i>Lives</i> .
a Romãa, a <i>Pomegranate</i> .	Romãas, <i>Pomegranates</i> , or Romãens.
a Maçãa, an <i>Apple</i> .	Maçãas, <i>Apples</i> , or Maçãens.
E. o Barrete, a <i>Cap</i> .	Barretes, <i>Caps</i> .
o Capote, a <i>Cloak</i> .	Capotes, <i>Cloaks</i> .
I & Y o Thali, a <i>Belt</i> .	Thaliys, <i>Belts</i> , or Thaliñs.
o Nebri, a <i>Hawk</i> .	Nebriys, <i>Hawks</i> , or Nebriñs.
o Rubi, a <i>Ruby</i> .	Rubiys, <i>Rubies</i> , or Rubiñs.
o Pay, a <i>Father</i> .	Páys, <i>Fathers</i> .
a May, a <i>Mother</i> .	Máys, <i>Mothers</i> .
a Ley, a <i>Law</i> .	Léys, <i>Laws</i> .
o Rey, a <i>King</i> .	Reys, <i>Kings</i> .
O. Antonio, <i>Anthony</i> .	Antónios, <i>Anthony's</i> .
o Livro, a <i>Book</i> .	Lívro, <i>Books</i> .
U. o Perù, a <i>Turkey</i> .	Perús, <i>Turkeys</i> .
o Mú, a <i>Mule</i> .	Mus, <i>Mules</i> .
o Judéu, a <i>Jew</i> .	Judéus, <i>Jews</i> .
Al. o Avental, an <i>Apron</i> .	Avantáys, <i>Aprons</i> .
o Punhál, a <i>Ponyard</i> .	Punháys, <i>Ponyards</i> .
o Hospital, an <i>Hospital</i> .	Hospitáys, <i>Hospitals</i> .
El. Daniel, <i>Daniel</i> .	Daniéys, <i>Daniels</i> .

The Singular.

The Plural.

o Granél, a Granary.	Granéys, Granaries.
o Capitél, a Head of a Pillar.	Capitéys, Heads of Pillars.
Il. o Barríl, a Barrel.	Barriys, Barrels.
o Gomíl, a Leaver.	Gomiys, Leavers.
o Funíl, a Funnel.	Funiys, Funnels.
Ol. o Sol, the Sun.	Soys, Suns.
o Caracól, a Snail.	Caracoys, Snails.
o Lançól, a Sheet.	Lançoys, Sheets.
Ul. o Sul, South.	Suis, Souths.
o Táfúl, a Gamester.	Tafúys, Gamesters.

Words ending in *am* regularly make their Plurals in *óens*; as,

o Trovám, Thunder.	Trovóens.
o Padrám, a round Pillar or Post.	Padróens, round Pillars or Posts.
o Feijám, a French Bean.	Feijóens, French or Kidney Beans.
o Esquadrám, a Squadron.	Esquadróens, Squadrons.

Except some that make their Plural. in *ões*; as,

o Cortezám, a Courtier.	Cotezaões, Courtiers.
o Irmám, a Brother.	Irmaões, Brothers.
o Villám, a Countryman.	Villaões, Countrymen.
o Cidadám, a Citizen.	Citadaões, Citizens.
o Christám, a Christian.	Christaões, Christians.

And except, secondly, such as make their Plurals in *ães*; as,

o Cãm, a Dog.	Cães, Dogs.
o Escrivám, a Clerk or Writer.	Escrivaães, Clerks.
o Capitám, a Captain.	Capitães, Captains.
	o Pãm,

The Singular.

The Plural.

o Pám, <i>Bread.</i>	Paës, <i>Bread or Loaves of Bread.</i>
o Rusiám, <i>a Russian.</i>	Rusiaës, <i>Russians.</i>
o Gaviám, <i>a Sparrow-Hawk.</i>	Gaviaës, <i>Sparrow-hawks.</i>
o Alemám, <i>a German.</i>	Alemaës, <i>Germans.</i>
<i>Em.</i> a Adém, <i>a Duck.</i>	Adens, <i>Ducks.</i>
o Almazém, <i>a Warehouse.</i>	Almazéns, <i>Warehouses.</i>
o Homem, <i>a Man.</i>	Hómens, <i>Men.</i>
<i>Im.</i> o Chím, <i>a Chinese.</i>	Chins, <i>Chinese.</i>
o Roím, <i>a Horse.</i>	Rocíns, <i>Horses.</i>
o Espadím, <i>a little Sword.</i>	Espadíns, <i>little Swords.</i>
<i>Om.</i> o Tom, <i>a Tone.</i>	Tons, <i>Tones.</i>
o Dom, <i>a Gift.</i>	Dons, <i>Gifts.</i>
<i>Um.</i> o Atum, <i>Tunny-Fish.</i>	Atúns, <i>Tunny-Fishes.</i>
o Jejúm, <i>a Fast.</i>	Jejúns, <i>Fasts.</i>
<i>Ar.</i> César, <i>Cesar.</i>	Césares, <i>Cesars.</i>
o Açúcar, <i>Sugar.</i>	Açúcares, <i>Sugars.</i>
o Polegar, <i>a Thumb.</i>	Polegáres, <i>Thumbs.</i>
<i>Er.</i> o praiér, <i>Pleasure.</i>	Prazêres, <i>Pleasures.</i>
o Aluguer, <i>the Rent of a House.</i>	Aluguêres, <i>Rents of Houses.</i>
<i>Ir and Yr.</i> o Martyr, <i>a Martyr.</i>	Mártyres, <i>Martyrs.</i>
<i>Or.</i> o Açór, <i>an Hawk.</i>	Açóres, <i>Hawks.</i>
o Bemfeitór, <i>a Benefactor.</i>	Bemfeitóres, <i>Benefactors.</i>
o Caçadór, <i>a Huntsman.</i>	Caçadóres, <i>Huntsmen.</i>
o Lavradór, <i>a Husbandman.</i>	Lavradóres, <i>Husbandmen.</i>

24 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.

The Singular.

The Plural.

Ur. Catúr, a small Vessel at Sea, in Latin Li- burnum.	Catúres.
Az, o Primáz, a Pimate.	Primázes, Primates.
o Arcáz, a Trunk- Maker.	Arcázes, Trunk-Makers.
o Rapáz, a Boy.	Rapázes, Boys.
Ez. o Inglês, an Eng- lishman.	Inglézes, Englishmen.
o Méz, a Mouth.	Mézes, Mouths.
o Marquéz, a Mar- quis.	Marquézes, Marquisses.
Iz. o Apprendiz, an Ap- prentice.	Apprendizes, Appren- tices.
a Codorníz, a Quail.	Codornízes, Quails.
a Raíz, a Root.	Raízes, Roots.
Oz. o Arrioz, a Globe of Stone.	Arriózes, Globes of Stone.
Uz. o Abestrúz, an O- strich.	Abestrúzes, Ostriches.
o Archabúz, a Musket.	Archabúzes, Muskets.

Nouns Substantive Irregular.

Some of them have only a Singular Number ;
as *Cal*, Lime ; *Sol*, Salt ; *Pez*, Pitch ; *Ar*, Air ;
Doença, Sickness ; *Provéito*, Profit.

Others have only a Plural Termination, altho'
they signify but one single Thing, and have the
Plural Article prefixed to them ; as *os Láivos*, the
Foulness of the Face ; as *Grêlbas*, a Gridiron ;
as *Calças*, Breeches ; as *Migas*, Sops, as *Ceróulas*,
Drawers ; *ândas*, a Carriage ; *Andillas*, a little
Litter ; as *Cámaras*, a Flux or Looseness ; as
Pareas, a Tribute ; as *Primícias*, the First-fruits ;
as *Cócegas*, Ticklishness ; as *Cústas*, Expence ; *os*
Editos, Edicts ; as *Entrânhas*, Bowels ; as *Exé-
quias*,

quias, a Funeral; *os erpes*, mortified; *os Tornéos* & *as Justas*, Tilts and Tournaments; *resto*, or *demazia*, an Overplus.

N. B. I cannot forbear observing one of the Beauties of this Language, which is, that the Portuguese have many Nouns Substantive ending in *ada*, which cannot be express'd in other Languages without Circumlocution; as *Pedrada*, a Blow with a Stone; *Pancada*, a Blow with a Stick or Club; *Cutilada*, a Cut with a Sword; *Estocada*, a Stab with a Sword or Dagger, &c.

C H A P. VII.

Of Nouns Adjective, regular and irregular; their Genders, Terminations, Declensions, and Comparisons.

THE Nouns Adjective, like the Substantive, have but two Genders, viz. the Masculine, which they signify by the Article *o*. and Feminine by *a*, and some Words are both Masculine and Feminine.

Their Terminations are,

Singular.

Plural.

A. *o Virtuoso*, virtuous.

os Virtuosos, virtuous.

o Lindo, fair.

os Lindos, fair.

E. *o & a grande*, great.

os & as Grandes, great.

o & a Forte, strong.

os & as Fortes, strong.

O. *o Fermoso*, handsome.

os Fermosos, handsome.

o So & a Só, alone.

os Sos & as Sós, alone,

adj.

or only.

U. *o Nú*,

Singular.

Plural.

U. o Nú, a nua, <i>naked.</i>	os Nús, as nuas, <i>naked.</i>
o Crú, a crua, <i>raw.</i>	os Crús, as cruas, <i>raw.</i>
o Méu, a minha, <i>mine.</i>	os Méus, as minhas, <i>mine.</i>
o Téu, a tua, <i>thine.</i>	os Téus, as tuas, <i>thine.</i>
o Séu, a sua, <i>bis.</i>	os Séus, as suas, <i>theirs.</i>
Al. o É a principál, <i>chief.</i>	os É as Principáis, <i>the chief.</i>
o É a Géral, <i>general.</i>	os É as Geráis, <i>generals.</i>
El. o É a Agradável, <i>agreeable.</i>	os É as agradáveis, <i>agreeable.</i>
Il. o É a Sotil, <i>subtile.</i>	os É as Sotiys, <i>subtile.</i>
o É a Util, <i>useful.</i>	os É as Utiys, <i>useful.</i>
Ol. o Espanhól, a Espanhóla, <i>a Spanish Man, or Spanish Woman.</i>	os Espanhóys, as Espanhólas, <i>Spanish Men, or Spanish Women.</i>
Ul. o É a Azúl, <i>blue.</i>	os É as Azúys, <i>blue.</i>
Om. o Bóm, a boa, <i>good.</i>	os Bóns, É as boas, <i>good.</i>
Um. Nenhúm, nenhuma, <i>no one.</i>	Nenhums, nenhuma, <i>none.</i>
o Comúm, a comúa, <i>common.</i>	os Comúns, as comúas, <i>common.</i>
Algúm, Algúma, <i>Somebody.</i>	Algúms, algúmas, <i>some.</i>
Ar. o É a Particulár, <i>particular.</i>	os É as Particuláres, <i>particular.</i>
o É a Singulár, <i>singular.</i>	os É as Singuláres, <i>singular.</i>
Or. o É a Melhór, <i>better.</i>	os É as Melhóres, <i>better.</i>
o É a Mayór, <i>greater.</i>	os É as Mayóres, <i>greater.</i>
Az. o É a Mordáz, a spiteful Man or Creature.	os É as Mordázes, <i>spitefulness.</i>
o É a Capáz, <i>capable.</i>	os É as Capázes, <i>capable.</i>
Ez. o É a Ingléz, <i>English.</i>	os É as Inglêses, <i>English.</i>
	Ez. o É a.

Singular.

Plural.

Ez. o & a Portugéz,	os & as Portugézes,
a Portuguese Man,	Portuguese Men, and
a Portuguese Wo-	Portuguese Women.
man.	
o & a Cortéz, cour-	os & as Cortézes, cour-
teous.	teous.
Iz. o & a Felíz, happy.	os & as Felizes, happy.
o & a Bellíz, sharp.	os & as Bellizes, sharp.
Oz. o & a Feróz, fierce.	os & as Ferózes, fierce.
Uz. o & a Truz, cruel.	os & as Trúzes, cruel.

Irregular Adjectives

Are such as admit of no Plural Number; as the numerical Adjectives, *trinta*, thirty; *quarenta*, forty; *cincoenta*, fifty; *sessenta*, sixty; *setenta*, seventy; *oitenta*, eighty; *noventa*, ninety; *cem*, hundred. But *hum*, one; is in the Plural *uns*, some; *cento*, hundred, in Plural, *centos*, hundreds; *conto & milhám*, a Million; *contos & milhóens*, Millions.

N. B. Some who pretend to be curious in this Language, think it no Impropriety to admit even of Plurals to all or most of the Numeral Adjectives, e. g. *múylos vintes*, *múylos trintas*; many Twenties, many thirties. Also in Arithmetick it is usual to say, *nóve foras*, cast away the Nines,

Some of these Numerals are esteemed irregular for want of the Singular Number; as *duzentos*, two hundred; *trezentos*, three hundred, &c. for *duzentó* and *trezentó*, which are not allowed.

The Nouns Adjective are declined like the Substantives; yet, to remove all Difficulties, we shall set down here a few Examples of them.

Declension

Declension of the Termination in *o* and *a*.*Singular.**N.* o Fermoso, a fermosa, handsome.*G.* do Fermoso, da Fermosa.*D.* ao & pera o, pello Fermoso; á & pera a, pélla fermosa.*Ac.* o, ao Fermoso, fermosa.*V.* o Fermoso, o fermosa.*Ab.* do Fermoso, da fermosa.*Plural.**N.* os Fermosos; as fermosas.*G.* dos Fermosos; das fermosas.*D.* aos & pera os; pellos Fermosos; ás pera as pellas fermosas.*Ac.* os aos Fermosos, as fermosas.*V.* o Fermosos, o fermosas.*Ab.* dos Fermosos, das fermosas.Declension of the Termination *al* of the Common Gender.*Singular.**N.* o & a Principál.*G.* do & dá Principál.*D.* ao, péra o, pello; á & pera a, pélla Principál.*Ac.* o, ao; a, Principál.*V.* o Principál.*Ab.* do; dá, Principál.*Plural.**N.* os & as Principáis.*G.* dos; das Principáis.*D.* aos péra os; pellos; ás, & pera as, pellas Principáis.*Ac.* os, aos; as, Principáis.*V.* o Principáis.*Ab.* dos; das Principáis.

All

All Nouns Adjective are declined in this Manner. It would be superfluous to insert more Examples, when I am persuaded that you will find no Difficulty to decline any of them, by the Help of the foregoing Table of Terminations.

Comparison of Nouns Adjective.

The Adjectives have three different Degrees of increasing or diminishing their Signification, which is called *Comparison*.

1. The *Positive*, which is the positive or simple Signification of the Thing, as *grande*, great; *pequeno*, little; *máo*, bad.
2. The *Comparative*, which makes a Comparison between Things, and increases the Signification of the Positive, as *mayór*, greater; *menór*, lesser; *peyór*, worse.
3. The *Superlative*, which signifies the Manner of the Thing in the greatest, or least Degree, and with Excess; as *maximo*, the greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *péssimo*, the worst.

But all Adjectives have not this pure Way of Comparisons, for they commonly make their Comparative by adding the Word *mais*, more, or *ménos* less, to the Word, e. g. *perfeito*, perfect; in Comparative *mais perfeito*, more perfect; in Superlative *perfeitíssimo*, the most perfect. *Poderoso*, powerful; *mais poderoso*, more powerful; *poderosíssimo*, the most powerful. *Excelente*, excellent; *mais excelente*, more excellent; *excelentíssimo*, the most excellent.

Thus many Portuguese Words, derived from the Latin, make their Superlative in *íssimo*; but for the Generality their Comparisons are made by the

the Particle *mais*, as *mais grande*, greater, or more great, for the Comparative; and *o mais*, the most, as *o mais grande*, the greatest, for the Superlative.

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Fermoso, <i>sa</i> , <i>handsome</i> ,	<i>mâis</i> Fermoso, <i>sa</i> , <i>handsomer</i> ,	Fermosíssimo, <i>or</i> <i>ô</i> <i>mâis</i> fermoso. <i>the handsomest</i> .
Sotil. <i>c</i> . <i>subtile</i> ,	<i>mâis</i> Sotil, <i>more</i> <i>subtle</i> ,	Sotilíssimo, <i>or</i> <i>ô</i> <i>mâis</i> sotil, <i>the</i> <i>most subtile</i> .
Valente, <i>c</i> . <i>valiant</i> ,	<i>mâis</i> Valente, <i>more valiant</i> ,	<i>o</i> <i>mâis</i> Valente, <i>the most valiant</i> , &c.

The Comparative is known when you find one compared with many, or with many of a different Kind; *e. g.* *Hum Européo hé mâis valente que muitos Americanos*, one European is more valiant than many Americans. *Os Inglezes sã mâis valentes que os Francêzes*, the Englishmen are more valiant than the Frenchmen.

The Superlative is when one Thing is compared with many, or with many of the same Kind, *e. g.* *Este Portuguez he o mais valente de todos os Portuguezes*, this Portuguese is the most valiant of all the Portuguese. *Os Ingleses sã os mais valentes de todos os homens*, the English are the most valiant of all Men. Some, though not so elegantly, express the Superlative in this Manner; as, *Este Portuguez he mâis valente que todos os Portuguezes*, and *Os Ingleses sã mâis valentes que todos os homens*, this Portuguese is more valiant than all the Portuguese, and the English are more valiant than all Men.

C H A P. VIII.

Of the Pronouns.

Their several Sorts, and how they are declined.

PRONOUNS are used instead of a Noun to avoid Repetition. They are divided into seven Classes, viz. into *Personal, Conjunctive, Possessive, Demonstrative, Interrogative, Relative, and Improper.*

Of the Pronoun Personal.

This Pronoun is to mark the first, second and third Person in both Numbers, as in Singular, *Eu, I*, for the first Person; *tu, thou*, the second; *elle, he*, the third. And in Plural, *nós, we*, the first; *vós, you*, the second; and *elles, they*, the third Person; to which Class also belong the Pronouns *se* or *si*, himself.

Declensions of the Pronouns Personal.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
N. <i>Eu, I.</i>	N. <i>Nós, we.</i>
G. <i>de Mim, of me.</i>	G. <i>de Nós, of us.</i>
D. <i>a Mim, & pera mim</i> <i>& me, to me.</i>	D. <i>a Nós & pera nós,</i> <i>to us.</i>
Ac. <i>a Mim & me, me.</i>	Ac. <i>a Nós, us.</i>
V. caret.	V. caret.
Ab. <i>de Mim, from me.</i>	Ab. <i>de Nós, from us.</i>

Declension

Declension of the Pronoun of the second Person.

Singular.

N. Tu, thou.

G. de Ti, of thee.

D. a & pera Ti & Te, to thee.

Ac. a Ti & Te, thee.

V. o Tu, ó thou.

A. de Ti, from thee.

Plural.

N. Vós, ye or you.

G. de Vós, of you.

D. a & pera Vós, to you.

Ac. a Vós, you or ye.

V. o Vós, ó you or ye.

A. de Vós, from you.

Declension of the Pronoun of the third Person.

Elle and *Ella* are declined like Nouns Adjective. The Pronoun *Se*, or *Si*, him or himself, has no Nominative or Vocative, and is only declined in the Singular, which serves also for the Plural Signification.

G. de Si, of him; of her; of it (self).

D. a Si & Se, to him; to her; to it (self).

Ac. a Si & Se, him, her, it (self).

A. de Si, from him; from her; from it (self).

* * *Me*, *Te*, and *Se*, are used both in the Dative and Accusative Case; as, for Example, in the Dative, *meu pay me dá*, *meu pay te dá*, my Father gives me or to me, my Father gives thee or to thee; *elle me faz honra*, *elle te faz honra*, he doth me (to me) Honour, he doth thee (to thee) Honour; *não se lhe dá disso*, he doth not care for it. In the Accusative Case, as *meu pay me*, *te chama*, my Father calls me or thee; *entretense*, *abrirse*, &c.

Of the Pronoun Conjunctive.

This Pronoun has a very near Resemblance to the Personal, but differs in this, that it is never the

the Nominative Case to the Verb; it always precedes as well as the other, but always is the Dative or Accusative of the said Verb.

There are six Pronouns of this Order, viz. *me*, me; *te*, thee; *se*, himself; *nós*, us; *vós*, you; *lhe*, and *lhes*, him, her and them; e. g. *meu pay me falla*, my Father speaks to me; *teu amigo te escreve*, thy Friend writes to thee; *muitos nam se conhecem*, many don't know themselves; *os philosophos nós dizem*, the Philosophers tell us; *o Réy vós ordena*, the King orders you; *eu lhe*, or *lhes pago*, I pay him or them.

N. B. The Pronoun *elle*, *ella* & *isto*, in Dative Case *a elle*, *a ella*, *a isto*, is expressed by *lhe*, which serves in all the Genders; and in Dative Plural *a elles* & *ellas* by *lhes*; e. g. *meu irmão ou minha irmã me perguntou*, *mas não quero dizer-lhe*, my Brother or my Sister has asked me, but I don't care to tell him or her. Likewise in Plural they say, *dizelhes*, tell them, speaking of Men or Women.

Of the Pronoun Possessive.

The Pronoun Possessive is that which indicates a Property or Possession. There are six of these Pronouns, three Singular and three Plural; viz. *meu*, & *minha*, mine; *teu* & *tua*, thine; *seu*, *sua*, his, hers; *nosso*, *nossa*, our; *vosso*, *vossa*, your; *seus*, *suas*, their: As *meu pay*, my Father; *tua mãe*, thy Mother; *seu livro*, his Book; *nossa casa*, our House; *vosso cão*, your Dog; *seus amigos*, their Friends.

Of the Pronoun Demonstrative.

This Pronoun points out either a Person or a Thing, and is both Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter. This is the only Instance, besides the Article, where the *Portuguese*, as well as the *Spaniards*, admit of the Neuter Gender, which reigns only in the Singular, and not in the Plural. Thus you say in Masculine, *elle*, he; in Feminine *ella*, she; and in the Neuter, *isto*, that.

In Masculine *este*, this; in Feminine *esta*, this; in Neuter *isto*, this (Thing); as *este homem*, this Man; *esta Mulher*, this Woman; *isto não me agrada*, this doth not please me; and in Masculine *esse*, that (Man; Feminine *essa*, that (Woman); Neuter *isso*, that (Thing); as *esse pão*, that Bread; *essa pedra*, that Stone, and *isso he verdade*, that is true. These, as all Pronouns in general, are declined like Nouns Adjective, and therefore 'tis not necessary to decline them here; but the Word *aquelle* being irregular in its Declension, we put it down here at large.

	Singular.		
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.
N.	<i>aquelle, this.</i>	<i>aquella, this.</i>	<i>aquelle, that.</i>
G.	<i>d'aquelle, of this.</i>	<i>aquella, of this.</i>	<i>d'aquelle, of that.</i>
D.	<i>a & pera a- quelle, to this.</i>	<i>a & pera aquel- la, to this.</i>	<i>a & pera a- quelle, to that.</i>
Ac.	<i>a isto & isso, this</i>	<i>a esta, essa, this.</i>	<i>a isto, isso, that.</i>
V.	<i>caret.</i>		
A.	<i>d'isto, from this.</i>	<i>d'esta, from this</i>	<i>d'isto, from this.</i>
	<i>d'isso, from that.</i>	<i>d'esta, from that.</i>	<i>d'isso, from that.</i>

Plural.

Plural.

Masculine.

Feminine.

N. aquellas.	aquellas, <i>those.</i>
G. d'aquelles.	d'aquellas, <i>of those.</i>
D. a & pera aquellas.	a & pera aquellas, <i>to those.</i>
Ac. a aquellas.	a aquellas, <i>those.</i>
V. caret.	
A. d'istos, d'issos.	d'istas, d'issas, <i>from those.</i>

Pronouns Interrogative.

As the Name sufficiently declares, they serve in the asking a Question; as *que*, what; *que dizes?* what do you say? *quem*, who; *quem he este?* who is that? *qual*, which; *qual dos dous?* which of the two? *cujo* and *cuja*, whose; *cujo cavallo he esse?* whose Horse is that? *cuja casa he esta?* whose House is that?

The Pronoun Relative

Points out the Subject without repeating it; as for Example, *Déos, quem eu adoro hé o criador*, &c. God whom I adore, is the Creator, &c. where the Relative *whom* refers to God, the Subject of my Adoration, and amounts to the same as if I had said, *God, which God I adore, is the Creator*, &c. Hither belongs also the Word *cújo, cuja*, whose; as *méu amigo cújo honór*, &c. my Friend, whose Honour, &c. And thus the Words *quem*, and *cújo, cuja*, which we said before were Interrogatives, are also often used as Relatives, according to the Manner in which they are applied; and if you take but Notice of the Sense of the Clause, you'll never fail discerning when those Words are Interrogative, and when Relative.

36 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.*

N. B. When they stand in the Beginning of a Phrase they are Interrogatives; when in the Middle, Relatives.

The Pronouns improper.

Some Grammarians bring under this Class the Words *tal*, such; *algum*, *alguma*, somebody; *caa*, every; *quem*, who; *que*, what; *nenhum*. *nenhuma*, none; *certo*, *certa*, certain; *outro*, *outra*, another; *todo*, *toda*, all; *mesmo*, the same.

N. B. The *Latins* treat the Words *nullus*, *certus*, *alter*, and *totus*, as Nouns Adjective.

Before we proceed, we cannot but observe a singular Propriety of this Language, which greatly contributes to the Softness of its Tone, and renders some Words very expressive; which is, that they join the adjunctive Particle *N* (which stands for *em*, in) close to some of their Pronouns in both Numbers and Cases, to intimate an Indication. As for Example, *nêlle*, *nêlla*; *nêlles*, *nêllas*; in him or it; in her, in them. In the same Manner you say, *nâquella*, *nâquella*, *nâquillo*, *nâquelles*, *nâquellas*; *nêste*, *nêsta*, *nêsto*, *nêstos*, *nêstas*; *nêsse*, *nêssa*, *nêssos*, *nêsses*, *nêssas*.

The *Portuguese* likewise joins the Word *outro* to the forementioned Pronouns *aquelle*, *este*, *esse*, e. g. *aquellôutro*, that other, *estôutro*, *essôutro*, this other.

For the other Remarks concerning Pronouns, we refer the Reader to the *Syntax*.

But observe, that when a Vowel is omitted for the Sake of joining two Words together, the first Vowel after that which was omitted, ought to be marked with an Accent Acute; as *essôutro*, for *esse outro*; here an Accent is placed on the *o*, to signify that a Letter is left out.

C H A P. IX.

Of the Verb, its Moods, Tenses, and Persons.

THE *Verb* is a Part of Speech which varies its Termination, but not after the same Manner as the Noun doth, which has six Cases, and Marks no Time or Mood; whereas the Verb is conjugated with Moods and Tenses, has a Singular and Plural Number, and three Persons.

The Moods determine the Signification of the Verb, as to the Manner and Circumstance of the Affirmation; as *I love, love thou, that I may love, and to love.* Tenses are Distinctions of Time; as *I do love, and I did love;* and to conjugate a Verb is to form or vary it according to its several Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons.

There are five Moods: The first is the *Indicative*, from the *Latin* Word *indico*, I shew, which simply denotes the Action; as *eu léyo*, I read; *eu quero*, I love. The second is the *Imperative*, from *imperare*, *Latin*, to command; as *lé tu*, read thou; *ouve tu*, hear thou. The third is the *Optative*, from *optare*, to wish, to desire, to pray; as *oxala amára eu, prouvera & queyra Déos & praza à Déos, amára eu & amasse eu*, God grant (that) I did love. The Particles *o* and *assim* also express the Optative Mood; thus you say, *o se fosse eu tal*, O that I were such; *assim Deos me ajude*, so help me God. The fourth is the *Conjunctive*, which is known by the Particle *como*; as *como eu amo*, when I love; *como eu amava*, when I did love; *como estivestes muyto tempo doente*, since you have been a long Time sick; but as this Mood is nothing but the Indicative conjugated through all the Tenses with the Particle *como* before it, we thought it needless to swell the Conjugations by inserting

inserting it. The fifth is the *Infinitive*, from the *Latin infinitus*, because it is not limited either by Number or Person, as other Moods are; as *ler*, to read.

Verbs have also *Gerunds* and *Participles* in the *Portuguese* as well as in the *Latin*.

The *Gerund* is so called from *gero*, I bear, from its bearing a double Signification, viz. that of a *Noun* and that of a *Verb*. There are three of these *Gerunds*, as in *Latin*; *amandi*, of loving; *amando*, in loving; and *amandum*, to love; for that in *di* the *Portuguese* use the *Infinitive Mood*, with the *Preposition de*; as *de amar*, of loving: The *Gerund* in *do* follows the *Latin* exactly; thus the *Portuguese* say, *amando*, *lêndo*, in loving, in reading; for the *Gerund* in *dum* they use the *Infinitive Mood*, and the *Preposition a* and *pera*; as *á amar*; or *pera amar*, *á ler*, and *pera ler*, to love, and to read.

A *Supine* is a Termination of a *Verb*, and has the same Signification as the present Tense of the *Infinitive Mood*, either active or passive; *amatum*, in *Latin*, to love; *amatu*, to be loved; in *Portuguese*, *á amar*, to love, and *de ser amado*, to be loved.

A *Participle* derives its Name from *pars* and *capio*, as it partakes both of a *Noun* and a *Verb*. There are three Sorts in *Latin*; as,

The *Participle* of the *Perfect Tense*; as *Latin amatus*, *Portuguese amado*, *amada*, beloved.

The *Participle* of the *Present Tense*; as *Latin amans*, *Portuguese amante*; *o que ama*, loving, or he that loves.

And the *Participle* of the *Future Tense* in *rus*, in active, and in *dus* in passive; as *Latin amaturus*, *Portuguese, o que ha de amar*, he that shall, will, or is about to love; and *Latin, amandus*, *Portuguese, o que ha de ser amado*, he that shall, will, or is to be loved; this last belongs to the *Verb passive*.
This

This Account of the Verb and Moods being sufficient, I now proceed to speak of the Tenses.

There are properly but three *Tenses* or *Times*, viz. the Past, the Present, and the Future, or what is to come.

The Preterperfect Tense shews the Action of the Verb either perfectly past; as *Latin amavi*, *Portuguese amey*, or *ténho amado*, I loved, or I have loved; or imperfectly past in the Imperfect Tense; as *Latin, amabam*, *Portuguese, amava*, I did love; which is used when the Action, e. g. of loving is past, in regard to the Time in which I speak; and present, with respect to some Circumstance; as I did love (when I was young); I did learn (when I was at School); or, lastly, when an Action is past before some Circumstance happened, which is also past, and then it is called the *Preterpluperfect*; as I had supped when you came in, *eu tinha ceado quando V M entrava*.

The Preterperfect is again divided into the Definite and Indefinite; the former determines the Time of the Action of the Verb entirely past; as I saw your Uncle Yesterday, *vi a seu Tio ontem*.

The Preterperfect Indefinite is when you mention the Time yet passing; as I have seen your Uncle this Morning, *ténho visto a seu Tio esta manha*. In *English* we are not so nice in this Distinction; for we say indifferently, I saw your Uncle this Morning, or I have seen your Uncle this Morning.

* * The natural Order of Things requires the Past or Preterperfect Tense to stand before the Present; but as all Grammarians make the Present Tense the first in their Conjugations, to avoid being particular, or breeding Confusion, we have followed the same Method.

The Present Tense shews the present Action of the Verb; as *eu leyo*, I read; *eu amo*, *tu amas*, *elle ama*, I love, thou lovest, he loveth; *nos amamos*, *vos amays*, *elles amam*, we love, ye love, they love.

The Future Tense points out a Time to come; as *Latin*, *amabo*, *amaréy*, I will love. We have in *English* two Signs to this Tense, which, for want of Observation, Foreigners often confound; the one is conditional, as *I shall*; the other positive, as *I will*. Some do not distinguish between these two Words; and it is common to hear *I shall* for *I will*, and *é contra*; as *I will fall*, for *I shall fall*, and *I shall go*, for *I will go*.

The *Portuguese* have two Futures, the one imperfect or simple, the other perfect or compounded; the simple *eu amaréy*, I will or shall love; the compounded *eu teréy amado*, I shall have loved.

There are then six (or, with the Subdivision of the Future and Uncertain Tense, eight) Tenses, viz. the Present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect definite, the preterperfect indefinite, the Preterpluperfect, the Future imperfect and perfect, and the uncertain Tense, of which we shall speak at large in the *Syntax*.

A Tense has two Numbers, viz. the Singular and Plural, and three Persons in the Singular; as *eu*, I; the second *tu*, thou; the third, *elle*, *ella*, he, she; and as many in the Plural; the first *nós*, we; the second *vós*, ye and you; the third *elles*, they; e. g. *eu amo*, I love; *tu amas*, thou lovest; *elle ama*, he loves; *nos amamos*, we love; *vos amays*, ye love; *elles amam*, they love.

C H A P. X.

The Division and Conjugations of the Verbs.

THE Verbs are commonly divided into Active, Passive, Neuter, Reciprocal, and Impersonal.

A Verb Active signifies an Action, and has always a Passion opposed to it; as *I love*, the Passion opposed to it is *I am loved*; *I read*, *I am read*; *I bear*, *I am heard*: Or, to make it yet plainer, join with the Verb the Words *a Person*, or *a Thing*, and if then it makes good Sense, it is an Active; thus you may say, *I see a Person* or *a Thing*, *I strike a Person* or *Thing*, *I follow a Person* or *Thing*.

The Verb Passive speaks a Sufferance; as *I am loved*, and is formed of the Verb Substantive; as *I am*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense; as *eu sou amado*, I am loved; *tu eres amado*, thou art loved; *ell he amado*, he is loved, &c.

The Verb Neuter signifies an Action not conveyed unto another, but remaining within the Person acting, and has no Passion opposed to it; as *I sleep*, *I walk*, *I come in*, *I tremble*, *I fall*, *I grow pale*, cannot make a Passive *I am slept*, *I am walked*, &c. neither will they make Sense if joined to the Words *a Person* or *Thing*; thus you cannot properly say, *I sleep a Thing*, *I walk a Thing*, or *Person*, *I fall*, *I grow old*, &c.

Some of the Verbs Neuter make use of the Verb *ey*, I have; and others of *sou*, I am, in the Preterperfect Tense.

The Verb Reciprocal has the same Person for its Nominative and Subject; as *me espanto*, I am surprized. This Sort of Verb is hardly known in
the

the *English*, though very common in the *Italian*, *French*, *Spanish*, and *Portuguese* Languages.

Verbs Impersonal have only the third Person, being called so from their wanting the first and second; as *chóve*, it retains; *gêa*, it freezes; *trovéja*, it thunders, &c. they are conjugated throughout in the third Person, and in the Singular Number only. See the Conjugations below.

Verbs again are divided into

Regular and *Irregular*. The *Regular* are such as are confined to general Rules: The *Irregular* have none, and differ from the former, in the first Preterperfect of the Indicative Mood, and Preterperfect of the Conjunctive.

The Conjugations of Verbs.

Of this Language, both regular and irregular, are commonly reduced to three Terminations; and as many Conjugations; the first Conjugation is known by the Termination of the Infinitive Present in *ar*, as *amo*, I love, *amar*, to love; the second terminates in *er* in Infinitive, as *lejo*, I read, *ler*, to read; the third in *ir*, as *ouço*, I hear, *ouvir*, to hear.

* * The Verb *pônho*, I put, in Infinitive Present, *pôr*, to put, with its Compounds, of which we shall speak at the End of the Conjugations, is the only one of the Termination in *or*, and therefore hardly deserving to make a Conjugation by itself.

CHAP.

C H A P. XI.

Of the Auxiliary Verbs aver and ter.

AS the auxiliary or helping Verbs *aver* and *ter*, to have, are necessary for the conjugating the Preterperfects of the Verbs, both Active, Passive, Neuter and Reciprocal; and since without the Verb *sou* and *estou*, I am, the Passive Verb cannot be conjugated, I shall begin with these two Verbs, as absolutely necessary to be first learned,

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb *aver*.Indicative Mood, *Present Tense*.

Sing.	{	Eu éy, <i>I have.</i>
	{	Tu has, <i>thou hast.</i>
	{	Elle ha, <i>he has.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós hémos, <i>avémos, we have.</i>
	{	Vós éys, <i>avéys, ye have.</i>
	{	Elles ham, <i>they have.</i>

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu avía, <i>I had.</i>
	{	Tu avías, <i>thou badst.</i>
	{	Elle avía, <i>he had.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós avíamos, <i>we had.</i>
	{	Vós avíeys, <i>ye had.</i>
	{	Elles avíam, <i>they had.</i>

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu ouve, <i>I have had.</i>
	{	Tu ouvêste, <i>thou hast had.</i>
	{	Elle ouve, <i>he has had.</i>

Plur.

44 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.*

Plur. { Nós ouvemos, *we have had.*
 Vós ouvêstes, *ye have had.*
 Elles ouvêram, *they have had.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu tenho avido, *I have had.*
 Tu tens avido, *thou hast had.*
 Elle tem avido, *he has had.*
 Plur. { Nós temos avido, *we have had.*
 Vós tendes avidos, *ye have had.*
 Elles tem avido, *they have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu tinha avido, *I had had.*
 Tu tinhas avido, *thou hadst had.*
 Elle tinha avido, *he had had.*
 Plur. { Nós tínhamos avido, *we had had.*
 Vós tínheys avido, *ye had had.*
 Elles tínham avido, *they had had.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu averéy, *I shall or will have.*
 Tu averás, *thou shalt or wilt have.*
 Elle averá, *he shall or will have.*
 Plur. { Nós averémos, *we shall or will have.*
 Vós averéys, *ye shall or will have.*
 Elles averam, *they shall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tense.

Sing. { *ja entam* { Eu teréy ovido, *I shall then have had.*
 Tu teras avido, *thou shalt have had.*
 Ellé terá avido, *he shall have had.*
 Plur. { *ja entam* { Nós terémos avido, *we shall have had.*
 Vós teréys avido, *ye shall have had.*
 Elles terám ayido, *they shall have had.*

Imperative;

Imperative. *The first Tense.*

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
 ájas, ou ha tu, *have thou.*
 ája elle, *let him have.*

Plur. { *Ajámos nós, let us have.*
 Ajáys vós, *have ye or you?*
 Ajam elles, *let them have.*

The second Tense.

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
 Averas tu, *thou shalt have.*
 Averá elle, *he shall have.*

Plur. { *Averémos nós, we shall have.*
 Averéys vós, *ye shall have.*
 Averám elles, *they shall have.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. { *Oxala aja eu, God grant I may have.*
 Oxala ajas tu, *God grant thou mayst have.*
 Oxala aja elle, *God grant he may have.*

Plur. { *Oxala ajámos nós, God grant we may have.*
 Oxala ajáys vós, *God grant ye may have.*
 Oxala ajam elles, *God grant they may have.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { *Oxala ouvéra, ouvésse eu, would to God I had,*
or might have.
Oxala ouvéras, ouvesses tu, would to God thou
badst, or mightest have.
Oxala ouvéra, ouvésse elle, would to God be
bad, or might have.

Plur.

- Plur. { Oxala ouvéramos, ouvéssemos nós, *would to God we had, or might have.*
 Oxala ouvéreys, ouvésseys vós, *would to God ye had, or might have.*
 Oxala ouvéram, ovéssem elles, *would to God they had, or might have.*

The Uncertain Tense.

- Sing. { Eu avería, *I would or might have.*
 Tu averías, *thou wouldst or mightest have.*
 Elle avería, *he would or might have.*
- Plur. { Nós averíamos, *we would or might have.*
 Vós averíays, *ye would or might have.*
 Elles averíam, *they would or might have.*

Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Quéyra Deos que eu tenha avido, *God grant I have had, or might have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que tu tenhas avido, *God grant thou hast had, or mightest have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que elle tenha avido, *God grant he has had, or might have had.*
- Plur. { Quéyra Deos que nós tenhamos avido, *God grant we have had, or might have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que vós ténhays avido, *God grant ye have had, or might have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que elles têmham avido, *God grant they have had, or might have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvera Deos que eu ouvéra, ou ouvesse avido, *would to God I had had.*
 Prouvera Deos que tu ouvéras, ou ouveesses avido, *would to God thou hadst had.*
 Prouvera Deos que elle ouvéra, ou ouvesse avido, *would to God he had had.*

- Plur. { Prouvera Deos que nós ouvêramos, ou ouvêsemos avido, *would to God we had had.*
Prouvera Deos que vós ouvêrays, ou ouvêsseis avido, *would to God ye had had.*
Prouvera Deos que elles ouvêram, ou ouvêsem avido, *would to God they had had.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu ouvér, *when I shall or will have.*
Quando tu ouvêres, *when thou shalt or wilt have.*
Quando elle ouvér, *when he shall or will have.*
Plur. { Quando nós ouvêrmos, *when we shall or will have.*
Quando vós ouvêrdes, *when ye shall or will have.*
Quando elles ouvêrem, *when they shall or will have.*

Future Perfect Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu tivér avido, *when I shall or will have had.*
Quando tu tivêres avido, *when thou shalt or wilt have had.*
Quando elle tivér avido, *when he shall or will have had.*
Plur. { Quando nós tivêrmos avido, *when we shall or will have had.*
Quando vós tivêrdes avido, *when ye shall or will have had.*
Quando elles tivêrem avido, *when they shall or will have had.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Avér, *to have.*

Preter

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter avido, *to have had.*

Future Tense.

Ter de avér, ou Esperár de avér, (*to have to have, to hope to have*) *to have hereafter.*

Gerund.

Avendo, *in having, & de avér, of having.*

Participle Present.

Ouvénte, *having; o que ha, he that has.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Avido, avída, *having had; o que ha avido, he that has had.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de avér & espéra de aver, *he (one) that is to have, or hopes to have.*

It may not be improper to observe here, that the Verb *ey, has, ha, I have, thou hast, he has,* assist all Sorts of Verbs in their Moods, Tenses, and Persons, both in the Active and Passive Signification. In the Active, by adding the Particle *de* to the present Tense of the Infinitive of the Verbs, *e. g. Ey de amar, I am about to love, or I shall love; Ey de ler, ouvir, I am about to hear, or shall read or hear, &c.* and so in the other Persons and Tenses.

In the Passive Significations are added to the Particle *de* the Present Tense of the Infinitive of *Sér*, and the Participle of the Preterperfect Tense of any Verb, as *Ey de ser amado, I shall or will*

be

be loved; *bas de ser ouvido*, thou shalt or wilt be heard; *ba de ser lido*, he or it shall be read.

The Auxiliary Verb, *Ter*.

Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu tenho, <i>I have.</i>	<i>eu tenho</i>
		Tu tens, <i>thou hast.</i>	<i>tu tens</i>
		Elle têm, <i>he has.</i>	<i>ella tem</i>
Plur.	{	Nós temos, <i>we have.</i>	<i>nós temos</i>
		Vós tendes, <i>ye have.</i>	<i>vós tendes</i>
		Elles tem, <i>they have.</i>	<i>elles tem</i>

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu tinha, <i>I had.</i>	<i>eu tinha</i>
		Tu tinhas, <i>thou hadst.</i>	<i>tu tinhas</i>
		Elle tinha, <i>he had.</i>	<i>ella tinha</i>
Plur.	{	Nós tínhamos, <i>we had.</i>	<i>nós tínhamos</i>
		Vós tínheys, <i>ye had.</i>	<i>vós tínheys</i>
		Elles tínham, <i>they had.</i>	<i>elles tínham</i>

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu tive, <i>I have had.</i>	
		Tu tiveste, <i>thou hast had.</i>	
		Elle teve, <i>he hath had.</i>	
Plur.	{	Nós tivemos, <i>we have had.</i>	
		Vós tivestes, <i>ye have had.</i>	
		Elles tivéram, <i>they have had.</i>	

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu tenho tido, <i>I have had.</i>	
		Tu tens tido, <i>thou hast had.</i>	
		Elle tem tido, <i>he has had.</i>	

Pur. { Nós temos tido, *we have had.*
 Vós tendes tido, *ye have had.*
 Elles tem tido, *they have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu * tinha tido, *I had had.*
 Tu tinhas tido, *thou hadst had.*
 Elle tinha tido, *he had had.*

Plur. { Nós tínhamos tido, *we had had.*
 Vós tínheys tido, *ye had had.*
 Elles tínham tido, *they had had.*

Future Imperfect.

Sing. { Eu teréy, *I shall or will have.*
 Tu terás, *thou shalt or wilt have.*
 Elle terá, *he shall or will have.*

Plur. { Nós terémos, *we shall or will have.*
 Vós teréys, *ye shall or will have.*
 Elles terám, *they shall or will have.*

Future Perfect.

Sing. { Ja entam eu teréy tido, *I shall (then already) have had.*
 Ja entam tu teras tido, *thou shalt (then already) have had.*
 Ja entam elle terá tido, *he shall (then already) have had.*

Plur. { Ja entam nós terémos tido, *we shall (then already) have had.*
 Ja entam vós teréys tido, *ye shall (then already) have had.*
 Ja entam elles terám tido, *they shall (then already) have had.*

* Some express the Preterpluperfect, though improperly, by *tivera, tiveras, tivera; tiveramos, tiverays, tiveram.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

- Sing.* { Has no first Person.
Tem ou ténhas tu, have thou.
Ténha elle, let him have.
- Plur.* { Tenhámos nós, let us have.
Ténde ou tenháys vós, have ye.
Ténham elles, let them have.

Second Tense.

- Sing.* { Has no first Person.
Terás tu, thou shalt have.
Terá elle, he shall have.
- Plur.* { Terémos nós, we shall have.
Teréys vós, ye shall have.
Terám elles, they shall have.

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { Oxala tenha eu, would to God I may have.
Oxala ténhas tu, would to God thou mayst have.
Oxala tenha elle, would to God he may have.
- Plur.* { Oxala tenhamos nós, would to God we may have.
Oxala tenham vós, would to God ye may have.
Oxala tenham elles, would to God they may have.

Imperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Oxala tivéra, tivésse eu, wish to God I had.
Oxala tivéras, tivesses tu, wish to God thou hadst.
Oxala tivéra, tivésse elle, wish to God he had.
- Plur.* { Oxala tivéramos, tivéssemos nós, wish to God we had.
Oxala tivérais, tivésseys vós, wish to God ye had.
Oxala tivéram, tivéssem elles, wish to God they had.

Uncertain Tense.

- Sing. { Eu teria, *I would or might have.*
 Tu terias, *thou wouldst or mightest have.*
 Elle teria, *he would or might have.*
- Plur. { Nós teríamos, *we would or might have.*
 Vós terieys, *ye would or might have.*
 Elles teriam, *they would or might have.*

Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Quéyra Deos que eu tenha tido, *God grant that I may have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que tu téngas tido, *God grant that thou mayst have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que elle tenha tido, *God grant that he may have had.*
- Plur. { Quéyra Deos que nós ténhamos tido, *God grant that we may have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que vós ténhays tido, *God grant that ye may have had.*
 Quéyra Deos que elles ténham tido, *God grant that they may have had.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvéra Deos que tivéra, ou tivésse eu tido, *would to God I had had.*
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéras, ou tivesses tu tido, *would to God thou hadst had.*
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéra, ou tivésse elle tido, *would to God he had had.*
- Plur. { Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos, ou tivéssemos nós tido, *would to God we had had.*
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys, ou tivésseys vós tido, *would to God ye had had.*
 Prouvéra Deos que tivéram, ou tivessem elles tido, *would to God they had had.*

First Future Tense.

- Sing.* { Quando eu tivér, *when I shall have.*
 Quando tu tivéres, *when thou shalt have.*
 Quando elle tivér, *when he shall have.*
- Plur.* { Quando nós tivérmos, *when we shall have.*
 Quando vós tivérdes, *when ye shall have.*
 Quando elles tivérem, *when they shall have.*

Second Future Tense.

- Sing.* { Quando eu tivér tido, *when I shall have had.*
 Quando tu tivéres tido, *when thou shalt have had.*
 Quando elle tivér tido, *when he shall have had.*
- Plur.* { Quando nós tivérmos tido, *when we shall have had.*
 Quando vós tivérdes tido, *when ye shall have had.*
 Quando elles tivérem tido, *when they shall have had.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Ter, to have.

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter tido, to have had.

Future Tense.

Ayér de ter (to shall or will have, to be to have) to have hereafter,

Gerund.

Têndo, *in having*; de ter, *of having*.

Participle Present.

Em ter, *having*; o que tem, *he that has*.

Participle Preterperfect.

Tido, tida, *having had*; o que ha tido, *he that has had*.

Participle Future.

O que ha de ter, o que espêra de ter, *he that is to have, or hopes to have*.Observations on the Verb *Ey* and *Tenbo*.

The Verb *Ey* has one Irregularity peculiar to itself, and not to be found in other Verbs, which is, that in all Moods, Tenses, and Persons of the Singular Number, it serves Nouns both Singular and Plural; e. g. *ha hum anno*, it is a Year; *ha muitos annos*, it is many Years; *avia hum anno*, & *avia muitos annos*, as the French say, *il y a un an*, & *il y a plusieurs années*, which is also a usual Way of expressing themselves in the Spanish Language.

This Verb is made use of in all Moods, Tenses, and Persons, with the Addition of the Particle *de*, with the Present and Imperfect of the Verb Substantive *Sou* and *Estau*, as *ey de ser, amar, ler*, I shall be, love, read; *avia de ser, amar, ler*, and *ouve de ser, amar, ler*. The Verb *Tenbo* in this Form is improper, although elegant enough in Spanish; for the Portuguese do not say *tenbo de amar, ler, escrever*; but the Spaniards say properly enough, *tengo de amar, leer, escribir*, I am to love, read, write, &c.

The

The Particle *me* is also sometimes added, and must always be placed before the Particle *de*; as *ba me de custar*, it will cost me; *ba me de dar*, he shall give me; it being improper to say *ba de me dar*, *ba de me custar*, &c.

The Verb *Ey* is also often used with the Particle *de*, and the Infinitive of the Verb *Sou*, that is, *ser*, joined with the Participle Preterperfect of any Verb in the Passive Voice, e. g. *ey de ser amada*, I am to be loved; *ey de ser lido, ouvido*, &c. I am to be read, heard; so *avía de ser amado, lido, ouvido*, and so through all the Numbers and Persons.

The Verb *Ey* in Passive Voice is always put before the Infinitive *ser*; as *ey de ser, avía de ser*, &c. but in the Active Voice it is not only put before the Verb to which it is joined, but sometimes after; as *se me fizerdes a vontade, deyxárvos ey por méu erdeyro*, if you please me, I will make you my Heir; *se fordes obediénte a vossos páys, far-vos ba Deos mnytas mercés*, if you are obedient to your Parents, God will bestow many Blessings on you.

The Word *ouve*, I had, he had, the first or third Person in Singular of the first Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *Ey*, is the same with *ouve*, the third Person Singular Present Indicative of the Verb *ouço*, I hear, which must be distinguished by Experience.

The Verb *Tenho*, I have, is often joined with Verbs Active and Neuter, not in all the Tenses, only the Preterperfect and Preterpluperfect of the Indicative, Optative, and Subjunctive Moods; as also in the Futures Perfect of the Indicative and Conjunctive. Examples; *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tivera (imba) amado*, I had loved; *prouvera Deos que tivera eu amado*, would to God I had loved; *tendo amado*, having loved; *ter amado*, to

have loved; *eu terey amado*, I shall have loved; *quando eu tiver amado*, when I shall have loved.

The Verb *Tenho* is auxiliary to other Verbs through all its Moods and Tenses, only in an Active Sense, with the Addition of a Participle Preterperfect Tense of the said Verb; as *tenho amado*, I have loved; *tens, tem amado, lido, ouvido*, loved, read, heard; *tinha*, I had, *tinhas, tinha amado, lido, ouvido*, &c. And note, That the three auxiliary Verbs, *sou, ey, and tenho*, are often auxiliary to one another; as *ey de ser*, I shall be; *tenho sido*, I have been; *tenho ouvido*, I have had; and sometimes the same Verb is auxiliary to itself; as *ey de aver*, I shall or am to have; *tenho tido*, I have had, &c. but is not well joined with all Participles of the Active Voice; for it would be improper to say *tenho podido*, I have been able; or *tenho querido*, I have desired; *tenho rido*, I have laughed; *tenho abhorrecido*, I have abhorred; for *ey podido, querido, rido, abhorrecido*, because the Verb *tenho* doth not square with the Signification of all Verbs, of which Experience will be the best Informer.

Note, That the Verbs which admit not of the auxiliary Verb *tenho*, are generally of the second or third Conjugation, and those rare; it is joined with all of the first Conjugation, excepting the Verb *matar*, to kill; for it would be improper to say *tenho matado*, but rather *tenho morto*, I have killed.

* * The Imperfect Tense of the Verb *tenho, tinha*, I had, is exactly expressed as the Word *tinha*, a Scald Head: *Tinha* is also both the first and third Person Singular of the Imperfect Indicative Mood; the third Person Singular of the Indicative Present equivocates, with the third in the Plural; thus you write, *elle tem, & elles tem,*

tem, he has and they have. Likewise the Verb *ponho*, I put, is in the third Person Singular *elle poem*; and in the third Person Plural of the Indicative Present you say *elles poem*, they put. The Verb *foy* equivocates also in the first Person Singular of the Imperfect Indicative with the third Person Singular, as *eu era*, & *elle era*, I was and he was; so you say, *eu tivera*, & *elle tivera*, all which is easily learnt by Experience, and the Sense the Words stand in.

C H A P. XII.

Of the Verbs Sou and Estou, I am.

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu sou, estás, I am.
	{	Tu es, estás, thou art.
	{	Elle he, está, he is.
Plur.	{	Nós somos, estamos, we are.
	{	Vós soys, estays, ye are.
	{	Elles são, estão, they are.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu era, estava, I was.
	{	Tu eras, estavas, thou wast.
	{	Elle era, estava, he was.
Plur.	{	Nós eramos, estávamos, we were.
	{	Vós éreis, estáveis, ye were.
	{	Elles eram, estavam, they were.

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu fui, estive, I have been.
	{	Tu foste, estiveste, thou hast been.
	{	Elle foy, esteve, he has been.
Plur.	{	Nós fomos, estivemos, we have been.
	{	Vós fostes, estivestes, ye have been.
	{	Elles foram, estiveram, they have been.

Second

Second Perfect.

Sing.	{	Eu tenho sido, ou estado, I have been.
		Tu tens sido, ou estado, thou hast been.
		Elle têm sido, ou estado, he has been.
Plur.	{	Nós temos sido, ou estado, we have been.
		Vós tendes sido, ou estado, ye have been.
		Elles têm sido, ou estado, they have been.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha sido, estado, I had been.
		Tu tinhas sido, estado, thou hadst been.
		Elle tinha sido, estado, he had been.
Plur.	{	Nós tínhamos sido, estado, we had been.
		Vós tínheys sido, estado, ye had been.
		Elles tínham sido, estado, they had been.

Future Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Eu seréy, estaréy, I shall or will be.
		Tu serás, estarás, thou shalt or will be.
		Elle será, estará, he shall or will be.
Plur.	{	Nós serémos, estarémos, we shall or will be.
		Vós seréys, estaréys, ye shall or will be.
		Elles serám, estarám, they shall or will be.

Future Perfect.

Sing.	{	Ja entám eu teréy sido, ou estado, I shall then already have been.
		Ja entam tu terás sido, ou estado, thou shalt then already have been.
		Ja entam elle terá sido, ou estado, he shall then already have been.
Plur.	{	Ja entam nós terémos sido, ou estado, we shall then already have been.
		Ja entam vós teréys sido, ou estado, ye shall then already have been.
		Ja entam elles terám sido, ou estado, they shall then already have been.

* Some use *fora & estivera, foras, estiveras, &c.* for the Preterpluperfect *tenho sido*, which however is not so proper.

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing.* { Sé tu, está, *be thou.*
Seja elle, esteja, *be he, or let him be.*
- Plur.* { Sejamos nós, estejamos, *let us be.*
Sede vós, estáy, *be ye.*
Séjam elles estejam, *let them be.*

Second Tense.

- Has no first Person.*
- Sing.* { Serás tu, estarás, *thou shalt be, or be thou.*
Será elle, estará, *be shall he, or be he.*
- Plur.* { Seremos nós, estaremos, *we shall be.*
Seréys vós, estaréys, *ye shall be, or be ye.*
Serám elles, estarám, *they shall be, or be they.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { Oxala seja eu, ou esteja, *wish to God I may be.*
Oxala sejas tu, ou estejas, *wish to God thou mayst be.*
Oxala seja elle, ou esteja, *wish to God he may be.*
- Plur.* { Oxala sejamos nós, ou estejamos, *wish to God we may be.*
Oxala sejays vós ou estejays, *wish to God ye may be.*
Oxala sejam elles, ou estejam, *wish to God they may be.*

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	Oxala fôra eu ou fosse, estivera ou estivesse, <i>would to God I were.</i>
	Oxala fôras tu ou fosses, estiveras ou estivesse, <i>would to God thou wert.</i>
	Oxala fôra elle ou fosse, estivera ou estivesse, <i>would to God he were.</i>
Plur.	Oxala fôramos nós ou fôssemos, estiveramos, ou estivêssemos, <i>would to God we were.</i>
	Oxala fôreys vós ou fôsseys, estiveréys ou estivêsseis, <i>would to God ye were.</i>
	Oxala fôram elles ou fôssem, estiveram ou estivêssem, <i>would to God they were.</i>

The Uncertain Tense.

Sing.	Eu seria, estaria, <i>I might be.</i>
	Tu serias, estarias, <i>thou mightest be.</i>
	Elle seria, estaria, <i>he might be.</i>
Plur.	Nós seríamos, estaríamos, <i>we might be.</i>
	Vós seríeys, estaríeys, <i>ye might be.</i>
	Elles seriam, estariam, <i>they might be.</i>

Pluperfect Tense:

Sing.	Queyra Deos que eu tenha sido estado, God grant <i>I may have been.</i>
	Queyra Deos que tu tenhas sido estado, God grant <i>that thou mayst have been.</i>
	Queyra Deos que elle tenha sido estado, God grant <i>that he may have been.</i>
Plur.	Queyra Deos que nós tenhamos sido estado, God grant <i>that we may have been.</i>
	Queyra Deos que vós ténhays sido estado, God grant <i>that ye may have been.</i>
	Queyra Deos que elles ténham sido estado, God grant <i>that they may have been.</i>

Preterpluperfect

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Prouvéra Deos que eu ouvéra, ouvésse sido,
would to God that I had been.
Prouvéra Deos que tu ouvéras, ouvésses sido,
would to God that thou hadst been.
Prouvéra Deos que elle ouvéra, ouvésse sido,
would to God that he had been.
- Plur.* { Prouvéra Deos que nós ouvéramos, ouvésses-
mos sido, would to God that we had been.
Prouvéra Deos que vós ouvéreys, ouvésséys
sido, would to God that ye had been.
Prouvéra Deos que elles ouvérám, ouvéssém
sido, would to God that they had been.

First Future Tense.

- Sing.* { Quando, praza a Deos que eu for, estiver;
when or please God I shall or may be hereafter.
Quando, praza a Deos que tu fores, estiveres,
when or please God thou shalt or may'st be hereafter.
Quando, praza a Deos que elle for, estiver,
when or please God he shall or may be hereafter.
- Plur.* { Quando, praza a Deos que nós formos, esti-
vermos, when or please God we shall or may
be hereafter.
Quando, praza a Deos que vós fordes, esti-
verdes, when or please God ye shall or may be
hereafter.
Quando, praza a Deos que elles forem, esti-
verem, when or please God they shall or may
be hereafter.

Second Future Tense.

- Sing.* { Quando eu tivér sido, ou estado, when I shall
have been.
Quando tu tivéres sido, ou estado, when thou
shalt have been.
Quando elle tivér sido, ou estado, when he
shall have been.

Plur.

Plur. { Quando nós tivermos sido, ou estado, *when we shall have been.*
 Quando vós tiverdes sido, ou estado, *when ye shall have been.*
 Quando elles tiverem sido, ou estado, *when they shall have been.*

Infinitive Mood. *Present Tense.*Ser, estar, *to be.**Preterperfect Tense.*Aver sido, estado, *to have been.**Future.*Aver de ser, estar, *to be hereafter.**Gerund.*Sendo, estando, *in having*; de ser, estar, *of having.**Supine.*á ser, estar, & pera ser, estar, *to be.**Participle Present.*Em ser, estar, *being*; o que he, está, *one (he) that is.**Participle Perfect.*Sido, estado, *having been*; o que ha sido, estado, *be (one) that has been.**Participle Future.*O que ha, ou espera de ser, ou estar, *be (one) that is or hopes to be.*

Observations on the Verb *Sou*, I am.

The Verb *Sou*, I am, is exactly express'd and pronounced in the Preterperfect Tense, like the Verb *vou*, I go, by the Word *ou fuy* in both, for I have been and I went; only with this Distinction, that the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *vou*, I go, is always followed by a Substantive of Place and Motion: As for Example, *fuy a Roma*, I went to Rome, *fuy a Londres*, I went to London; and sometimes with an Adjective adjoined; as *fuy á famosa Roma*, I went to famous Rome. Sometimes follows a Verb of the Infinitive Mood; as *fuy ver*, *fuy ler*, I went to see, I went to read; but the Preterperfect Tense of the Verb *Sou* hath always a Substantive or Adjective following it, and signifies no Motion; e. g. *fuy bom estudante*, I have been a good Student; *Lisboa foy fundada por Ulisses*, Lisbon was founded by Ulysses, &c. See the Verb *vou*, I go.

Besides these Equivocations, there are also many others of the like Nature, v. g. the third Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood of the Verb *sou*, *sam*, they are, is written and pronounced as the Word *sam*, well or sound; *era*, I or he was, and *era*, an Ivy-tree; *eras*, thou wast, and *eras*, Ivy-trees; *ou fora*, I might be, and *fora*, without; *fóram*, they might have been, and *forám*, a Ferret, distinguished only by the Accent; *seram*, they shall be, and *seram*, the Beginning of the Night; *se tu*, be thou, and *se*, himself; *sede-vos*, be ye, and *sede*, Thirst; *tu estás*, thou art, and *éstas*, these; *está*, he is, and *ésta*, this; which Words are to be distinguished by the Accent, or Connexion of the Discourse.

C H A P. XIII.

*Of the Regular Verbs, and their three Conjugations.**The First Conjugation in ar.**Indicative Mood. Present Tense.*

Sing.	{	Eu ámo, <i>I love.</i>
	{	Tu ámas, <i>thou lovest.</i>
	{	Elle áma, <i>he loveth.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós amámos, <i>we love.</i>
	{	Vós amáys, <i>ye love.</i>
	{	Elles ámam, <i>they love.</i>

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu amáva, <i>I loved or did love.</i>
	{	Tu amavas, <i>thou lovedst or didst love.</i>
	{	Elle amáva, <i>he loved or did love.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós amávamos, <i>we loved or did love.</i>
	{	Vós amávays, <i>ye loved or did love.</i>
	{	Elles amávam, <i>they loved or did love.</i>

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu améy <i>I have loved.</i>
	{	Tu amáste, <i>thou hast loved.</i>
	{	Elle amóu, <i>he hath loved.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós amémos, <i>we have loved.</i>
	{	Vós amástes, <i>ye have loved.</i>
	{	Elles amáram, <i>they have loved.</i>

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu tenho amado, <i>I have loved.</i>
	{	Tu tens amado, <i>thou hast loved.</i>
	{	Elle tem amado, <i>he has loved.</i>

Plur.

- Plur. { Nós temos amado, *we have loved.*
 Vós tendes amado, *ye have loved.*
 Elles tem amado, *they have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Eu * tinha amado, *I had loved.*
 Tu tinhas amado, *thou hadst loved.*
 Elle tinha amado, *he had loved.*
 Plur. { Nós tínhamos amado, *we had loved.*
 Vós tínheys amado, *ye had loved.*
 Elles tínham amado, *they had loved.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Eu amaréy, *I shall or will love.*
 Tu amarás, *thou shalt or wilt love.*
 Elle amará, *he shall or will love.*
 Plur. { Nós amaremos, *we shall or will love.*
 Vós amaréys, *ye shall or will love.*
 Elles amarám, *they shall or will love.*

Future Perfect Tense.

- Sing. { Ja entam eu teréy amado, *I shall then have loved.*
 Ja entam tu terás amado, *thou shalt then have loved.*
 Ja entam elle terá amado, *he shall then have loved.*
 Plur. { Ja entam nós terémos amado, *we shall then have loved.*
 Ja entam vós teréys amado, *ye shall then have loved.*
 Ja entam elles terám amado, *they shall then have loved.*

* Some use *amára*, *amáras*, *amána*, &c. for the Preterpluperfect, which by the best Criticks is judged an Impropriety, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

Imperative Mood. *First Tense.*

- Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
 Ama tu, *love thou.*
 Ame elle, *let him love.*
- Plur. { Amémos nós, *let us love.*
 Amáy vós, *love ye.*
 Amem elles, *let them love.*

Second Tense.

- Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
 Amarás tú, *thou shalt love.*
 Amara elle, *he shall love.*
- Plur. { Amarémos nós, *we shall love.*
 Amaréys vós, *ye shall love.*
 Amarám elles, *they shall love.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing. { Oxala áme eu, *I wish I may love.*
 Oxala ámes tu, *I wish thou mayest love.*
 Oxala áme elle, *I wish he may love.*
- Plur. { Oxala amémos nós, *I wish we may love.*
 Oxala améys vós, *I wish ye may love.*
 Oxala amem elles, *I wish they may love.*

Imperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Oxala amára, ou amásse eu, *would I might or could love.*
 Oxala amáras, ou amásstes tu, *would thou mightest or couldst love.*
 Oxala amára, ou amásse elle, *would he might or could love.*

Plur.

Grammatica Anglo-Lusitânica. 67

- Plur. { Oxala amáramos, ou amássemos nós, *would we might or could love.*
 Oxala amareys, ou amásseys vós, *would ye might or could love.*
 Oxala amáram, ou amássem elles, *would they might or could love.*

Uncertain Tense.

- Sing. { Eu amaria, *I might love.*
 Tu amarias, *thou mightest love.*
 Elle amaria, *he might love.*
 Plur. { Nós amariamos, *we might love.*
 Vós amariéys, *ye might love.*
 Elles amariam, *they might love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Queyra Deos que tenha eu amado, *God grant that I may have loved.*
 Queyra Deos que tenha tu amado, *God grant that thou mayest have loved.*
 Queyra Deos que tenha elle amado, *God grant that he may have loved.*
 Plur. { Queyra Deos que tenhamos nós amado, *God grant that we may have loved.*
 Queyra Deos que tenham vós amado, *God grant that ye may have loved.*
 Queyra Deos que tenham elles amado, *God grant that they may have loved.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvéra Deos que tivera, ou tivesse eu amado, *would to God that I had loved.*
 Prouvéra Deos que tiveras, ou tivesse tu amado, *would to God that thou hadst loved.*
 Prouvéra Deos que tivera, ou tivesse elle amado, *would to God that he had loved.*

- Plur. { Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos, ou tivéssemos
nós amado, *would to God that we had loved.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéreys, ou tivésseys vós
amado, *would to God that ye had loved.*
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram, ou tivéssem elles
amado, *would to God that they had loved.*

First Future.

- Sing. { Quando eu amar, *when I shall or will love.*
Quando tu amares, *when thou shalt or wilt love.*
Quando elle amar, *when he shall or will love.*
Plur. { Quando nós amarmos, *when we shall or will love.*
Quando vós amardes, *when ye shall or will love.*
Quando elles amarem, *when they shall or will love.*

Second Future.

- Sing. { Quando eu tivér amado, *when I shall or will
have loved.*
Quando tu tivéres amado, *when thou shalt or
wilt have loved.*
Quando elle tivér amado, *when he shall or
wilt have loved.*
Plur. { Quando nós tivérmos amado, *when we shall or
will have loved.*
Quando vós tivérdes amado, *when ye shall or
will have loved.*
Quando elles tivérem amado, *when they shall
or will have loved.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Amár, *to love.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Tér amado, *to have loved.*

Future

Future Tense.

Tér de amar, ou esperar de amar (*to have to love, to hope to love*) to love hereafter.

Gerund.

Amando, in loving; and de amar, of loving.

Supine.

á amar, ou pera amar, *to love.*

Participle Present.

Amante, loving; o que ama, he (or one) that loves.

Participle Perfect.

Amado, *having loved*; ou que ha amado, *he (or one) that has loved.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de amar, ou espéra de amar, *be (or que)*
that is to love, or hopes to love.



The First Conjugation in the Passive Voice.

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing. { Eu sou amado, *I am loved.*
 { Tu es amado, *thou art loved.*
 { Elle he amado, *he is loved.*
Plur. { Nós somos amados, *we are loved.*
 { Vós soys amados, *ye are loved.*
 { Elles sam amados, *they are loved.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu era amado, *I was loved.*
 { Tu éras amado, *thou wert loved.*
 { Elle éra amado, *he was loved.*

Plur. { Nós erámos amados, *we were loved.*
 Vós éreys amados, *ye were loved.*
 Elles eram amados, *they were loved.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu fity amado, *I have been loved.*
 Tu folte amado, *thou hast been loved.*
 Elle foy, amado, *he has been loved.*

Plur. { Nós fomos amados, *we have been loved.*
 Vós fóltes amados, *ye have been loved.*
 Elles fóram amados, *they have been loved.*

These three Tenses may suffice to shew how the Verb Passive is conjugated, which consists in this, that you conjugate the Verb Substantive *Sou* thro' all the Moods and Tenses, adding the Participle of the Perfect Tense of the Verb to it; as *amado*, *lido*, *ouvido*, which in the Plural Number are put in *os*, or in *as* if of the Feminine Gender; thus you say, *os homens são amados*, the Men are beloved; *as mulheres são amadas*, the Women are beloved.

Note, If you speak but to one Person, you put the Verb *sou* in Plural, but the Participle in Singular; as *digo a Vossê que soys amado, amada, lido, lida, & ouvido, ouvida*, I tell you, Sir, or Madam, that you are beloved, read, and heard; for the Plural, or when you speak to more than one Person, you say, e. g. *digo a Vossês que soys amados, amadas, lidos, lidas, & ouvidos, ouvidas*, I tell you (to Men or Women) that you are beloved, read, and heard.

Example

Example of the Second Conjugation in *or*.Indicative Mood. *Present Tense.*

Sing. { Eu lëyo, *I read.*
 Tu lës, *thou readest.*
 Elle lë, *he reads.*

Plur. { Nós lëmos, *we read.*
 Vós lëdes, *ye read.*
 Elles lëm, *they read.*

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu lía, *I read or did read.*
 Tu lías, *thou readest or didst read.*
 Elle lía, *he read or did read.*

Plur. { Nós líamos, *we read or did read.*
 Vós líeys, *ye read or did read.*
 Elles líam, *they read or did read.*

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu lí, *I read.*
 Tu leste, *thou readest.*
 Elle léo, *he reads.*

Plur. { Nós lemos, *we read.*
 Vós lestes, *ye read.*
 Elles léram, *they read.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu ténho lido, *I have read.*
 Tu tens lido, *thou hast read.*
 Elle tem lido, *he has read.*

Plur. { Nós temos lido, *we have read.*
 Vós tendes lido, *ye have read.*
 Elles têm lido, *they have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha lido, <i>I had read.</i>
	{	Tu tinhas lido, <i>thou hadst read.</i>
	{	Elle tinha lido, <i>he had read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós tínhamos lido, <i>we had read.</i>
	{	Vós tínheys lido, <i>ye had read.</i>
	{	Elles tínham lido, <i>they had read.</i>

Future Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu leréy, <i>I shall or will read.</i>
	{	Tu lerás, <i>thou shalt or wilt read.</i>
	{	Elle lerá <i>he shall or will read.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós lerémos, <i>we shall or will read.</i>
	{	Vós leréys, <i>ye shall or will read.</i>
	{	Elles lerám, <i>they shall or will read.</i>

Future Perfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Ja entám eu teréy lido, <i>I then shall have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám tu terás lido, <i>thou then shalt have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám elle terá lido, <i>he then shall have read.</i>
Plur.	{	Ja entám nós terémos lido, <i>we then shall have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám vós teréys lido, <i>ye then shall have read.</i>
	{	Ja entám elles terám lido, <i>they then shall have read.</i>

Imperative Mood. First Tense.

Sing.	{	<i>Has no first Person.</i>
	{	Lé tu, <i>read thou.</i>
	{	Léya elle, <i>let him read, read he.</i>
Plur.	{	Leyámos nós, <i>let us read.</i>
	{	Lede vós, <i>read ye.</i>
	{	Léyam elles <i>let them read.</i>

* Some express the Preterpluperfect by *lira, leras, lira*, &c. tho' improperly, it being the Imperfect of the Optative Mood.

Second

Second Tense.

- Sing.* { Has no first Person.
 Lerás tu, thou shalt read.
 Lerá elle, he shall read.
- Plur.* { Lerémos nós, we shall read.
 Leréys vós, ye shall read.
 Lerám elles, they shall read.

Optative Mood. Present Tense.

- Sing.* { Oxala lêya eu, would to God I may read.
 Oxala lêyas tu, would to God thou mayest read.
 Oxala lêya elle, would to God he may read.
- Plur.* { Oxala lêyamos nós, would to God we may read.
 Oxala lêyays vós, would to God ye may read.
 Oxala lêyam elles, would to God they may read.

Imperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Oxala lera, ou leſſe eu, would I might or could read.
 Oxala leras tu, ou leſſes tu, would thou mightest or couldst read.
 Oxala lera elle, ou leſſe elle, would he might or could read.
- Plur.* { Oxala léramos nós, ou léſſemos nos, would we might or could read.
 Oxala léreys vós ou léſſeys, vós, would ye might or could read.
 Oxala léram elles ou léſſem elles, would they might or could read.

Peterperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Quéyra Deos que tenha eu lido, God grant that I have or may have read.
 Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu lido, God grant that thou hast or mayest have read.
 Quéyra Deos que tenha elle lido, God grant that he hath or may have read.
- Plur.*

- Plur. { Quêyra Deos que ténhamos nós lido, *God grant that we have or may have read.*
 Quêyra Deos que ténhays vós lido, *God grant that ye have or may have read.*
 Quêyra Deos que ténham elles lido, *God grant that they have or may have read.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra ou tivésse eu lido, *would to God I had read.*
 Prouvéra á Déos que tivéras, ou tivésse tu lido, *would to God thou hadst read.*
 Prouvéra á Déos que tivéra, ou tivésse elle lido, *would to God he had read.*
 Plur. { Prouvéra á Déos que tivéramos, ou tivéssemos nós lido, *would to God we had read.*
 Prouvéra á Déos que tivéreys, ou tivésseys vós lido, *would to God ye had read.*
 Prouvéra á Déos que tivéram, ou tivéssem elles lido, *would to God they had read.*

First Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu ler, *when I shall read.*
 Quando tu léres, *when thou shalt read.*
 Quando elle ler, *when he shall read.*
 Plur. { Quando nós lérmos, *when we shall read.*
 Quando vós lérdes, *when ye shall read.*
 Quando elles lérem, *when they shall read.*

Second Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu tiver lido, *when or please God I shall have read.*
 Quando tu tiveres lido, *when or please God thou shalt have read.*
 Quando elle tiver lido, *when or please God he shall have read.*
 Plur. { Quando nós tivermos lido, *when or please God we shall have read.*
 Quando vós tiverdes lido, *when or please God ye shall have read.*
 Quando elles tiverem lido, *when or please God they shall have read.*

Plur.

Plur. Quando nós tivérmos lido, *when or please God we shall have read.*
Quando vós tivérdes lido, *when or please God ye shall have read.*
Quando elles tivêrem lido, *when or please God they shall have read.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Ler, *to read.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter lido, *to have read.*

Future.

Aver de ler, ou esperar de ler, *(to be or to have to read) to hope to read, or to read hereafter.*

Gerund.

Lendo, *in reading; and de ler, of reading.*

Supine.

á ler, ou pera ler, *to read.*

Participle Present.

Lênte, *reading; o que lê, he (one) that reads.*

Participle Perfect.

Lido, *having read; o que ha lido, he (one) that has read.*

Participle Future.

O que ha dé ler, ou espera de ler, *he (one) that is to read or hopes to read.*

The

The Passive Voice of the Verb *ler*, to read, is also formed by conjugating the Verb *ser*, to be, through all its Moods and Tenses, and adding the Participle *lido*, read, to it, which in the three Persons in Singular remains *lido*, and in Plural is *lidos*; as *eu sou lido*, *tu es lido*, *elle he lido*; *nós somos lidos*, *vós soys lidos*, *elles sam lidos*: Thus in Imperfect, *eu era lido*; in Perfect, *fuy lido*; Preterpluperfect, *fora lido*; and in Future, *seréy lido*; and so through all the Moods and Tenses, as we observed above of the Verb *amo*.

An Example of the Third Conjugation, in *ir*.

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing. { *Eu ouço, I hear.*
Tu ouves, thou hearest.
Elle ouve, he heareth.

Plur. { *Nós ouvimos, we hear.*
Vós ouvís, ye hear.
Elles ouvem, they hear.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing. { *Eu ouvía, I heard or did hear.*
Tu ouvías, thou heardst or didst hear.
Elle ouvía, he heard or did hear.

Plur. { *Nós ouvíamos, we heard or did hear.*
Vós ouvíeis, ye heard or did hear.
Elles ouviam, they heard or did hear.

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing. { *Eu ouvi, I have heard.*
Tu ouviste, thou hast heard.
Elle ouvió, he has heard.

Plur.

- Plur. { Nós ouvimos, *we have heard.*
 Vós ouvistes, *ye have heard.*
 Elles ouviram, *they have heard.*

Second Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Eu tenho ouvido, *I have heard.*
 Tu tens ouvido, *thou hast heard.*
 Elle tem ouvido, *he has heard.*
 Plur. { Nós temos ouvido, *we have heard.*
 Vós tendes ouvido, *ye have heard.*
 Elles tem ouvido, *they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Eu * tinha ouvido, *I had heard.*
 Tu tinhas ouvido, *thou hadst heard.*
 Elle tinha ouvido, *he had heard.*
 Plur. { Nós tínhamos ouvido, *we had heard.*
 Vós tínheys ouvido, *ye had heard.*
 Elles tinham ouvido, *they had heard.*

Future Imperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Eu ouviréy, *I shall or will hear.*
 Tu ouvirás, *thou shalt or wilt hear.*
 Elle ouvirá, *he shall or will hear.*
 Plur. { Nós ouviremos, *we shall or will hear.*
 Vós ouvireys, *ye shall or will hear.*
 Elles ouvirám, *they shall or will hear.*

Future Perfect.

- Sing. { Já entám eu térey ouvido, *I shall then have heard.*
 Já entám tu teras ouvido, *thou shalt then have heard.*
 Já entám elle terá ouvido, *he shall then have heard.*

* Some express the Preterpluperfect by *ouvira*, *ouviras*, *ouvira*, &c. the Imperfect of the Optative, which the best Criticks find fault with.

Plur.

- Plur. { Ja entam nós terémós ouvido, *we shall then have heard.*
 { Ja entam vós teréys ouvido, *ye shall then have heard.*
 { Ja entam elles terâm ouvido, *they shall then have heard.*

Imperative Mood. *The First Tense.*

- Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
 { Oúve tu, *bear thou.*
 { Oúça elle, *let him bear.*
 Plur. { Ouçámos nós, *let us bear.*
 { Ouví vós, *bear ye.*
 { Ouçam elles, *let them bear.*

The Second Tense.

- Sing. { *Has no first Person.*
 { Ouvirás tu, *thou shalt bear.*
 { Ouvirá elle, *he shall bear.*
 Plur. { Ouvirémós nós, *we shall bear.*
 { Ouviréys vós, *ye shall bear.*
 { Ouvirâm elles, *they shall bear.*

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing. { Oxala ouça eu, *would I may bear.*
 { Oxala ouças tu, *would thou mayest bear.*
 { Oxala ouça elle, *would he may bear.*
 Plur. { Oxala ouçámos nós, *would we may bear.*
 { Oxala ouçáys vós, *would ye may bear.*
 { Oxala ouçam elles, *would they may bear.*

Imperfect Tense.

- Sing. { Oxala ouvira ou ouvísse eu, *would I might or could bear.*
 { Oxala ouviras ou ouvísse tu, *would thou mightest or couldst bear.*
 { Oxala ouvira ou ouvísse elle, *would he might or could bear.*

Plur.

- Plur.* { Oxala ouviremos ou ouvíssemos nós, *would we might or could hear.*
 Oxala ouvireys ou ouvísseys vós, *would ye might or could hear.*
 Oxala ouviram ou ouvíssem elles, *would they might or could hear.*

The Uncertain Tense.

- Sing.* { Eu ouviria, *I might hear.*
 Tu ouviriás, *thou mightest hear.*
 Elle ouviria, *he might hear.*
Plur. { Nós ouviriámos, *we might hear.*
 Vós ouviriçes, *ye might hear.*
 Elles ouviriam, *they might hear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Quéyra Deos que ténha eu ouvido, *God grant that I have heard.*
 Quéyra Deos que ténhas tu ouvido, *God grant that thou hast heard.*
 Quéyra Deos que tenha elle ouvido, *God grant that he hath heard.*
Plur. { Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nós ouvido, *God grant that we have heard.*
 Quéyra Deos que ténhays vós ouvido, *God grant that ye have heard.*
 Quéyra Deos que ténham elles ouvido, *God grant that they have heard.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu ouvido, *would to God I had heard.*
 Prouvera Deos que tiveras ou tivesse tu ouvido, *would to God thou hadst heard.*
 Prouvera Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle ouvido, *would to God he had heard.*

Plur.

- Plur. { Prouvera Deos que tivêramos ou tivéssemos
nós ouvido, *would to God we had heard.*
Prouvera Deos que tivêreis ou tivésseis vós
ouvido, *would to God ye had heard.*
Prouvera Deos que tivêram ou tivéssem elles
ouvido, *would to God they had heard.*

The First Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu ouvir, *when I shall hear.*
Quando tu ouvires, *when thou shalt hear.*
Quando elle ouvir, *when he shall hear.*
Plur. { Quando nós ouvirmos, *when we shall hear.*
Quando vós ouvirdes, *when ye shall hear.*
Quando elles ouvirem, *when they shall hear.*

Second Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando eu tiver ouvido, *when I shall have*
heard.
Quando tu tiveres ouvido, *when thou shalt*
have heard.
Quando elle tiver ouvido, *when he shall have*
heard.
Plur. { Quando nós tivêrmos ouvido, *when we shall*
have heard.
Quando vós tiverdes ouvido, *when ye shall*
have heard.
Quando elles tivêrem ouvido, *when they shall*
have heard.

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Ouvir, *to hear.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter ouvido, *to have heard.*

Future

Future Tense.

Aver de ouvir, ou esperar de ouvir, *to be to bear, to hope to bear, or to bear hereafter.*

Gerund.

Ouvindo, *in bearing.*

Supine.

a ouvir, ou pera ouvir, *to bear.*

Participle Present.

Ouvente, o que ouve, o que esta ouvindo, *be (one) that bears, or is bearing.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Ouvido, *having heard*; o que tem ouvido, *be (one) that has heard.*

Participle Future.

O que ha de ouvir, ou espéra de ouvir, *be (one) that is to bear or hopes to bear.*

Observe,

Some pretend to enrich the Portuguese Verbs by Moods not common to other Languages, and therefore, besides the Indicative, Imperative, Optative and Infinitive Moods, set down a Conjunctive Mood, a Conjunctive peculiar to the Portuguese Language, a Potential Mood, and a Permissive Mood. The Conjunctive Mood is nothing else but the Indicative conjugated with the Particle *como*, *as*, or *when*.

The Conjunctive peculiar to the Portuguese Language is the Subjunctive conjugated with the Words *posto que*, *although*, or *supposing that*.

The Potential Mood in the Present Tense is *que ame eu*, that I may love; the Imperfect Tense is *amaria eu*, should or could I love; the Preterperfect Tense is *pude eu amar*, I might have loved; the Preterpluperfect Tense is *eu pudera ter amado*, I might, could, or would have loved; the Future Tense *amarey poderay amar*, I shall or will love, I shall or will be able to love.

The Permissive Mood in the Present Tense is *ame eu*, let me love; *doulbe que ame*, I grant I may love; the Imperfect Tense *amara*, I did love; *doulbe que amara*, I grant I did love; the Preterperfect Tense *amasse eu*, I have loved; *doulbe, que amasse eu*, I grant I have loved; and *mas que tenba amado*, although I have loved; the Preterpluperfect Tense *amara eu*, I had loved; *doulbe que amara*, I grant I had loved; *mas que tivera amado*, although I or he had loved; the Future Tense *doulbe que venba ou chegue eu a amar*, I grant that I may come to love.

It appears then that these Moods have no extraordinary Terminations belonging to them, but that they are only composed of Particles joined to the Verb in the Mood which those Particles require, and conjugated in the common Manner. I thought it therefore needless to swell and embroil the Conjugations with those Moods, since the Learner, when he comes to be acquainted with the Conjugations, and knows what Moods the several Conjunctions govern, he not only will find the above-mentioned Moods very easy to him, but also may make as many more if he pleases, giving them Names according to the Nature of the Conjunction joined with them, which may be done in any other Language; and therefore I cannot see in what Respect those Moods are peculiar only to the Portuguese.

CHAP. XIV.

Of the Terminations, Formations, and Equivocations of the three regular Conjugations.

THE first Conjugation, as we said above, is known by the Termination of the second Person of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, and the Present of the Infinitive; as, *amo*, *amas*, and in the Infinitive *amar*, to love; *ensino*, I teach; *ensinas*, thou teachest; *ensinar*, to teach; *louvo*, I praise; *louvas*, thou praisest; *louvar*, to praise.

The first Conjugation is so regular, that it keeps the same Characters through all its Moods and Tenses, changing only the last Letter into such Letters as the Tenses are terminated in, e. g.

Indic. Present. Imperf. Tense. Perfect Tense.

Amo,	amava,	améy,
<i>I love.</i>	<i>I did love.</i>	<i>I had loved.</i>
Chamo,	chamava,	chaméy,
<i>I call.</i>	<i>I did call.</i>	<i>I have called.</i>

Except the Verb *dou*, I give, which in the rest of the Tenses looseth its two last Letters *ou*, e. g.

Dou,	Dava,	Déy,
<i>I give.</i>	<i>I did give.</i>	<i>I have given.</i>

As also such Verbs as end in *co*.

Fico,	Ficava,	Fiquéy,
<i>I remain.</i>	<i>I did remain.</i>	<i>I have remained.</i>
Finco,	Fincava,	Finquéy,
<i>I fasten.</i>	<i>I did fasten.</i>	<i>I have fastened.</i>

84 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitana.*

Observe here, that in Verbs of the first Conjugation in the Present Tense, the first, second, and third Persons of the singular Number are often written and expressed with the very same Letters without any Difference, and their Signification is only to be guessed at by the Connexion of the Matter discoursed of.

Verbs of the first Conjugation equivocate three Ways with Nouns expressed in the same Form.

First, when the Verb and Noun are expressed with the same Letters in the Indicative Present and the first Person, as for Example,

Agouro, <i>I divine,</i>	and Agouro, <i>Divination,</i>
Abraco, <i>I embrace,</i>	and Abraco, <i>an Embrace,</i>
Canto, <i>I sing,</i>	and Canto, <i>a Song,</i>
Choro, <i>I cry,</i>	and Choro, <i>a Crying,</i>
Desprezo, <i>I despise,</i>	and Desprezo, <i>a Contempt,</i>
Dezejo, <i>I desire,</i>	and Dezejo, <i>a Desire,</i>
Enfino, <i>I teach,</i>	and Enfino, <i>a Teaching,</i>
Furto, <i>I steal,</i>	and Furto, <i>a Stealth,</i>
Livro, <i>I free,</i>	and Livro, <i>a Book,</i>
Rogo, <i>I desire,</i>	and Rogo, <i>a Desire,</i>
Soluço, <i>I sob or sigh,</i>	and Soluço, <i>a Sigh, &c.</i>

Secondly, Verbs equivalent to, and writ the same with Nouns Substantive, are very numerous in the second Person of the Indicative Present; as,

Brigas, <i>thou fightest,</i>	and Brigas, <i>Fights and Quarrels,</i>
Buscas, <i>thou seekest,</i>	and Buscas, <i>Seekings or Searches,</i>
Culpas, <i>thou blamest,</i>	and Culpas, <i>Faults, &c.</i>

Thirdly, also of the third Person; as,

Briga, <i>he fighteth,</i>	and Briga, <i>a Fight.</i>
Bulca, <i>he searcheth,</i>	and Bulca, <i>a Search.</i>
Culpa, <i>he blameth,</i>	and Culpa, <i>a Fault, &c.</i>

There are also Verbs of the first Conjugation, which, in the Indicative Present, equivocate with Nouns in all three Persons of the Singular, and the third Person Plural, *v. g. amo, I love; and a Master of a House or Family, amas, thou lovest, the Mistress (of a House) or Nurses of Children; ama, he loveth, Mistress or Nurse; barro, barras, barra; ameço, ameças, ameça, &c.* So in the third Person Plural, *arepellam, they pull out the Hairs, arepollam, a Pulling out or Cutting off the Hair; and so in many other Verbs, which Use must teach you, and I here omit, to avoid Tedioufness.*

The *second Conjugation* is of Verbs that in the second Person of the Indicative Present end in *es*, and in the Infinitive in *er, as,*

Leyo, <i>I read.</i>	les, <i>thou readest.</i>	ler, <i>to read.</i>
Conheço, <i>I know.</i>	conheces, <i>thou knowest.</i>	conhecér, <i>to know.</i>
Escrevo, <i>I write.</i>	escreves, <i>thou writest.</i>	escrever, <i>to write.</i>

Take Notice, that as there is very little Variety or Difference in the Terminations of Verbs of the first Conjugation thro' all it Moods and Tenses, so the said Difference is very considerable in the second and third Conjugations, their Verbs not keeping the same Letter as in the first, but either altogether losing or changing them. For Example, in the second Conjugation they do not only lose the last Letter *o* of the Present Indicative in the other Tenses, but also in the Imperfect and Preterperfect change the Syllable *éy* into *i, viz.*

Léyo, <i>I read.</i>	lia, <i>I did read.</i>	li, <i>I have read.</i>
Creyo, <i>I believe.</i>	cría, <i>I did believe.</i>	crí, <i>I have believed.</i>

The Verb *veja*, I see, loses the Letter *j* in most Tenses; as *via*, I did see; *ví* and *vira*, I have and had seen; except the Present of the Optative; as *oxala veja eu*, God grant that I may see; in the third Persons Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative, as *veja elle*, let him see, and *vejam elles*, let them see, and in the Present of the Conjunctive.

Some Verbs that have *c* before *o* in the Present Indicative, change it in the other Tenses in *d*; as *perco*, I loose; *perdia*, I did loose; *perdi*, I have lost; *perdera*, or *tinha perdido*, I had lost.

The third Conjugation is of Verbs that terminate the second Person Indicative Present in *es*, but the Infinitives end in *ir*, v. g. *ouço*, I hear; *ouves*, thou hearest; *ouvir*, to hear; *finjo*, I feign; *finges*, thou feignest; *fingir*, to feign; *abro*, I open; *abres*, thou openest; *abrir*, to open.

In the Verbs of the third Conjugation there is to be observed a strange Mutation, even in the Present Indicative; as in the Verb *ouço*, *ouves*, *ouve*, *ouvimos*, *ouvíys*, *ouvem*. The Verb *ouço* changes its *c* into a *v* in all the Tenses except those mentioned above in *veja*.

The Verb *meço*, I measure, changes its *c* into *d* in the rest of the Tenses; as *meço*, *medes*; in Imperfect *media*; in Perfect *medi*. So *peço*, I desire, pray, I beg; *pedes*, *pede*, and *pedia*, I did desire; *pedi*, I have desired.

Verbs that have a *j* before *o* in the Present Indicative, change the *j* into *g* in the other Tenses; as *finjo*, I feign; *finges*, *finge*; *fingia*, I did feign; *fingi*, I have feigned; *affijo*, I afflict; *affiges*, *afflige*; *affigia*, I did afflict; *affigi*, I have afflicted, &c. So in the Verb *dirijo*, I direct; *frijo*, I fry; *tinjo*, I dye; *cinjo*, I gird, &c.

There

There are other Verbs that do not only lose the last, or change the last Vowel, but also the last but one, or the Penultima, and that in two Kinds. The first change is in the Penultima into *e* in the rest of the Persons and Tenses, v. g. *firo*, I strike; *feres*, *feres*, *feria*, I did strike; *fort*, I have struck; *figo*, I follow, *segas*, *segus*, *segutu*, I did follow; *seguí*, I have followed; *minto*, I lye, *mentes*, *mentia*, I did lye; *mentí*, I have lyed. Thus *friso*, *fre- ges*; *cirno*, *cernes*, *sinto*, *sentes*; *perfigo*, *persegues*; *firvo*, *serve*, and the like; but they keep the Letter *i* in the third Persons Singular and Plural Present of the Imperative; as *figa* *elle*, *figam* *elles*, let him follow, let them follow; and in the Present Optative in all the Persons; as, *oxala* *figa* *eu*, *figas*, *figa*, &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive; as *como* *eu* *figo*, when I follow.

The second Kind are such Verbs as have an *u* in the Penultima, and in all the other Tenses and Persons change it into *o*, v. g. *bulo*, I meddle with; *boles*, *bole*; *bolia*, I did meddle with; *bolir*, to meddle with; *dormo*, I sleep, *dormes*, *dorme*; *dormia*, *dormir*; *engulo*, I swallow, *engoles*, *engole*; *engolia*, *engolir*; *sumo*, I sum, *somes*, *some*; *somia*, *somir*; *cubro*, I cover, *cobres*, *cobre*; *cobria*, *cobrir*; *subo*, I come, or go up, *sobes*, *sobe*; *sobia*, *sobir*; *tusso*, I cough, *tosses*, *tosse*, *tossia*, *tossir*. And thus they are easily distinguish'd from such as never lose the Vowel *u*, nor change it into *o*; as *concluo*, *conclues*, *concluir*; *grunbo*, *grunbes*, *grunbir*; *zuno*, *zunos*, *zunir*. But those Verbs that change *u* into *o*, do not admit of any Change in the third Person Singular and Plural of the Present Imperative; as *bula* *ou* *suba* *elle*, *bulam* *ou* *subam* *elles*, let him or them meddle or come up; So in all Persons of the Present Optative, as *oxala* *bula*, *suba* *eu*, *bulas*, *subas* *tu*, God grant

that I or thou may or mayest meddle or come up, &c. Also in the first Persons of the Conjunctive, as *como subo*, when I go up.

The Participle of the Pieterperfect Tense of the Verb Passive of the second and third Conjugation, are also subject to some Variation; for altho' they commonly end in *ido*, as *lido*, *ido*, *vendido*, *corrido*, yet several end in *to*, as *feyto*, made or done, from the Verb *faca*, I make or do; *visto*, seen, from *veja*, I see; *toro*, torn, from *rompo*; *bento*, blessed, from *benzo*, I bless; *posto*, put, from *ponho*; *cheyo*, full, from *encho*; *elito*, chosen, from *elego*; *dito*, said, from *digo*; *absolto*, absolved, from *absolvo*; *resoluto*, resolv'd, from *resolvo*; *escrito*, written, from *escrevo*. All these are of the second Conjugation. Of the third Conjugation are the following; as *frito*, fryed, from *frigor*; *sulto*, risen, from *surgir*; *aberto*, open'd, from *abrir*; *coberto*, cover'd, from *cobrir*; *correto*, corrected, from *corrigir*. The Verb *venho* and its Compounds end their Participle in *indo*; as *vindo*, come.

But it is remarkable, that but few Verbs of the second and third Conjugation equivocate with Nouns; of the second Conjugation are *corro*, I run; *como*, I eat; *sorvo*, I swallow; and *corro*, a Running, *como*, as if, *sorvo*, a Soup: And of the third *sayo*, I go out; *rio*, I laugh, and *saya*, a Petticoat, and *rio*, a River, which, though they equivocate in the first Person of the Indicative Mood Present, and Singular Number, with Nouns so express'd, they are altogether different in other Persons.

CHAP. XV.

Of the Irregular Verbs, and their Formation.

IT has been already observed, that few or no Verbs of the first Conjugation are reputed irregular; but of the second and third there are found several. Of the second the Verb *sou, ser*, is accounted one, the second Present Person Indicative ending in *es*. So likewise are the Verbs *ey* and *tenbo*, with all its Compounds, as *atenbo, contenbo, detenbo, mantenbo, retenbo, sostenbo*, and, the following Verbs.

<i>Ind. Pr.</i>	<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Perf.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>
Sey,	fabia,	soube,	saber, to know.
Posso,	podia,	pude,	poder, to be able.
Quero,	queira,	quize,	querer, to desire, or will love.
Faço,	fazia,	fiz,	fazer, to do, make.
Digo,	dizia,	dice,	dizer, to say.
Trago,	trazia,	trouxe,	trazer, to bring.

Likewise the Defective Verb

	<i>Preterp.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>
Agradame,	<i>is pleaseth me;</i>	agradoume, agradar,
agradate,	agradalhe.	

As also the Defective Verb

soer, soe, & soem, soia, soias, soia, as soe fazer, be is accusom'd to do.

Irregular Verbs belonging to the third Conjugation:

<i>Ind. Pres.</i>	<i>Imperf.</i>	<i>Perf.</i>	<i>Infin.</i>
Cayo,	cahia,	cahi,	cahir, to fall.
Sayo,	sahia,	sahi,	sahir, to go out.
Posso,	possuya,	possuy,	possuir, to possess.
Venho,	vinha,	vim,	vir, to come.

As

As also its Compounds, *Avenbo, antevenbo, convenbo, intervenbo*, and the Impersonal *convém*, it behoveth; Preterperfect *convêyo*; Infinitive *convir*; it wants a Participle Perfect.

Hitherto is also referr'd the Verb *von*, which, as it is a very common Word, and one of the most irregular, we will conjugate it here at large.

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu von, I go.
	{	Tu vas, thou goest.
	{	Elle vay, he goeth.
Plur.	{	Nós vamos, we go.
	{	Vós vays, ye go.
	{	Elles vam, they go.

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu hia, I went or did go.
	{	Tu hias, thou wentest or didst go.
	{	Elle hia, he went or did go.
Plur.	{	Nós híamos, we went or did go.
	{	Vós híeys, ye went or did go.
	{	Elles híam, they went or did go.

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu fuy, I have gone or have been.
	{	Tu foste, thou hast gone or hast been.
	{	Elle foy, he has gone or hath been.
Plur.	{	Nós fomos, we have gone or have been.
	{	Vós fostes, ye have gone or have been.
	{	Elles foram, they have gone or have been.

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Eu tenho ido, I have gone or have been.
	{	Tu tens ido, thou hast gone or hast been.
	{	Elle tem ido, he hath gone or hath been.

Plur.

Plur. { Nós temos ido, *we have gone or have been.*
 Vós tendes ido, *ye have gone or have been.*
 Elles tem ido, *they have gone or have been.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing. { Eu * tinha ido, *I had gone or had been.*
 Tu tinhas ido, *thou hadst gone or hadst been.*
 Elle tinha ido, *he had gone or had been.*

Plur. { Nós tínhamos ido, *we had gone or had been.*
 Vós tínheys ido, *ye had gone or had been.*
 Elles tinham ido, *they had gone or had been.*

First Future Tense.

Sing. { Eu irey, *I shall or will go.*
 Tu iras, *thou shalt or wilt go.*
 Elle irá, *he shall or will go.*

Plur. { Nós irémos, *we shall or will go.*
 Vós iréys, *ye shall or will go.*
 Elles iram, *they shall or will go.*

Second Future Tense.

Sing. { Ja entam eu teréy ido, *I shall then have gone or been.*

Ja entam tu terás ido, *thou shalt then have gone or been.*

Ja entam elle terá ido, *he shall then have gone or been.*

Plur. { Ja entam nós terémos ido, *we shall then have gone or been.*

Ja entam vós teréys ido, *ye shall then have gone or been.*

Ja entam elles terám ido, *they shall then have gone or been.*

* Some conjugate the Pluperfect *fora, forat, fora, foramos, foreys, foram.*

Imperative

Imperative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*
 Va tu, go thou.
 Va elle, let him go.
- Plur.* { Vamos nós, let us go.
 ide vós, go ye.
 Vayam elles, let them go.

Future Tense.

- Sing.* { *Has no first Person.*
 Irás tu, thou shalt go.
 Irá elle, he shall go.
- Plur.* { Irémos nós, we shall go.
 Iréys vós, ye shall go.
 Irám elles, they shall go.

Optative Mood. *Present Tense.*

- Sing.* { Oxala vaya eu, would to God I may go.
 Oxala vayas tu, would to God thou mayest go.
 Oxala vaya elle, would to God he may go.
- Plur.* { Oxala vayamos nós, would to God we may go.
 Oxala váyais vós, would to God ye may go.
 Oxala váyam elles, would to God they may go.

Imperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Oxala fora & fosse eu, would I might go.
 Oxala foras & fôsses tu, would thou mightest go.
 Oxala fora & fosse elle, would he might go.
- Plur.* { Oxala foramos & fôssemos nós, would we might go.
 Oxala fôreys & fôsseys vós, would ye might go.
 Oxala foram & fôssem elles, would they might go.

The

The Uncertain Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu iria, I might or would go.
	{	Tu irias, thou mightest or wouldst go.
	{	Elle iria, he might or would go.
Plur.	{	Nós iríamos, we might or would go.
	{	Vós iríeis, ye might or would go.
	{	Elles iríam, they might or would go.

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Quéryra Deos que eu tenha ido, God grant that I may have gone or been.
	{	Quéryra Deos que tu tenhas ido, God grant that thou mayest have gone or been.
	{	Quéryra Deos que elle tenha ido, God grant that he may have gone or been.
Plur.	{	Quéryra Deos que nós ténhamos ido, God grant that we may have gone or been.
	{	Quéryra Deos que vós ténhays ido, God grant that ye may have gone or been.
	{	Quéryra Deos que elles ténham ido, God grant that they may have gone or been.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Provéra Deos que eu tivéra, ou tivesse ido, would to God I had gone or been.
	{	Provéra Deos que tu tivéras, ou tivesses ido, would to God that thou hadst gone or been.
	{	Provéra Deos que elle tivéra, ou tivesse ido, would to God that he had gone or been.
Plur.	{	Provéra Deos que nós tivéramos, ou tivéssemos ido, would to God that we had gone or been.
	{	Provéra Deos que vós tivéreys, ou tivésseys ido, would to God that ye had gone or been.
	{	Provéra Deos que elles tivéram, ou tivéssem ido, would to God that they had gone or been.

First Future Tense.

- Sing. { Quando ou como eu for, when or as I shall have gone or been.
 Quando ou como tu fores, when or as thou shalt have gone or been.
 Quando ou como elle for, when or as he shall have gone or been.
- Plur. { Quando ou como nós formos, when or as we shall have gone or been.
 Quando ou como vós fordes, when or as ye shall have gone or been.
 Quando ou como elles forem, when or as they shall have gone or been.

Second Future Tense.

- Sing. { Como ou quando eu tiver ido, when or as I shall go or shall have gone or been.
 Como ou quando tu tiveres ido, when or as thou shalt go or shalt have gone or been.
 Como ou quando elle tiver ido, when or as he shall go or shall have gone or been.
- Plur. { Como ou quando nós tivermos ido, when or as we shall go or shall have gone or been.
 Como ou quando vós tiverdes ido, when or as ye shall go or shall have gone or been.
 Como ou quando elles tiverem ido, when or as they shall go or shall have gone or been.

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Ir, to go.

Preterperfect Tense.

Tér ido, to have gone.

Future Tense.

Tér de ir, *to go hereafter (to have, or to be to go.)*

Gerund.

hindo, *going.*

Participle Present.

O que va, *he (or one) that goes.*

Participle Preterperfect.

ido, *gone.*

Participle Future.

O que tem de ir, *he (or one) that is to go.*

We said above that there are but three Conjugations and Terminations of Verbs, in *er*, *er*, and *ir*; which Rule is so far general, that it has but one Exception; to wit, the Verb *ponho*, in the Infinitive *pôr*, with its fourteen Compounds, *anteponho*, *postponho*, *deponho*, *componho*, *disponho*, *exponho*, *imponho*, *interponho*, *opponho*, *proponho*, *reponho*, *supponho*, *trasponho*: but as it is not worth while to make a fourth Conjugation for the Sake of one Verb, we let it pass among the Irregulars; and because it is very frequently used, we here conjugate it at Length.

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu ponho, <i>I put.</i>
	{	Tu poens, <i>thou puttest.</i>
	{	Elle poem, <i>he puts.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós pónhamos, <i>we put.</i>
	{	Vós pónheys, <i>ye put.</i>
	{	Elles poem, <i>they put.</i>

Imperfect

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu punha, <i>I did put.</i>
	{	Tu punhas, <i>thou didst put.</i>
	{	Elle punha, <i>he did put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós púnhamos, <i>we did put.</i>
	{	Vós púnheys, <i>ye did put.</i>
	{	Elles púnham, <i>they did put.</i>

First Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu puz, <i>I put.</i>
	{	Tu puzéste, <i>thou puttest.</i>
	{	Elle poz, <i>he put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós puzémos, <i>we put.</i>
	{	Vós puzéstes, <i>ye put.</i>
	{	Elles puzéram, <i>they put.</i>

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu tenho posto, <i>I have put.</i>
	{	Tu tens posto, <i>thou hast put.</i>
	{	Elle tem posto, <i>he hath put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós temos posto, <i>we have put.</i>
	{	Vós tendes posto, <i>ye have put.</i>
	{	Elles tem posto, <i>they have put.</i>

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Eu * tinha posto, <i>I had put.</i>
	{	Tu tinhas posto, <i>thou hadst put.</i>
	{	Elle tinha posto, <i>he had put.</i>
Plur.	{	Nós tínhamos posto, <i>we had put.</i>
	{	Vós tínheys posto, <i>ye had put.</i>
	{	Elles tinham posto, <i>they had put.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Eu póréy, <i>I shall or will put.</i>
	{	Tu porás, <i>thou shalt or wilt put.</i>
	{	Elle porá, <i>he shall or will put.</i>

* Some conjugate the Preterpluperfect *puzéra, puzéram, puzérea; puzéramos, puzérey, puzéram.*

Plur.

Plur. { Nós porémós, *we shall or will put.*
Vós poréys, *ye shall or will put.*
Elles porám, *they shall or will put.*

Second Future.

Sing. { Eu terey posto, *I shall have put.*
Tu teras posto, *thou shalt have put.*
Elle terá posto, *he shall have put.*

Plur. { Nós terémós posto, *we shall have put.*
Vós teréys posto, *ye shall have put.*
Elles terám posto, *they shall have put.*

Imperative Mood. First Tense.

Sing. { Has no first Person.
Põem tu, *put thou.*
Pónha elle, *let him put.*

Plur. { Ponhâmos nós, *let us put.*
Ponde vós, *put ye.*
Pónhâm elles, *let them put.*

Second Tense.

Sing. { Has no first Person.
Porás tú, *thou shalt put.*
Porá elle, *he shall put.*

Plur. { Poremos nós, *we shall put.*
Poreys vós, *ye shall put.*
Poram elles, *they shall put.*

Optative and Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

Sing. { Oxala ponha eu, *would to God that I may put.*
Oxala ponhas tu, *would to God that thou mayest put.*
Oxala ponha elle, *would to God that he may put.*

H

Plur.

- Plur. { Oxala ponhâmos nós, *would to God that we may put.*
 Oxala pónhays vós, *would to God that ye may put.*
 Oxala ponham elles, *would to God that they may put.*

Imperfect Tenses

- Sing. { Oxala puzera ou puzesse eu, *would to God I did put.*
 Oxala puzéras ou puzesses tu, *would to God thou didst put.*
 Oxala puzera ou puzesse elle, *would to God he did put.*
- Plur. { Oxala puzéramos ou puzéssemos nós, *would to God we did put.*
 Oxala puzéreis ou puzésseis vós, *would to God ye did put.*
 Oxala puzeram ou puzessem elles, *would to God they did put.*

Preterperfect Tense:

- Sing. { Quéyra Deos que tenha eu posto, *God grant I have or may have put.*
 Quéyra Deos que tenhas tu posto, *God grant thou hast or mayest have put.*
 Quéyra Deos que tenha elle posto, *God grant he has or may have put.*
- Plur. { Quéyra Deos que ténhamos nós posto, *God grant we have or may have put.*
 Quéyra Deos que ténhays vós posto, *God grant ye have or may have put.*
 Quéyra Deos que ténham elles posto, *God grant they have or may have put.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse eu posto,
would to God I had put.
Prouvéra Deos que tiveras ou tivessees tu posto,
would to God thou hadst put.
Prouvéra Deos que tivera ou tivesse elle posto,
would to God he had put.
- Plur.* { Prouvéra Deos que tivéramos ou tivéssemos,
nós posto, would to God we had put.
Prouvéra Deos que tivéreis, ou tivésseis vós
posto, would to God ye had put.
Prouvéra Deos que tivéram, ou tivéssem elles
posto, would to God they had put.

First Future Tense.

- Sing.* { Quando eu puzer, when I shall put.
Quando tu puzeres, when thou shalt put.
Quando elle puzer, when he shall put.
- Plur.* { Quando nós puzermos, when we shall put.
Quando vós puzerdes, when ye shall put.
Quando elles puzerem, when they shall put.

Second Future Tense.

- Sing.* { Quando eu tiver posto, when I shall have
put.
Quando tu tiveres posto, when thou shalt have
put.
Quando elle tiver posto, when he shall have
put.
- Plur.* { Quando nós tivérmos posto, when we shall
have put.
Quando vós tiverdes posto, when ye shall
have put.
Quando elles tiverem posto, when they shall
have put.

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Pôr, to put.

Preterperfect Tense.

Ter posto, to have put.

Future Tense.

Ter de pôr, to (be to put) put hereafter.

Gerund.

Pondo, in putting.

Participle Present.

O que poem, one (be) that puts.

Participle Preterperfect.

Posto, put.

Participle Future.

O que tem de pôr, one (be) that is to put.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

Reciprocal Verbs are called those that have in all their Moods, Tenses, Numbers, and Persons, joined to them the Pronouns *me, te, se, nós, vós, se, me, thee, him or herself, us, you, and themselves*; as *eu me queixo*, I complain; *tu te queixavas*, thou didst complain; *elle se queixou*, he complained; *nós nós tínhamos queixado*, we did complain; *vós vós queixareys*, you will complain; *elles se quexáram*, they shall or will complain.

Of

Of the same Kind are the Verbs *irarse* and *agastarse*, to grow angry; *deitar-se*, to lie down; *desconfiar-se*, to mistrust; *lembrarse*, to remember; *arrepender-se*, to repent; *acentarse*, to sit down, &c. which are also reciprocal in the *Italian*, *French*, and *Spanish* Languages, except *irarse*, to grow angry, which is in the *Italian* *andar in calera*, and *acentarse*, in *Italian* *sedere*.

The Pronoun stands before these Verbs in the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods, but in the Imperative and Infinitive behind them.

As these Verbs do not differ from the others in their Conjugations, we shall only set down here one Example to shew how they are handled.

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

- Sing.* { Eu me acento, I sit down.
 Tu te acentas, thou sittest down.
 Elle se acenta, he sits down.
Plur. { Nós nós acentamos, we sit down;
 Vós vós acentáys, ye sit down.
 Elles se acéntam, they sit down.

Imperfect Tense.

- Sing.* { Eu me acentava, I did sit down.
 Tu te acentavas, thou didst sit down.
 Elle se acentava, he did sit down.
Plur. { Nós nós acentavamos, we did sit down.
 Vós vós acentáveys, ye did sit down.
 Elles se acentávam, they did sit down.

First Preterperfect Tense.

Eu me acentéy, I sat down.

Second Preterperfect Tense.

Eu me tenho acentado, I have sat down.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Eu me acentara ou tinha acentado, *I had sat down.*

First Future.

Eu me acentarey, *I will sit down.*

Second Future.

Ja entam eu me terey acentado, *I shall then have sat down.*

Imperative Mood. First Tense.

Has no first Person.

Sing. { Acentate, *fit thou down.*
Acéntese elle, *let him sit down.*

Plur. { Acentémonos nós, *let us sit down.*
Acentávyos vós, *fit ye down.*
Acéntemse elles, *let them sit down.*

Second Tense.

Sing. { *Has no first Person.*

Acentaraste tu, *thou shalt sit down.*
Acentarase elle, *he shall sit down.*

Plur. { Acentarémos nós, *we shall sit down.*
Acentaréys vós, *ye shall sit down.*
Acentarámse elles, *they shall sit down.*

Optative or Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

Oxala eu me acente, *would I may sit down.*

Imperfect Tense.

Oxala eu me acentara ou assentasse, *would I might sit down.*

Uncertain Tense.

Eu me acentaria, *I might or could sit down.*

Preterperfect

Preterperfect Tense.

Queyra Deos eu me tenha acentado, *please God I may have sat down.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Praça a Deos eu me tivera ou tivesse acentado, *please God or wish to God I had sat down.*

First Future Tense.

Como ou quando eu me acentar, *as or when I shall sit down.*

Second Future Tense.

Quando eu me tiver acentado, *when I shall have sat down.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Acentarse, *to sit down.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Terse acentado, *to have sat down.*

Gerund.

Acentadose, ou em acentar-se, *in sitting down.*

Participle Present.

O que se acenta, *he (or one) that sits down.*

Participle Preterperfect.

Acentado, *sat down.*

Participle Future.

O que ha ou tem de acentar-se, *one (or he) that is to sit down.*

••• Observe, that all Verbs Active may be made reciprocal.

As for Example, you may say,

Sing. { Eu me amo, *I love myself.*
 Tu te amas, *thou lovest thyself.*
 Elle se ama, *he loveth himself.*

Plur. { Nós nós amamos, *we love ourselves.*
 Vós vós amays, *ye love yourselves.*
 Elles se amam, *they love themselves.*

And so in all the other Tenses.

Of the Impersonal Verbs.

There are three Sorts of Impersonal Verbs that have but the third Person in Singular.

The first are those that are properly impersonal of themselves, and require no Pronoun with 'em; as,

He mister, *it is necessary.*

Chove, *it rains.*

Trovoa, *it thunders.*

Pedrisca, *it hails.*

Neva, *it snows.*

The second come from the Verbs Active, and are accompanied by the Particle *se*, which renders them impersonal, and gives them a Passive Signification, as *se diz*, it is said; *se cré*, it is believed; *se escreve*, it is wrote, which answers to the French Expression, *on dit, on croit, on écrit*: This Way of expressing themselves is very common to the Portuguese and Spaniards.

The third Sort resemble the Reciprocal Verbs, and are conjugated with the Pronouns, *me, te, se, lhe, nós, vós, se*, and *lhes*. Such are *a mim me sucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me basta*, it is enough for me; *a mim me parece*, it seems to me.

Note, These are also often used like those of the first Order.

* * * The

* The Verb *da*, he or it gives, is also often used as an Impersonal of this Class; for when they would say, I do not fancy this, or this doth not please me, they express it, *nam se me da disto*, or he doth not fancy it, *nam se lbe da disto*.

The first is conjugated through all or most of the Tenses and Moods, but only in the third Person, and can never have any Person joined to it; as,

Indic. Pres. Trovoa, it thunders.

Imperfect. Trovoava, it did thunder.

Preterperfect. Trovoou, it has thundered.

The Word *be mister*, it is necessary, is conjugated by changing the Verb *ey*, or third Person *be*, through all the Tenses and Moods, the Word *mister* remaining inflexible; as,

Indic. Pres. He mister, it is necessary.

Imperfect. Avia mister, it was necessary.

Preterperfect. Ouve mister, it has been necessary.

The second Sort, which are accompanied by the Particle *se*, are also sometimes expressed by the third Person in Plural, without the Pronoun *se*; as *dizem*, *escrevem*, *lém*, they say, they write, they read, which is the same Sense as it is said, it is wrote, it is read; as *se diz que este homem he muito rico*, it is said that this Man is very rich; and *dizem que este homem he muito rico*, they say that this Man is very rich.

The third Sort of the Impersonal Verbs are those which are conjugated with the Pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, *lbe*, *nás*, *vós*, *se*, *lbes*. Example,

Indicative

Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

Sing. { A mim me parece, it seems to me.

A ti te parece, it seems to thee.

A elle lhe parece, it seems to him.

Plur. { A nós nós parece, it seems to us.

A vós vós parece, it seems to you.

A elles lhes parece, it seems to them.

Imperfect Tense.

A mim me parecia, it did seem to me.

First Preterperfect Tense.

A mim me pareceo, it seemed to me.

Second Preterperfect Tense.

A mim me ha parecido, it has seemed to me.

Preterpluperfect Tense.

A mim me avia parecido, it had seemed to me.

First Future.

A mim me parecerá, it will seem to me.

Second Future.

A mim me avera parecido, it will have seemed to me.

Optative Mood. Present Tense.

Oxala a mim me pareça, would it may seem to me.

Imperfect Tense.

Oxala a mim me parecera ou parecesse, would it might seem to me.

Uncertain Tense.

A mim me pareceria, it would, could, or might seem to me.

Preterperfect

Preterperfect Tense.

Oxala a mim me aja parecido, *would it may have seemed to me.*

Preterpluperfect Tense.

Oxala ou prouvera a Deos a mim me ouvera ou ouvesse parecido, *would or please God it had seemed to me.*

First Future.

Quando ou como a mim me parecer, *when or as to me it shall seem.*

Second Future.

Como ou quando a mim me ouvera parecido, *as or when to me it shall have seemed.*

Infinitive Mood. Present Tense.

Parecer, *to seem.*

Participle Present.

Parecido, *seemed, &c.*

Verbs of this Order are also, *a mim me sucede*, it happens to me; *a mim me discontenta*, it displeases me; *a mim me agrada*, and *a mim me contenta*, it pleases me; *a mim me pesa*, I am sorry; and many others, which the Reader, by the Help of the above Observations, will easily discover.

The Verb *ba*, he, she, or it has, in the third Person Singular of the Indicative Present, serves likewise often for an impersonal Verb, and is joined with Nouns both in the Singular and Plural Number, in the same Manner as the French use their *il y a*; and as they say, *il y a un homme*, and *il y a plusieurs hommes*, so the Portuguese say likewise, *ba hum homem*, and *ba muitos homens*, there

is one Man, and there are many Men; and *avera hum homem, & avera muitos homens*, there will be one Man, and there will be many Men; which Way of expressing themselves is also usual in the Spanish Language.

• • Observe, that the Portuguese, both for Elegancy of Sound, and Conciseness of Expression, join to their Verbs the following Particles, *me, te, se, lbó, me, thee, him; nós, vós, lbes, us, you, them*: Also *mó, tó, lba*, contracted from *me o, te o, lbe o*, it to me, it to thee, it to him or her; also *má, tá, lbá*, her to me, her to thee, her to him; and in Plural *mós, tós, lbas, más, tá, lhas*, them to me, them to thee, them to them.

Also *nólo, vólo*, from *nós o, vós o*, it to us, it to you, and *nóla, vóla; nolos, vólos; nolas, vólas*, her to us, her to you, them to us, them to you.

The Articles *o, a, os, as*, are likewise joined to the End of Verbs, as in the Gerund *sendoo, sendoa*, he or it being, she being; and in Plural *sendoos, sendoas*, they being; *amandoo, amandoa; lendoo, lendoa; amandoos, amandoas; lendoos, lendoas*, &c. But when the Articles *o, a*, are joined to a Verb in the Infinitive Present, the *r* is changed into a *ll*; as *amallo, amalla*, to love him, it, or her; *dallo, dalla*, &c.

The following Example may serve to illustrate these Difficulties.

A presente he para referir-lhe, que tenho comprado o relógio de prata, por 8 libras Esterlinas. Eu vi dous outros d'ouro, bem condicionados, mas não posso procurarlhos pello preço que aponta; sem embargo disso offereçemos por 20 Guineas cada hum, &c. The Present is to advise you, that I have bought the

Elle não quer dárnolo, dárulo, dárnola, dárula,
dárnolos, dárulos, dárulas, por esse dinbeiro, he will
not give it us, give it you, give them to us, give
them to you, for that Money. 2. 1mo 2.

Elle não quer dárnolo, dárvoelo, dárnola, dárvola,
dárnolos, dárvoelos, dárvolas, por esse dinbeiro, he will
not give it us, give it you, give them to us, give
them to you, for that Money. 2. 1502.

SYNTAX.

Some General Remarks.

THE Word *Syntax* comes from the Greek *συτάξω*, I put in order, and therefore whatever Observations or Rules contribute towards a just Use and Disposition of all the Parts of Speech, belong properly under this Head.

The Construction or Composition of Words into Sentences, is divided into Common and Figurative. The Common is that which we use in common Discourse. By conversing with Men who speak a Language correctly, we may learn to speak Grammatically true, and arrive to such a Nicety, that the Ear shall be shocked to hear any one speak against the Rules of Grammar, though we cannot give any Reason for our Dislike: For Example, if one was to say *many People has been*, &c. or *Yesterday will be a fine Day*, there is hardly a Peasant who would not find fault with it, though he were not able to shew the Solecism. The Figurative deviates somewhat from the common Way of expressing one's Thoughts, and is used by Authors for Conciseness or Elegancy.

Three Things are chiefly to be observed in the *Syntax*; the first, that the Adjective, Pronoun, and Participle are never applied in Speech without a Noun Substantive expressed or understood, with which it must agree in Gender, Number, and Case. Thus when the Noun Substantive is of the Masculine Gender, and in Nominative Singular,

Singular, the Noun Adjective and Pronoun must be joined to it in the same Order, as *este homem he muy caritativo*, this Man is very charitable: and in Plural, *estes homens sam muy caritativos*: Example of the Feminine, *essa moça he fermosa*, that young Woman is handsome; *essas moças sam fermosas*, those young Women are handsome.

The second, that the Verb may be placed in the due Tense, and always fitted in Person and Number to the Nominative or Person it speaks of; as *estes homens*, these Men, the Pronoun standing in Plural, and being of the third Person; the Verb to be joined with it must also be of the third Person Plural; and therefore you are to say, *estes homens sam*, these Men they are; and not *estes homens soys*, these Men ye are, or *estes homens he*, these Men is.

Thirdly, the Relative ought always to correspond with the Antecedent Noun in Gender and Number, as *o livro, no qual tenho lido*, the Book in which I have read; and not *o livro na qual*, &c. *livro* the Noun to which *no qual* refers being Masculine. As *ciudades as quays sam destruidas*, the Cities which are destroyed; and not *as cidades os quays*, nor *ciudades a qual*; *ciudades* being of the Feminine Gender and in Plural Number, with which the Relative *as quays* ought to agree.

These three are the fundamental Rules of the Syntax, which being well fixed in the Learner's Mind, the rest will seem very easy to him.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Genders.

THE Genders of all Nouns in this Language are reputed only to be two, as Masculine and Feminine, which are known by the Articles *o* & *a*, *dó* & *dá*. There is also a Neuter Gender used

used sometimes in the Article *o*, and the Pronouns *esse* and *aquillo*, as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar; and some Words partaking both of the Masculine and Feminine Gender are said to be of the Common Gender.

The Particles *o* and *ao*, or *as* and *aos*, preceding any Noun, it is a certain Sign of its being of the Masculine Gender; and *a*, *á*, & *as* & *ás* denote the Feminine.

Observe, the Letter *a* is sometimes found before a Masculine, as *convem a Pedro*, it becometh Peter; *elle matou a seu irmão*, he has killed his Brother; of which see the Article Indefinite.

The following Rules may serve to distinguish the Genders of the Nouns Substantive by their Signification.

It is a general Rule, though not without Exceptions, that those which end in *e* are of the Masculine, and those in *a* of the Feminine Gender.

All proper Names of Men are of the Masculine Gender; also all Names of Angels, all the Heathen Gods, the Names of the Winds; all Titles, as *Emperador*, *Rey*, *Principe*, &c. the Names of Trades, as *alfayate*, a Taylor; *capateyro*, a Shoemaker; *taverneyro*, a Vintner, or Tavern-keeper; all the Names of the Months. Of the Feminine Gender are all Women's Names, as *Maria*, *Anna*, *Catherina*, &c. all Heathen Goddesses; also the Names of Nymphs, and Names of Dignity, as *Emperatriz*, and whatsoever other Nouns concern the Feminine Sex. All the Names of Islands, Provinces, Cities, Villages, Ships, &c. ending in *a* are of the Feminine Gender; also all Names of Fruits, Trees, and Flowers, terminating in *a*. Those that are not comprehended in these Rules, are best learnt from Observation; too many Rules commonly serving rather to embroil than instruct a Beginner.

Observations

Observations how to know the Genders of Nouns
Substantive by their Terminations.

1. Nouns ending in *a* or *aa* are Feminine; whether Proper or Common, as *Maria*, *Roma*, *França*, &c. *Poesia*, *Villa*, *Musica*, *Romaã*, *Magaã*, *Avellaa*, *Mary*, *Rome*, *France*, *Poetry*, a *Town*, *Music*, a *Pomegranate*, an *Apple*, a *Small-nut*. Except such Names as denote a manly Office; as *mariola*, a *Porter*, *mestrescola*, a *School-master*, and *Surnames*, and the Word *dia*, a *Day*; also several Words derived from the *Greek* and *Latin*, as *clima*, *fantasma*, *poema*, *epigramma*, *enigma*, *diadema*, *dilemma*, *estratagema*, *cometa*, *planeta*, which are all of the *Masculine Gender*. The Word *cada*, every, is adapted to both *Genders*; as *cada homem*, *cada mulher*, every *Man*, every *Woman*.

2. Nouns ending in *e* are *Masculine*, as the *Proper*, *Dunquerque*, *Albuquerque*; *Common*, as *barrete*, a *Cap*; *sinete*, a *Seal*; *capote*, a *Cloak*; *vinagre*, *Vinegar*; *azeite*, *Oil*, &c. But this Rule has the following *Exceptions*; first, all *Names of Virtues*, *Vices*, *Faculties* and *Passions of the Mind* are of the *Feminine Gender*, as *virtude*, *santidade*, *bondade*, *fé*, *Virtue*, *Holiness*, *Goodness*, *Faith*; *inimizade*, *veiosidade*, *vaidade*, *menenice*, *morosidade*, *borachisse*, *vontade*, &c. *Enmity*, *Idleness*, *Vanity*, *Childishness*, *Moroseness*, *Drunkennes*, *Will*, &c. Secondly, the following are also of the *Feminine Kind*; as *idade*, *Age*; *velhice*, *old Age*; *rusticidade*, *Rusticity*; *capacidade*, *Capacity*; *felicidade*, *Felicity*; *sorte*, *Fortune*; *morte*, *Death*; *arte*, *Art*; *parte*, *Part*; *arvore*, a *Tree*; *ave*, a *Bird*; *carne*, *Flesh*; *fertilidade*, *Fertility*; *fede*, *Thirst*; *sebe*, a *Hedge*; *couve*, *Cabbage*; *erdade*, *Inheritance*; *trinidade*, *Trinity*; *chaminé*, *Chimney*; *parede*, a *Wall*; *saúde*, *Health*; *rede*, a *Net*; *maré*,

the Tide; *chave*, a Key; *trempe*, a Trivet; *lebre*, a Hare; *febre*, Fever; *serpente*, a Serpent; *galé*, a Galley.

3. All Words ending in *i* are Masculine; as *nebrí*, a Hawk; *biberiquí*, a Gimblet, &c.

4. Words ending in *o* are Masculine; except some few, as *náo*, a Ship; *filho*, a thin Cake; a Pancake; *cyro*, an Eel; *mó*, a Mill, &c.

5. All Words ending in *u* are Masculine; as *bambú*, *perú*, *mú*, *grou*, a Cane, a Turkey, a Mule, a Crane, &c.

6. All Words ending in *al*, *el*, *il*, *ol*, *ul*, are Masculine.

7. All Words ending in *am* are Masculine; as *pam*, *pelam*, *roupam*, *trovam*, &c. except *nam* and *coram*, and some Words derived from the Latin, denoting an Action, viz. *perseçam*, *exaggeraçam*, *compesçam*, *declaraçam*, *recreaçam*, &c.

8. Words in *em* are Masculine; as *pétem*, *bo-dém*, *armazem*, *homem*, &c. except *órdem*, *ádem*, *virgem*; and Words ending in *agem*, which are Feminine, as *ervagem*, *imagem*, *viagem*, &c.

Note, The Word *Salvagem* is of both Genders; thus you say, *varám salvagem*, and *mulher salvagem*, a wild Man, a wild Woman.

9. All Words ending in *im*, *om*, *um*, are Masculine, as *fin*, *espadim*, *tom*, *som*, *attum*, *dobrum*, &c.

10. Words in *ar*, *er*, *ir*, *or*, *ur*, are Masculine; as *nézar*, *pelegár*, *alvanér*, *prazer*, *opbir*, *mátyr*, *agór*, *caçadór*, *casur*; except *colbér*, *mulber*, *flor*, *dor*, *cor*.

11. All Words ending in *as* are Feminine, e. g. *lindas*, a Litter; *cálcas*, Breeches; *álcas*, a Fee or Advance in Rent; *cócegas*, Tickling, &c. all which Words are writ in the Plural, but have a singular Signification.

12. All

12. All Words in *us, is, os, us*, whether Singular or Plural, are Masculine; v. g. *alféres, dâ- tiles, gis, calções, óculos*, an Ensign, Dates, Chalk, Breeches, Spectacles, &c.

13. Words in *az, ez, iz, oz, uz*, are Masculine, except *pau, touque, az, vez, fez, vez, haboz, per- diz, codorniz, raiz, matrâz, noz, foz, voz, luz, cruz*, which are Feminine; the Word *aprendiz*, an Apprentice, is common to both Genders.

Note, Words ending in *i* are more or less as many Masculines as Feminines; as *rey, pay, bôy*, Mas- culine, and *mây, léy, gréy*, &c. Feminine.

Observe also, that the Epitene Gender, ex- pressing both Sexes at once, is not wanting here, as *pulga, pielho, mosca, mosquito, minboca*, &c.

The Nouns Adjective ending in *o* are of the Masculine, and those in *a* of the Feminine Gen- der; of the Masculine Gender are also those ter- minating in *u*; as *era, crúa, crude, raw*, &c. *núa*, naked; and in *um*, as *hum, bama, comum, comúa*, &c.

Those that terminate in *al, el, il, az, iz, oz, es*, and in *e*, are both of the Masculine and Fe- minine Gender.

The Pronouns Adjective have three Genders, as we observed above, viz. Masculine, Feminine, and Neuter; as *aquelle, aquella*, and *aquillo*, that Man or Woman, and that Thing; so *este, esse, esta, essa, isto, isso*, this, that; where note, the *e* in the Neuter is turned into *i*; as *aquelle, aquillo, este, isto; esse, isso*.

But the Genders of the Pronouns appear plain enough in the Chapter of Pronouns, to which I refer the Reader.

CHAPTER II.

Of the Definite and Indefinite Articles.

THERE are two Sorts of Articles, the Definite and Indefinite. The Definite Marks the Gender, Number, and Case of the Noun it goes before; as *o homem, do homem, ao homem, os homens, dos homens, aos homens; a mulher, da mulher, à mulher; as mulheres, das mulheres, às mulheres*; the Articles *o, do, ao, os, dos, aos; a, da, à, as, das, às*, are here the Definite Articles, because they point out the Masculine or Feminine Gender, and the Singular or Plural Numbers.

The Definite Article has six Cases, *viz. Nominative, Genitive, Dative, Accusative, Vocative, Ablative*, and is declined as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

This Article is made use of, 1st, to specify a particular Person; as *o Rey manda aos subditos*, the King commands the Subjects.

2. It is applicable to a whole Species; as *os homens são fortes*, Men are strong; *o leão é feroz*, the Lion is fierce.

3. It is always put before God when the Word *Deos* has any Attribute joined to it; as *o Deus de misericórdia*, the God of Mercy.

4. It is joined with a Title to distinguish a Person; as *minha senhora a Princesa de, &c.* my Lady the Princess of, &c.

5. All Nouns Substantive common demand this Article; as *a casa, a terra, a mesa, o livro, o vinho, o leite, o fogo, a lua, o sol, &c.*

6. It is put before the Names of Countries, Rivers, and the Months; as *a França, o Portugal,*

gal, a Inglaterra, a Tamisa, o Tejo, o mes de Março, o mes de Junho, &c.

7. It is put before any Epithet; as *Judas o traidor*, Judas the Traytor.

8. The Superlative Degree of Adjectives requires also this Article; as *o principe Eugenio he o melhor general de todos*, Prince Eugene is the best General of all.

9. The Pronouns Possessive, *meu, teu, seu, nosso* and *vosso*, and the Relatives *hum, outro, qual*, require the Definite Article; as *elle he teu inimigo e o meu tambem*, he is thy Enemy and mine likewise; *o hum he mais sabio do que o outro*, one is more learned than the other; *meu livro o qual*, my Book which, &c. All the other Pronouns are joined with the Indefinite Article.

* * Observe here, that the Indefinite Article is also joined with *meu, teu, seu, nosso, vosso*, &c. when they stand between two Nouns Substantive, the latter of which stands in the Genitive Case; as *essa he a casa de meu irmao*, that is my Brother's House; *em satisfacao de seus pecados*, in Satisfaction of his Sins; *tu nao coubeças os livros de nosso pay*, thou dost not know the Books of our Father, (our Father's Books).

10. This Article is joined to the Infinitive of a Verb when it is taken in the Sense of a Noun; as *o ler nam he difficuloso*, reading is not difficult.

Observe, no Article is required when a Preposition is joined with the Noun; as *servir com ardor*, to serve with warmth; *obrar por dinheiro*, to work for Money.

The Indefinite Articles.

Are *de* and *a*; *de* may be placed before the Masculine as well as the Feminine Gender; as

hum arratel de pão, a Pound of Bread; and *hum arratel de carne*, a Pound of Flesh.

This Article is also put before the Singular and Plural promiscuously; as *hum arratel de cerejas*, a Pound of Cherries; *hum numero de mulheres*, a Number of Women.

In the same Manner the Article *o* serves for the Masculine and Feminine Gender, and the Singular and Plural Numbers; as *isto ora se diz a meninos*, that is, now said to Children, and *isto se ha de fazer a mulheres*, that must be done to Women.

This Article has but four Cases, viz. Genitive *Dante*, Accusative, and Ablative, *de, a, a, & de.*

It is necessary here to observe, that the Portuguese, as well as the Spaniards, join this Article to the Pronouns and Nouns of an indefinite Signification in the Accusative Case, which Beginners are often perplexed at, especially those who know French or Italian, which two Languages admit of no Article in that Case. In the following Examples you will find it joined with the Accusative Case, viz. *o reo com as mãos atadas fez a sua confissão*, the Guilty with his Hands tied made his Confession; *preguntee a estes homens*, I have asked these Men; *preguntee a estas mulheres*, I have asked those Women; *preguntee a Joam que horas são*, I have asked John what a Clock it is; *os Espanhoys combateram a Napoles*, the Spaniards have fought against Naples. (See Chap. V. of the Articles, &c.)

By the Help of these short Rules I hope it will be easy to distinguish which of the two Sorts of Articles should be applied, viz. When a particular Person or Thing is spoke of and pointed out, then the Definite Article takes place; but when the Subject spoke of is not pointed out, but left in a general

general Sense, then the Article indefinite obtains ; as when you say, *bum arratel de pam*, a Pound of Bread, you do not determine which or whose Bread it is, therefore the Indefinite Article is applied ; but when you say *a Pound of my Father's Bread*, then you point out whose Bread it is, and cause the Word Bread to obtain a determined or definite Sense ; wherefore the Definite Article must be made use of, and you say *bum arratel do pam de meu pay*, and not *bum arratel de pam de meu pay*.

To know the Cases by the Particles and Prepositions, we must have Regard to the Variety of Cases which these Articles govern. The Article *a* serves sometimes the Nominative, Dative, and Accusative Case ; as when we say *a casa be fermosa*, the House is beautiful, which is the Nominative ; and *ir a casa*, to go Home, which is the Accusative ; and *convem a casa*, it is convenient for the House, which is the Dative Case.

When the Particle *de* is joined with the Pronouns *este, esta, esse, isto, isso*, as *deste, desta, disto, disso*, it sometimes stands in the Genitive, sometimes in the Ablative Case ; but the Particle *n*, as *nesta, nesta, nisto, nesse*, &c. always denotes the Ablative. See the Prepositions.

The Particles *lho* and *lha* are often joined to Verbs, to signify the Words *it, him*, and is a Contraction of the Article *o, a*, and the Pronoun *elle* ; thus they say, *doulho de graça*, I give it him freely, and *doulha* (i. e. *a conza*) *de graça*, I give it (i. e. that Thing) him freely ; the Articles *o* and *a* stand here in the Accusative.

The Particles *de* and *da*, and *do*, sometimes denote the Genitive and sometimes the Ablative Case, e. g. *parte da casa*, Part of the House, being the Genitive ; and *venho de or da casa de Pedro*, I come from Peter's House, which is the Ablative ;

tive; as also *venho do Templo*, I come from the Church, Ablative.

The Particle or Preposition *para* is sometimes related to the Accusative, and sometimes to the Dative Case, v. g. *vou para casa*, I go Home, Accusative; and *para minha casa basta isto*, this is sufficient for my House, which is the Dative.

The Particles *em*, *na*, *no*, *com*, *sem*, always denote the Ablative Case in both Numbers, v. g. *estou em casa*, *suprima casa de Pedro*, I am in the House of Peter; *estou com esta*, *com armazem ou sem casa*, *sem armazem de Pedro*, I am with or without the House or Furniture of Peter, Ablative.

The Particle *ao* sometimes serves the Dative, and sometimes the Accusative Case, v. g. Dative, *conven ao Templo estar ornado*, it is convenient that a Church be adorned; Accusative, *vou ao Templo de S. Vito*, I go to the Church of S. Vito. *the Chapter of the Prepositions.*

CHAP. III.

Of the Use and Concordance of Nouns.

AS Nouns are reckoned the first in the Parts of Speech, therefore I shall begin with them, and explain what is necessary to know concerning them.

It is a general Rule, both in the Portuguese as well as in the Latin, that the Noun Adjective must ever agree with the Substantive in Gender, Number and Case, without Exception; as *um bom livro*, a good Book; *uma mulher má*, a bad Wife or Woman; *homens discretos*, discreet Men. and here observe, the Noun Adjective is commonly placed after the Noun Substantive.

* See p. 110, 111.

Remarks on the Comparisons of Adjectives.

The Force of the Comparison lies often in the Particle *que*, as indeed in doth in the Latin; and the Languages derived from it; the *Latin* has *quam*, the *Italian* *di*, the *Spanish* *que*, the *Portuguese* *que*, the *French* *que*, the *English* *than*. As for Example, *o vinho de melhor que cerveja*, Wine is better than Beer; *a peste de peor que a farna*, the Plague is worse than the Itch.

You also make Comparisons with the Adverbs *mais* and *menos*, as *meu cavallo he mais alto que o teu*, my Horse is higher than yours (thine.)

The Superlative is often formed, as in Latin, by adding *issimus*; as *excellens*, *excellentissimus*, Lat. So the Portuguese say *excellentissimo*, *generosissimo*, &c. but it is oftener expressed by putting the Article *o* and *a* before the Sign of the Comparative Degree; as *o Rey d' Ingalaterra he hum principe o mais poderoso*, &c. the King of England is the most powerful Prince &c. *esta Senhora he a mais bella mulher do mundo*, this Lady is the finest Woman in the World. (Vid. p. 29.)

Observations on the Nouns of Numbers.

All Numbers are distributed into four Classes; the first is what we call Cardinal or Principal; as *hum*, *dous*, *tres*, *quatro*, *dez*, *vinte*, *trinta*, *quarenta*, *cincaenta*, *cem*, *mil*, &c. one, two, three, four, ten, twenty, thirty, forty, fifty, hundred, a thousand.

Those of the second Order are called Ordinals; as *primeiro*, *segundo*, *terceiro*, *quarto*, *quinto*, *sexto*, *decimo*, *vinteino*, *centesimo*, *milesimo*, &c. the first, the second, the third, the fourth, the fifth, the sixth, the tenth, the twentieth, the hundredth, the thousandth, &c.

The

The third Class contains the Collectives; as *humana dignitas, humi virtutina*, &c. a Dozen, a Score.

The fourth Class are Numbers which mark an Augmentation; as *decentia*, the Double, &c.

Though all these Nouns of Numbers are Adjectives in their Nature, yet there are some which don't vary their Termination; that is to say, from one, *humana, humanus*, and in the Plural *humani, humanus*, some, and *deus, deus*, two, *ducentos, ducentas*, two hundred, *trecentos, trecentas*, three hundred, &c. which again have the Feminine Termination, as *ducentas homines, ducentas mulieres*, two hundred Men and two hundred Women.

C H A P. IV.

Of the Pronouns.

THE Pronouns having the second Place allotted them in the Parts of Speech in all Grammars, I shall treat of them next after the Noun, and first consider the *Pronoun Personal*, of which there are three Sorts; viz. of the first, second, and third Person.

* * Some Grammarians distinguish the Pronouns into Substantives and Adjectives. The Pronouns Substantive are *eu, tu, thou*, and *se* himself, and all the rest they call Adjectives; but for Method's Sake we shall treat of them in the following Order.

The Pronoun Personal of the first Person *eu* I has no determined Gender, and is joined to either the Masculine or Feminine, and declined with the indefinite Article, as may be seen in the Declensions. There is but one Pronoun of the first Person,

Person, and it always agrees with the Verb in Number and Person; as *eu sou, I am; nós somos, we are;* and it is sometimes suppressed by Way of Elegancy, and the Imitation of the Latin; as *amo a essas raparigas, I love those Girls; leio os meus livros, I read my Books;* tho' in English it cannot be left out.

The Pronoun *me*, is joined with the Particles *o* and *a* in the following Manner; *mô* and *mã* in the Singular, and *môs* and *mãs* in the Plural Number are made use of, *o. g. muy cara vendeo mo, i. e. o livro, he sold to me very dear; i. e. the Book; muy cara vendeo ma, i. e. a cousa, he sold it me very dear, i. e. the Thing; vendeo mos muy caros, i. e. os livros, he sold 'em me very dear; i. e. the Books; vendeo mas muy caras, i. e. as sedas, he sold 'em me very dear, i. e. the Silks.*

The Rules given for the first Person also serve for the second, without any Exception.

The Pronoun *tu* is also with the Article *o* and *a*, *os* and *as*, contracted into, *to, ta, tôs, tãs*, and joined to the End of Verbs, which makes this Language very concise and expressive; thus they say, *doute de graça, i. e. o livro, I give it thee freely, i. e. the Book; for doute o, &c. douta de graça, i. e. a seda, I give it thee freely, i. e. the Silk; for doute a. So in the Plural Masculine, doutô's da graça, i. e. os livros, I give them you freely, i. e. the Books, for doute os; and doutâ's de graça, i. e. as sedas, I give 'em you freely, i. e. the Silks, for doute as.*

The Plural *vós*, is also often joined to *o, a, os, and as*, by changing the Letter into an *i*. Example, *eu vôla dou, I give it you, for eu vôs a dou; and eu vôlas dou, I give them you, for eu vôs as dou. Likewise the Infinitive of Verbs is joined with *o, os, a and as*, by changing the *r* into *i*, as *quero vêlo, I will see him or it, for quero vero; and quero vêlos**

vélos, I will see them, for *quero* verbal. See the Chapter of the *Verbo*. The Pronoun of the third Person, *he* or *she* himself, which is the common Gender, both Masculine and Feminine, and has no Plural Number, is declined with the Indefinite Article, as may be seen in the Beginning of this Grammar.

Elle is commonly expressed by the Particle *he* in the Singular, and *hes* in the Plural, and the Dative Case is comprehended therein, as *á elle* and *á elles*, as *nam se he dá déssô*, and *nam se elle dá á elle déssô*, he cares not for it. So in the Plural *nam se hes dá déssô*, or *nam se elles dá elles d'isso*, they care not for it, or they value it not. (See p. 33.)

Pronouns Possessive.

There are three Pronouns Possessive; as *meu*, *seu*, *seu*, mine, thine, his, in Singular; *meus*, *teus*, *seus*, in Plural. They are joined with a Noun Substantive both in Singular and Plural, and have two Genders, viz. Masculine and Feminine; thus *meu* mine, is *minha* in Feminine; *tu*, *tua*, *Vid.* the Declension of the Pronouns; *meu livro*, my Book; *minha casa*, my House; *meu olho*, my Eye; *minhas palavras*, my Words, &c.

These Pronouns have the Article before them when the Conjunction Copulative comes between, e. g. *teu irmão e o meu*, thy Brother and mine, *minha irmã e a sua*, my Sister and his; *teus cavallos e os meus*, thy Horses and mine; *suas casas e as minhas*, thy Houses and mine.

Pronouns Demonstrative.

Such are *elle*, *ella*, *este*, *esse*, *aquelle*; the Words *elle*, *ella*, answer the English *he* and *she*; *este* is used when

when we say in English *this*; *essa* answers the English *that*; and *aquelle*, *that*, *there*, or *yonder*, which is almost out of Sight, is remote, or not in Sight at all; e. g. *este homem he muy honrado*, this is a Man of Honour; *essa mulher he fermosa*, that Woman is handsome; and *estive dez annos em aquella cidade*, I have been ten Years in that City.

Pronouns Interrogative.

Que, *quem*, *qual*, *cujos* and *cujas*. The Pronoun *que* is indeclinable; as *que homem he este?* what Man is that? *que mulheres sam essas?* what Women are those? When *que* is an Interrogative it ought to be writ with an Accent, otherwise not.

When you speak of inanimate Things you may use indifferently the Word *qual* or *quem*; as *qual destes retratos he o melhor?* which of these Pictures is the best? or *quem destes retratos*, &c. But when you speak of Things having Life, you must make use of *quem* only, except you put the Article before *qual*, e. g. *quem das duas mulheres he a mais fermosa?* which of the two Women is the handsomest? or *a qual das*, &c. which however is not so polite a Way of Expression as the first.

Pronouns Relative. See the Chapter of Pronouns.

Pronouns Improper.

These Pronouns are divided into two Classes; the first is of Personals, the other Mixed, which has Regard to both Persons and Things.

The Personal only is *quem*, who and which.

The Mixed are *nenhum*, *cadabum*, *outro*, *cada*, *nenhuno*, *mesmo*, *algum*, *tudo*, *tal*, *qualquer*, nobody, every

every one, another, and every, a certain, the same, somebody, every, such, which, or whosoever.

Some of these Pronouns have but one only Termination; as *quem*, *cada*, *qualquer*, *tal*, which are of the Masculine and Feminine Gender both; *quem* and *cada* are inclinable, but *qual* is in the Plural *quays*, and *tal*, *tays*; thus you say *quaysqueres homens*, ou *quaysqueres mulheres*. All the others have a Masculine and Feminine Termination, and are declinable; as *nenhum*, *nenhuma*, *nenhums*, *nenhumas*, *cadaum*, *cadauma*, *cadauns*, *cadaumas*; *outro*, *outra*, *outros*, *outras*, *certo*, *certa*, *certos*, *certas*, &c.

One of them is only negative, as *nenhum*, *nenhuma*; all the rest are Affirmatives.

Note, The Pronouns *meu*, *seu*, *seu*, *nosso*, *vosso*, *hum*, *outro*, and *qual*, mine, thine, his, ours, yours, one (or a) another, or which, are declined with the Definitive; but all the rest with the Indefinite Article.

CH A P. V.

Of the Verbs.

TO know how to conjugate the Verbs, and to apply them well, is a very material Thing to speak a Language in Perfection. The Conjugations have been shown above, and here we shall compile a few Rules how they are to be applied in their proper Moods and Tenses, Numbers and Persons.

All the Tenses of Verbs (except the Infinitive) should have before them a Nominative, either express'd or understood, with which they should agree in Number and Person.

Express'd; as *eu amo*, I love; *tu ouves*, thou hearest; *Pedro canta*, Peter sings.

Understood;

Understood, as *amo*, I love; *ouvimos*, we hear; *cantam*, they sing.

† The Portuguese, as well as Spaniards, when they speak to a Person whom they respect, they put the Verb in the third Person Singular; as *V. M. tem razão*, you are in the right (your Worship is in the right.) When they speak to one whom they have less regard for, they say, *Vossa* (instead of *Vossa merce*) *tem razão*. When they would express still less Regard, they speak in the second Person Plural, without *V. M.* or *Vossa*, and say *tendes razão*, you are in the right, or you have Reason; and the most familiar Way of all, as from a Father to a Son, or a Master to his Servant, is when they speak in the second Person Singular, *tem razão*, thou hast right (Reason).

The Verb Active governs the Accusative; as *amo a meu irmão*, I love my Brother; *digo a verdade*, I say the Truth.

The Verb Passive is preceded by a Nominative, and followed by an Ablative Case; as *os juizes são amados dos Principes*, Judges are loved by Princes; *os juizes* standing in the Nominative, and *dos principes* in the Ablative Case.

When the Particle *a* follows a Verb, the Portuguese, as well as the English, put the next following Noun in the Dative Case, as *dou a minha irmã*, I give to my Sister; *dizia ao principe*, he said to the Prince, which has been sufficiently explain'd, p. 15.

The Conjunctions which are between two Verbs oblige the last of the two Verbs to be of the same Number, Person, and Tense with the first. Example, the King wills and Commands, *o Rey quer e manda*; he sings and dances very well, *elle canta*

canta e dança muito bem; we saw and heard, vimos e ouvimos, &c.

Of the Moods.

The Imperative has properly no Conjunction belonging to it, tho' sometimes the following are joined with it, *viz. que, se, quando, and como*, e. g. *o Senhor A. B. escreve, que lendes seu livro, Mr. A. B. writes that you have his Book; faz isso se me amas, do that if you love me; quando quereys vir, when will you come? como tu amas a elles te amarão, as thou lovest them they will love thee.*

The Imperative Mood

Requires neither Preposition nor Conjunction, except only in the third Person Singular and Plural, when it is preceded by another Verb, otherwise not; as *manda que falem, order them to speak.*

Note. It is a Point of Controversy among the Grammarians, whether there is any Difference of Tenses in the Imperative Mood. Some of the *Portuguese* Grammars have two Tenses, *viz. the Present and Future*, whereas in Reality no Command can regard any other than the Future; for the Action must be subsequent to the Command. The second, which they call the Future, is entirely borrowed from the Future of the Indicative Mood, only with this Alteration, that no first Person is allowed in the Singular, and the Pronoun is put after the Verb. The *Spaniards* have but one Tense in the Imperative, which they call Future, and corresponds with the first Tense of our Imperative; and indeed if two Tenses are to be allowed, the only Difference I can perceive is, that what is commanded by the first is to be executed immediately, but the second at a greater, and not a limited, Distance of Time; for which

Reason

Reason, I, not being willing to reject the second entirely, have kept them, and called one the first, and the other the second Tense.

The Optative and Conjunctive

Require some Particle before each Tense, tho' the Present is sometimes used without any, as *praza a Deus*, please God; *Deus o fassa*, God grant it. When no Certainty of Action is marked, and the Particle *que* is joined with the Verb, it must always be put in the Optative, as *he misse que tenha eu*, it is necessary I should have. The Conjunctive is very elegantly used on several Occasions, and expressed by the Particle *como*; as *como vosso pay vos ama tanto*, *sente muito vossa ausencia*, as your Father loves you so much, he is much troubled at your Absence; *como vosso pay vos amava*, *amou*, *amará tanto*, &c. and in short the Particle *como* prefixed to any of the Tenses of the Indicative expresses the Conjunctive Mood.

The Portuguese also not inelegantly make use of the Gerund to express the Conjunctive Mood, e. g. *nam vos corays de fazer tais confas*, *sendo nobre*, for *como soys nobre*, do not you blush (colour) to do such Things, being a Person of Quality? *fugays*, *fugisteis de vosso pay amandoos elle tanto*, did you, have you, run away from your Father, he loving you so well?

The Conjunctive also is very elegantly (nay more elegantly than by the Particle *como*, or the Gerund) expressed by the Particles *poys* and *depoys*, v. g. *nam me espanto fallardes tam audazmente*, *poys soys soldado*, I wonder not that thou talkest so boldly since thou art a Soldier; *morréo na primeira de Setembro depoys de ser Rey sete annos*, *ou avendo sete annos que tinha sido Rey*, he died the Seventh of September, after he had been King.

seven Years, or it being seven Years that he had been King.

The Optative is also joined with the Particles *posto que, se que, que nám, peraque, nám, aindaque, comtantoque*, although, if, that, that not, why, why not, although, whilst or as long as; as *rogo-te que sejas liberal*, I desire thee to be liberal; *peraque sejas liberal*, &c.

All Verbs which signify *Will, Command, Doubt, Desire, Admiration, Supplication, or Pretension*, when followed by the Conjunction *que*, govern the Subjunctive Mood; as *rogo-te que venha pera minha casa*, I desire him to come to my House; *desejo muito que prospere em seus negocios*, I desire very much that he may prosper in his Business; *queira Deos (praza a Deos) que seja*, God grant he may be.

The Conjunction *aindaque*, although, always demands the Subjunctive Mood; as, *aindaque seja tempo não quero hir ainda*, although it be Time, I do not care to go yet; *aindaque elle o diga não o creyo*, although he says it, I do not believe it.

The Infinitive

Has an indeterminate Signification, and can be employed neither absolutely nor determinately, except in Speaking in general, *e. g. poder viver, e saber viver, he a verdadéyra filosofia*, to be able to live, and to know to live, is the true Philosophy. Sometimes the Infinitive is elegantly, in Imitation of the *Latin*, made a Substantive, and has the Article *o* prefixed to it; as *o viver e o morrer sam as cousas mais certas que temos*, to live and to die are the most certain Things we have; and in this Manner the Particles or Prepositions *nó* and *dó* are often joined with it; as *nó correr nembum o excede*, in Running no one exceeds him; *não se falla do ler agora*, we do not speak now of Reading.

They also very elegantly make use of this Mood with the Particle *que*, when we place the Words something or nothing before the Infinitive in English; as *tenho que fazer*, I have something to do, *não tenho que escrever*, I have nothing to write.

The Pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, are often joined with the Infinitive Mood, v. g. *assanbar-se*, to be exasperated; *entreter-se*, to entertain one's self.

When two Verbs are put together, the second commonly is in the Infinitive; as *devo amar*, I must love; *quero ver*, I desire to see.

Sometimes the Particles *por*, *sem*, *á*, *de*, *pera*, and *em* precede the Infinitive; as *por ser virtuoso me perseguem os maos*, for being virtuous, or because I am virtuous, the Wicked persecute me; *sem ser letrado dou a minha opinião*, without being a Lawyer, I give my Opinion; *á fallar a verdade*, to speak the Truth, &c. *sey que avéys de ser homem douto*, I know you are to be a learned Man; *prometo de ser fiel*, *jurou de ser fiel*, I promise to be faithful, he swore to be faithful.

When the Verb is in the Infinitive Mood and Future Tense, then the auxiliary Verb *ey* is added; as *amaturus sum illum*, Latin, *amalo ey*; *laudaturus sum illum*, Latin, *ouvilo ey*, I will love him, I will praise him; *accordarlbe ey*, I will wake him, *agastarse ha*, he will be angry.

When the Particles *lo*, *la*, *los*, *las*, him, it, her, and them, are joined with the Infinitive, the Verb loses the Letter *r*; as *quero louválo*, *louvála*, *louválos*, *louválas*, I will praise him, and praise it, praise her, praise them; *quero ouvilo*, *ouvila*, I will hear him or it, hear her. But when the Particles *lbe* and *lbes* stand instead of the forementioned Diminutives, the Letter *r* remains in its Place; as, *quero agradecerlbe*, e *agradecerlbes*, I will thank him, her, and thank them; *quero fallarlbe*, *fallarlbes*, I will speak to him, her, speak to them.

When they use the Infinitive to accompany a third Person in the Plural, it is common with the *Portuguese* to add *em*, and to make use of *ser, serem, amar, amarem*. Thus they say, *fico queixoso da minha desdita de saltarem as occasiões de desempenbarme*, I remain complaining of my Misfortune to want Opportunities (that Opportunities are wanting) to acquit myself; *não quero os livros por serem elles prohibidos*, I do not care for the Books, because they are prohibited; *não quize acompanhálos por amarem elles beber tanto*, I did not care to accompany them, because they love to drink so much, &c.

Remarks on the Tenses.

To avoid Repetition, I refer the Reader to what has been said in the Beginning of this Grammar on this Head.

Since the Preterperfects definite and indefinite are often confounded one with the other, we will lay down here some Rules to distinguish them by. The Preterperfect definite, or second, is employed when we speak of a Time perfectly past; and the indefinite, or first, when the Time is not totally, but past in part, and in part present or passing: For Example, in speaking of the last Year, you may not say, *tenho escrito huma carta no anno passado*, I have wrote a Letter last Year, because the Time or Year is entirely past. But to speak properly, we must say, *escrevi huma carta no anno passado*, I wrote a Letter last Year, which Difference is also observed in the *English* Tongue; for it would be as improper in *English*, to say *I have wrote a Letter last Year*, for *I wrote a Letter last Year*, as it is shocking to a nice Ear, in the *Portuguese*, to say *tenho escrito*, &c. In speaking of the present Year, which being but in part past, it will not be allowed me

me to say *compus hum livro este anno*, I composed a Book this Year; but I must say *tenho composto hum livro este anno*, I have composed a Book this Year, which is also more proper in *English*. This Distinction may be acquired by the Ear; but as this is not done but by long Conversation with those who speak the Language in Perfection, I would advise the Beginner not to trust to Practice only in this Article, but to fix well these Remarks in his Mind, since otherwise he may chance to get an ill Habit of confounding these two Tenses, which afterwards is not easily discarded.

The Preterpluperfect and the two Futures are easily distinguished by what we have said in the Beginning of this Grammar.

Of the Uncertain Tense.

This Tense is by the Ignorant often put for the Preterimperfect of the Optative Mood. Its Termination is in *ria*, and ought not to be used indifferently for the Preterimperfect, but when we speak either conditionally (but then the Condition must follow) or with some Doubt; but it can never take *se*, if, and *aindaque*, although, before or after it, if you will speak correctly; and the Preterimperfect must always be preceded by *se*, if, and *aindaque*. By the following Examples you will perceive how much the Sense of a Period is altered by the Difference of these Tenses. To begin with the Uncertain, *daria a Vossa merce dez cruzados se fora homem honrado*, I will give you ten Crusadoes were he an honest Man; *fallaria a verdade se nam recadra o castigo*, I would or should speak the Truth did I not fear the Punishment; and it would be false, and contrary to the Idiom of the Language, to say *dessa* or *déra* dez dobroens, and *fallara* ou *fallasse a verdade*, &c. Example

134 Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.

of the Preterimperfect, *aindaque fallará ou fallasse a verdade, nenhum me crêrá*, though I should speak the Truth, Nobody will believe me. *Note*, When they use the Imperfect instead of the Uncertain Tense, it is the Termination in *ará*, and not that in *asse*.

Of the Verb Passive.

The Passive Verb or Voice, as we have said at the Conjugations, is made by conjugating the Verbs *sou* and *estou* with the Particle of the past Tense; but the *Portuguese* (as well as the *Spaniards*) commonly express the Passive Voice, by joining the Pronoun *se* with the Verb Active in the following Manner. Example,

Pello que o Senhor tem dito se vê o contrario, for he ou esta visto o contrario, by what this Gentleman has said, the contrary sees itself, for the contrary is seen or appears.

As circumstancias se contam e se deve fazer pouco caso de muitas dellas pello odio que se tem a esta gente, Circumstances count themselves, (are counted) and it must make itself little in Case of (and little Regard ought to be had to) many of them, (by the Hatred that holds itself to this People,) or by Reason of their Hatred towards this People; *que se diz de novo?* What News says itself, or is said? *que se escreve de novo de Paris?* What News writes itself from Paris, or is wrote from Paris?

The Passive Voice is also sometimes expressed by the third Person in Plural of the Active Verb. Example, *dizem (se diz) que avera guerra*, they say (it is said) there will be a War; *escrevem (se escreve) de Paris que o Rey está com saude*, they write (it is wrote) from Paris, that the King is in Health, &c.

Of the Gerunds.

The Gerunds in this Language end in *do*; as *amando*, *lêndo*, &c. in loving, in reading, &c. and govern the same Cases as the Verbs of which they are Part, tho' some compose Gerunds by putting the Particles *em*, *pera* and *de*, with the Infinitive Present; as *em dar*, *pera dar*, *de dar*, in giving, of giving; as *escrevêndo essa carta*, in writing that Letter; *fallando a meu pay*, speaking to my Father; by which it appears they govern the same Cases as the Verbs they are derived from; for *carta* stands here in the Accusative, and *a meu pay*, in the Dative.

The Gerunds have neither Tense, Number, or Persons, but agree with all. Example of the Present, *trabalhándo bem nam ba que temer*, in working well he need fear Nobody; of the Perfect, *foy feito escrevendo elle a carta*, it was done when he wrote the Letter. Example for the Number and Person, *eu o veréy*, *vós o veréys*, *elle os vera passandô pollo rúa*, I shall see him, you shall see him, he shall see them passing through the Street.

Sometimes two Gerunds are joined together; as *estando escrevendo esta carta recebi a vossa*, whilst I was writing this Letter I received yours; *morreo de repente, estando disputando dá morte*, he died suddenly whilst he was disputing about Death.

The Verb and Gerund are also sometimes Companions; as *espirou avendo quatro annos inteiros que jazia entrevado*, he died (expired) having lain four whole Years bed-ridden.

C H A P. VI.

Of the Participles.

THE Participles are of three Sorts, viz. of the *Past*, *Present*, and *Future Tense*; as *amado*, beloved; *amante*, (*o que ama*) loving, or he that loves, and *o que tem de amar*, he that shall or will, or is to love.

When that of the *Past Tense* is composed with the Verb *ser*, to be, then the Participle ought to agree with the foregoing Noun Substantive in Gender and Number. Example, the Captain is beloved, *o capitam he amado*; Virtue is esteemed, *a virtude he estimado*; the Lazy will be blamed, *os preguiçosos seram culpados*; those Houses will be sold, *essas casas seram vendidas*.

The Participle of the *Past Tense*, strictly taken, infers a *Passive Signification*; as *lido*, read; *amado*, loved; *ouvido*, heard; but the *Portuguese* (and *Spaniards*) often use it also in the *Active Sense*; as *como vos tenho escrito muitas cartas, e não ey recebida nenhuma resposta*, as I have wrote you many Letters, and have not received any Answer.

* * The *Spaniards* and *Portuguese* very elegantly make use of this Participle with the *Ablative absolute*, to imitate their Mother Tongue, the *Latin*; thus they say, *acabada a cea se foy a dormir*, Supper being ended he went to sleep, (*finita cœna ivit cubitum*); *tirada a causa cessa o effeito*, the Cause being taken away, the Effect ceases (*ablata causa cessat effectus*); *partido vossa pay chegou vossa irmã*, when your Father was departed, your Sister arrived; in this Case the Gerunds *sendo* and *avendo* are understood; as *a cea sendo acabada, se foy a dormir, a causa sendo tirada*.

tirada cossa o effeito; o vosso pay sendo partido chegou vossa irmã.

The Participles of the Present Tense, *amante*, loving; *ouvinte*, hearing, &c. are of the common Gender, and are declined like Nouns Adjective, and must agree with the Noun and Pronoun they are joined with in Number and Case; as, *os ouvintes* (homens) & *as ouvintas* (mulheres) *isto por certo não dizem, que tendes rezaõ*, these (Men or Women) who are hearing it, for certain do not say that you have Right; but the Portuguese commonly express this Participle by the Indicative Present, joined with the Particles *o* or *a*, which they decline, and the Pronoun *que*. Example, *os* (homens) & *as* (mulheres) *que ouvem isto, por certo, não dizem que tendes rezaõ*, the (Men and Women) which hear that for certain, do not say that you have Right.

The Participle of the Future Tense is of two Voices, viz. the Active and Passive. That of the Active, *a que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, he that is to love, read, or hear, is likewise adapted to the Gender and Number of the Noun it is joined with, by declining the Article *o* and *a*, and putting the Verb *tenho* in the Number and Person agreeable thereunto; as *os homens* & *as mulheres que tem de amar, ler, ouvir*, the Men or Women that are to love.

The Participle of the Future Tense in the Passive Voice is, *o* & *a que ha ou tem de ser amado, amada*; *os* & *as que ham ou tem de ser amados, amadas*, he or she that is to be loved; they (both Masculine and Feminine) that are to be loved: Which is also regulated by the Article and Verb in the Masculine Gender or Plural Number, as the Noun demands in it; Example, *o livro que ha de ser escrito*, the Book that is to be writ; *as cartas que*

138 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitânica.*
que ham de ser lidas, the Letters that are to be
 read.

C H A P. VII.
Of the Adverbs.

THE Grammarians differ about these Words, *dentro, fora, emcima, embaixo, antes,* and *diante*, some putting them in the Rank of Adverbs, and others placing them among the Prepositions; and they are both Adverbs and Prepositions. When they are followed by nothing they are Adverbs; as *está dentro*, he is within; *vay fora*, he goes out or abroad; *esta encima*, he is on the Top; *está debaixo*, he is below; *vay antes*, he goes before; *vay diante*, he goes before, because they here maintain the Character of Adverbs; which is, they are joined with Verbs to declare or explain the Manner of their Signification. They are Prépositions when they are followed by some Case of a Noun; as *está dentro ná casa*, he is in the House; *está fora da casa*, he is out of the House, &c.

The Adverb is always put before the Adjective and Participle, but follows the Verb; as *esta bômem he muito barbaro*; this Man is very barbarous; *estôu bem persuadido*, I am well persuaded.

The Adverbs in the Order are as follow;

<i>Adverbs of Time.</i>	
Agora, now.	Entám, entonces, then.
Ja, already.	Sempre, ever.
Ja entám, then already.	Nunca, never.
Jamáys, never.	Ao presente, at present.
Jagora, just now.	Alguma hóra, sometimes.
Tarde, late.	Ainda, yet.
Sedo, soon, early.	Antesque, before.
	Supitamente, suddenly.
	Cada

Cada dia, *daily*.
 Hoje, *to-day*.
 Amenham, *to-morrow*.
 Depois, *afterwards*.
 Ontem, *yesterday*.
 Desde, *since then*.
 Daqui adiante, *henceforward*.
 Entretanto, *mean while*.

Adverbs of Place.

Aqui, *here*.
 Alli, *there*.
 Acolá, *in this or that Place*.
 Daquí, *hence*.
 Pera alli, *thither*.
 Atheli, *hitherto*.
 Cá, *thither*.
 La onde, *there, where*.
 Onde, *where*.
 Onde quer, *wherever*.
 Dentro, *within*.
 Fora, *without*.
 Alem, *on the other Side*.
 Acima, *above*.
 Debáixo, *below*.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Muito, *much*.
 Pouco, *little*.
 Affaz bastantemente, *enough*.
 Demasiado, *too much*.
 Abundantemente, *abundantly*.
 Muito mais, *much more*.

Pouco mais, *a little more*.
 Pouco mais ou menos, *little more or less*.

Adverbs of Quality.

Prudentemente, *prudently*.
 Atrevidamente, *boldly*.
 Elegantemente, *elegantly*.
 Adrede, *dextrously*.
 Suavemente, *sweetly*.
 Discretamente, *discreetly*.
 Engenhosamente, *ingeniously*.
 Galantemente, *gallantly*.
 Ligeiramente, *neatly*.
 Gentilmente, *genteelly*.
 Facilmente, *easily*.

Adverbs of Number.

às vezes, *sometimes*.
 Vez, vezes, *Time, Times*.
 Muitas vezes, *oftentimes*.
 Huma vez, *once*.
 Quatro vezes, *four times*.
 Cem mil vezes, *hundred thousand times*.

Adverbs Negative.

Nam, *not*.
 Ainda nam, *not yet*.
 Não mais, *no more*.
 Nada, *nothing*.
 Tam pouco, *neither*.
 Nunca, *jamais, never*.
 Reparay vos, *look ye*.

Adverbs

140 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitana.*

Adverbs demonstrating.

Eis aqui, *behold.*
 Além d'isto, *moreover,*
besides.
 Finalmente, *finally.*
 Em fin, *at last.*
 Dedes que, *since.*
 Eylo aqui, *look here.*

Adverbs of Doubt.

Por ventura, *perhaps.*
 Acafo, *perchance.*

Adverbs Interrogatory.

Como, *how.*
 Por que rezám, *where-*
fore,
 A que proposito, *to what*
Purpose.
 Para que, *why.*
 Que, *what.*

Adverbs of Uniting.

Apar, juntamente, *toget-*
her.
 Entreambos, *between*
both.

Adverbs of Separation.

Aparte, *singly.*
 Seperadamente, *sepa-*
rately.
 Espalhadamente, *scat-*
teringly.
 Apartadamente, *distinct-*
ly.

Adverbs of Intention.

Fortissimamente, *strong-*
ly.
 Intensissimamente, *most*
intensely.
 Com grande cuydado,
most studiously.

Adverbs of Remitting.

Pouco a pouco, *little by*
little.
 Passo a passo, *step by step.*
 Preguiçosamente, *idly.*
 Froxamente, *remissly.*

Adverbs of Hastening.

Depressa, *quickly.*
 Apressadamente, *hastily.*
 Arrebadamente, *furi-*
ously.
 Em hum instante, *in-*
stantly.
 Logo, *presently.*

Adverbs of Comparison.

Assim como, *so as.*
 Quasi, *almost.*
 Como, *as.*
 Mais, *more;*
 Menos, *less,*

Adverbs of Choice.

Antes, *rather.*
 Dóutra maneyra, *other-*
wise,
 Debalde,

Debalde, <i>em vão, in vain.</i>	A outro propósito, <i>for another End.</i>
Atravéz, <i>transversly.</i>	De corrida, <i>nimbly.</i>
Ao contrario, <i>on the contrary.</i>	Diariamente, <i>daily.</i>
A olhos vistos, <i>openly.</i>	às escondidas, <i>privately.</i>
A longe, <i>afar off.</i>	De dia em dia, <i>from day to day.</i>
De perto, <i>near.</i>	De gatinhas, <i>creeping.</i>
Ao menos, <i>at least.</i>	De galope, <i>leaping.</i>
ão pe da letra, <i>by pre- scription.</i>	De joelhos, <i>kneeling.</i>
Ao redor, <i>about.</i>	Davesso, <i>transversly.</i>
Ao vivo, <i>to the life.</i>	Debilmente, <i>weakly.</i>
Aos côuces, <i>by the heels.</i>	

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Conjunctions.

THE several Sorts of Conjunctions are Copulatives, Disjunctives, Causals, Illatives, of Opposition, Exception, Conditionals of Doubting, of Declaration, of Interrogation, of Comparison, of Augmentation, of Diminution, &c.

The chief Conjunction Copulative is *e*, and, which is used as in all other Languages; *tambem*, *tanto*, *quanto*, *como*, *nem*, and *tampoco*, are of the same Order.

Tambem, also, or as well, is always placed at the End of the Phrase; as *vossê o quer, e eu tambem*, you desire it, (will have it) and I also.

Tanto, *quanto*, *como*, always speak with a Relation to other Things.

Nem disjoins the Parts of the Period as to the Sense, but unites them in the Period; as *naõ he nem homem nem mulher*, it is neither, Man nor Woman; *tampoco*, neither, is used after the same Manner.

142 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.*

Oa is a Disjunctive, and is used in the same Sense as *vel* in *Latin*, and *or* in *English*.

Porém, entretanto, com todo isso, sem embargo, but, mean while, for all that, notwithstanding, are of Opposition, and are employed in Discourse as the *English* Words that signify them.

Senam, and ámenos que; if not, and unless that, are of the excepting Kind; *senam* stands sometimes for but; as *nao quero senam isso*, I desire but that.

Se, if, posto que, and supposto que, supposing that; are of the conditional Order, and are joined with the Subjunctive Mood; as *se nao ouvera lido*, if I had not read; *posto que eu venha, &c.* suppose I come. *Quando*, when, is sometimes used for a Conjunction of this Sort, and in such Case it is always joined with the Subjunctive; as *se or quando fallára bem, entoncos, &c.* if he would speak well, then, &c.

Declaratives are, *he de saber, to wit, and como, as,* which govern neither Mood nor Tense of any Verb.

Paraque, aquê, sempre que, porque, wherefore, for what, upon what, for why, are Interrogatives; as *nao sey porque, nem paraque,* I do not know for what nor wherefore; *por que rezaõ,* for what Reason; *a que proposito,* to (for) what Purpose.

Augmentatives and Diminutives are, *o demas, aindaque, ao menos,* for the rest, although, at least, &c.

Casual Conjunctions are such as mark the Reason of Things done; they answer the *Latin, quid, ergo, enim.* Such as *pois, porque, como, emquanto, logo, á fim que,* then, because, as, inasmuch, presently, to the End that.

The Particle *que* is the most frequent of all Conjunctions, and of the most Importance to be taken Notice of; it is both a Pronoun and a Conjunction, but the latter is what we speak of here.

When

When it is not preceded by any Verb, it is a Kind of Exclamation; as *que me exponha a fazer isso be impossivel*, that I should expose me to do what is impossible. When *que* is preceded by a Verb, that Verb must be in the Indicative, and the Verb following *que* in Subjunctive, as *duvido que o Réy aja chegado*, &c. I doubt that the King is not arrived, &c.

* * Observe here, that the *Portuguese*, as well as the *Spaniards*, *French*, and *Italians*, join no Negative with the Verb *I doubt*, as the *English* do. Thus the *Portuguese* say, *duvido que o Rey aja chegado*, and not *que o Rey não aja chegado*.

But when *que* answers the *Latin* *quam*, how, it governs the Indicative Mood; as *o que fermosa be esta mulher!* O how handsome is that Woman! I need say nothing more about this Particle, for if the Student observes these Rules, and is careful in distinguishing when it stands for the Pronoun *what*, or for the Conjunction *that*, and the Adverb *how*, he will find no Difficulty in using it correctly.

CH A P. IX.

Of the Preposition.

THE Prepositions, as has been said in the Chapter of the Parts of Speech, are indeclinable Particles joined with *Nouns*, *Pronouns*, and *Verbs*, to declare their Signification.

As the *a* is not only a Preposition, but also a Particle used in a very different Manner, I shall, by the following Explanation, shew how you may discern when it is a Preposition and when a Particle.

1. It is indeclinable when it is in Composition; as it often is both with Nouns, Pronouns, Verbs, and Adverbs, and sometimes augments or diminishes the Signification; as *adinbeirado*, to be full of Money, compounded of *a* and *dinheiro*; it is the Participle of *adinbeirar*, to heap up Money; *ajoelharse*, to kneel, is a Verb Neuter reciprocal, compounded of *a* and *joelho*; a Knee; *adiante* is an Adverb, compounded of *a* and *dante*.

2. It is a Particle when it stands between two Infinitives; as *começar a jurar*, to begin to swear.

3. It is a Particle when it follows a Participle or Adjective, and is followed by an Infinitive Mood; as *estou pronto a obedecer*, I am ready to obey.

4. It is a Particle when it is between two Nouns of Number, or more properly between a Noun of Number and its Repetition; as, *ir dois a dois*, to go two and two; *quatro a quatro*, four and four; *vieram duzia a duzia*, they came by Dozens.

5. When it marks a Distance of Time or Place, it is a Particle; as *vive vinte milhas de Londres*, he lives twenty Miles from London.

6. The *a* is a Preposition marking the Dative Case in the Declension of a Noun proper, whether Masculine or Feminine; as *escrever a Pedro*, to write to Peter; *a Juaz, a Maria, &c.* I say it marks the Dative in Nouns proper; for in the declining of Substantives of the common Order it takes to itself an *o*; as *escrever ao Rey*, to write to the King; but when the Noun is of the Feminine Gender, the Particle cannot be distinguished from the Article, except that some who are nice in their Orthography put the Accent Gravé upon the *a* when a Particle, and an Acute (*â*) when a Preposition.

7. The *a* marks the Accusative after a Verb Active; as *amar a Deos*, to love God; *imitar aos Santos*, to follow the Example of Saints.

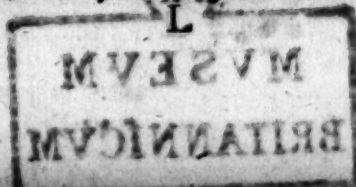
It may be objected, that there is no difference between, *escrever a Pedro*, to write to Peter, and *amar a Deos*, to love God; for if the *a* before *Pedro* signifies the Dative, it ought also to do the same before *Deos*; to which I answer, that to make the Distinction you must observe, that when it comes after a Verb Neuter it marks a Dative; and after a Verb Active an Accusative Case, and besides, that it is the Sign of the Dative Case to Nouns proper only. These Rules, I doubt not, with some Application, will soon render the Learner Master of this nice Distinction.

De sometimes signifies a Proposition, and sometimes a Particle; when it marks the Quality, Cause, or Manner of doing a Thing, or answers to the Sign of the Genitive in *English*, it is no Preposition, but a Particle; as *he hum homem de máa vida*, he is a Man of an ill Life.

When *de* answers the *English* *from*, or *out of*, it is a Preposition; as *não tire isso de mim*, do not take that from me.

De is also a Preposition when it stands before Adverbs of Place or Time; as *de aqui nó diante*, from henceforward; also when found before Verbs in the Infinitive Mood; as *he tempo de partir*, it is Time to depart.

Em, in, whence, *nó* and *ná*, in, and *dentro*, within, are also Prepositions; and to apply them justly, you are to observe, that when you speak of the Time past, the Proposition *em* is required; and for the Time to come you are to use the Word *dentro*, and not *em*, *nó*, or *ná*; as *li as obras de Tasso em quinze dias*, and not *dentro de quinze dias*, I have read the Works of Tasso in a Fortnight; *chegaré a Londres dentro de tres dias*, I will be at London within (in) three Days; *nó* and *ná*, and *nós* and *nás* are a Contraction of *em o* and *em a*, *em os*, *em as*; they are put before the Nouns



to signify the Preposition *em*, and the Article belonging to the Word at the same Time; as *não ha no mundo*, there is not in the World, for *não ha em o mundo*; and *não há na casa*, for *não ha em a casa*; thus *de o* and *de a* are contracted into *dô* and *dá*, and *de os*, *de as*, into *dós*, *dás*; which has been observed above.

Antes signifies a Priority in Time; as *Deos creó a Adam antes do diluvio*, God created Adam before the Flood.

Diante is a Preposition both of Place and Order, and often answers to the Latin *coram*, before; as *tenho minha casa diante do paço*, my House is before the Palace; *põem essa camisa diante do fogo*, put this Shirt before the Fire; *estávamos diante do Réy*, we were before the King; *Vm^a. va diante de mim*, you go before me.

Ante sometimes signifies Priority, and sometimes it has the force of the Latin *coram*; as *ante todas cousas he mister ler*, before all Things it is necessary to read, &c. *ante nós secretarios*, before us Secretaries, which however is better express'd by *diante*.

Perto, about, marks a Nearness of Time, Things, and Place, and requires the Genitive Case of Nouns, and the Infinitive of Verbs, with the Particle *de*; as *perto da buma*, *perto das tres* about One, about Three a Clock; *está perto de perecer*, he is near perishing.

Depois, since or after, is both of Time and Place; when 'tis of Time it answers the English *since*; as *depois do diluvio*, since the Deluge; and *depois de aver escrito esta carta*, after I had writ this Letter. When it denotes a Place, it answers the English *after*, and will in that Sense also have the Genitive; *Vm^a. deve ir depois de Pedro*, you ought to go after Peter.

Detraz is also of Place, and answers the English *behind*.

Com is the same with, and is used exactly like the *English with*; for like that it marks Union, the Instrument and the Manner; as *com migo*, with me, *Entre* is both of Place and Time, and answers to the *English between* and *betwixt*; as *entre a creação do mundo e o dilúvio*, between the Creation of the World and the Deluge; *entre o dia do nascimento e a Páscoa* *jam mnytos dias*, between Christmas Day and Passover are many Days. In these Examples 'tis plain that Preposition signifies Time; but in the following it denotes Place, as *o ar está entre o céu e a terra*, the Air is betwixt Heaven and Earth; *entre Londres e Lisboa*, betwixt London and Lisbon.

Fora answers to the *English out*, except when it is used for an Exceptive; *está fora da casa*, he is out of the House; *fora do reyno*, out of the Kingdom. It is exceptive in the following Examples, *eu consinto, fora do ir á Roma*, I consent, except of the going to Rome; *todos se foram fora menos tres ou quatro*, all went away, except three or four. The Words *salvo* and *senão*, except, are often with more Elegance apply'd than *fora*, particularly when it happens to fall in with a Word which resembles it in Sound, as here it doth with *fóram*, where the Jingle takes off the Smoothness of the Sound; therefore you say more elegantly *todos se fóram salvo tres ou quatro*.

The Preposition *para* is put before an Infinitive Mood, or between two Infinitives; as *para morrer bem*, for to die well; *o que dizes he fallar para fallar*, what thou sayest is talking for talking Sake.

This Preposition marks the Motive, Cause, Reason, or End of Things being done; it shews why and for what; as *Deos criou todo o mundo para seu serviço*, God created all the World for his Service; *eu fiz huma casa para os pobres*, I have made a House for the Poor; *este homem he bom*

148 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitanica.*

para hum secretario, this Man is good for a Secretary: It denotes also a Conveniency; as *esta casa he muy pequena para mim*, this House is very little for me.

It is also a Preposition of Time, tho' in the Future only; for when we speak in the Present or Perfect Tense, we must use *por*, and not *para*, as we shall observe in speaking of that Preposition; as *agora e para sempre seja o nomen de Deos louvado*, now and for ever let the Name of God be praised.

The Preposition *por* denotes the Cause efficient of a Thing, or the Motive of doing or ordering that Thing. The efficient Cause; as *Deos criou tudo por sua omnipotencia*, God created all by his Omnipotence. It marks the Motive of some Action; as *todo o que faz he por vingança*, all what he doth is for (out of) Vengeance; *tenbo feito isto por effoutro*, I have done this for the other.

Por answers to the Latin *pro*, v. g. *eu vos tenbo por amigo*, I hold you for a Friend; *a cidade está por o Rey*, the City is for the King; *trocáyme este cavallo por outro*, change me this Horse for another. Sometimes *por* stands for the Latin *propter*, by Reason of, v. g. *por aver grande tempestade*, by reason of a great Tempest; and in this Sense the Words *amor*, or *causa*, are sometimes joined with it; as *por amor das neves*, and *por causa das neves não passo os Alpes*, by Reason of the Snow I don't pass the Alps.

When *por* is joined to the Article *o* and *a*, the *r* is changed into *l*; as *pálo amor de Deos*, for God's Sake; *póla honra*, &c.

Per is applied when they design to shew the Medium by which we proceed in any Action; as *eu vos mostrarey per rezâens evidentes*, I will shew you by evident Reasons; *este livro foy composto per Virgilio*, this Book was composed by Virgil.

When

When *per* is joined to the Articles *o* and *a*, it makes *pelo* and *pela*; as *pelo caminho*, by the Way; *pela terra*, through the Earth.

Contra, against, denotes Opposition and Place, and in both it is applied exactly like the *English*; as *ella vay contra mare e vento*, he goes against Tide and Wind; *contra minha vontade*, against my Will; *contra toda rezaõ*, against all Reason: It marks a Place in the following Example, *o cam myjou contr a apárede*, the Dog piss'd against the Wall.

Além, besides, when joined with the Infinitive, requires the Particle *de*; as *além de comer quiz beber*, besides eating he wanted to drink; but when put with the finite Moods, it requires *de que*, or *dó que*; as *além dó que tinha feito queria*, &c. besides what he had done he wanted, &c.

Desde and *até*, from and until, denote both Time and Place; as *desde aquella tempo até agora*, from that Time to this Time, (till now,) *desde aquella casa, até esta casa*, from that House to (till) this House.

Sem, without, answers the *Latin absque* and *sine*, and goes before the Noun and Verb, and governs the Accusative Case; *he homem sem honra*, he is a Man without Honour; *leyo sem applicaçõ*, I read without Application.

Sobre answers in every Thing to the *English upon* and *over*, and therefore 'tis not necessary to say any Thing about it.

Debaixo is a Preposition both of Time and Place; it marks a Time when it marks the Reign of any Prince; as *debaixo dó Império de Leopoldo*, under or in the Reign of Leopold. It denotes a Place; as *meus sapátoes estão debaixo dá cama*, my Shoes stand under the Bed. It signifies a Subordination; as *os soldados estão debaixo da autoridade do general*, the Soldiers are under the Authority

of the General; and also in the metaphorical Sense it answers to the *English* under and below; as *engana seu próximo debaixo da capa de devoção*, he cheats his Neighbour under the Cloak of Devotion.

Em cima, above or upon, answers the *English* Sense without Exception; thus you say, *em cima da mesa*, upon the Table; *se ha posto em cima de todo o mundo*, he has put (set) himself above all the World.

C H A P. X.

Of the Interjections.

THE Interjections, we have already observed, serve to express the Passions and different Emotions of the Mind, viz. Joy, Grief, Desire, Fear, Aversion, and Admiration; and often one and the same Word has different Significations, according to the Tone it is pronounced with; *oh se*, oh if! *oxala*, would to God! *hey me*, ah me! *heu*, alas for pity! *mosino de mim*, oh miserable me! *animo amigos*, Courage my Friends, &c. But as they are very easy, and correspond with the *English* Idiom, and as also they cause no Difficulty when you meet them in Authors, they sufficiently declaring themselves, these Examples may suffice.

Of the ORTHOGRAPHY of the Portuguese Language.

FIRST, all proper Names and Surnames, or Relatives derived from Appellatives, are written with a great Character in the Beginning; viz. *Joam, Pedro, Maria, Costa*. As also all proper

per Names of Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, Towns, Mountains, Arms, Rivers, Fountains, Months of the Year, Names of Gods and Goddesses, Nymphs, Furies, &c. as *Portugal, Andalusia, Lisboa, Madrid, Olympo, Têjo, Aretbúsa, Janéyro, Júpiter, Venus, &c.* So also of Adjectives: as, *Romano, Portuguêz, Ingrêz, Francêz,* a Roman, a Portuguese, an Englishman, a Frenchman, and Appellatives of any great Dignity; as of an Emperor, King, Prince, Duke, Lord, Bishop, &c. and the Beginning of every Chapter or Section, and after every final Period; which Rules are also observed in other Languages.

2. Abbreviations common in the Portuguese Tongue are, *V. Mag. Vossa Magestade; V. A. Vossa Alteza; V. E. Vossa Excellencia; V. S. Vossa Senhoria; V. M. Vossa Mercê; O. R. N. S. O Rey Nosso Senhor;* all which are written with great Characters; of which see the Letters.

3. No Portuguese Word either begins or ends with a double Consonant; as *rr*, or *ss*; thus it would be superfluous to write *quall* with two *ll*, because the Sound of the last Consonant is entirely lost.

4. The Letter *m* is always written before *b*, *m*, *p*; as *embraveçar, immovel, impar.* The Letter *n* is always written before *c*, *d*, *f*, *g*, *l*, *n*, *r*, *s*, *t*; e. g. *trônco, pondo, confissão, augusta, enleado, anno, enregelado, insinuado, etenssado;* except the Compounds of the Adverbs *bem* and *circum*, as *bemestreado, bemquisto, circumferencia, circumflexo, &c.*

5. The Pauses in Writing or Reading, are expressed first by a Comma (,) which is used for a Distinction of what we write, and in Discourse to give a little Ease for Respiration. The chief Use of it is after a Verb, with its Cases, at the End of every little Clause, v. g. *quem ama a Deos, ama o proximo,* he that loves God, loves his Neighbour.

bour. It is also placed after a Conjunction before a Relative, viz. *aquelle honradadomente prudente, e sabio, que com todo, &c.* he (or that Man) is truly prudent and wise, who with all, &c. It has also its Place before Adjectives, when many occur in the same Case, v. g. *quem quizer ser nobre, bom, prudente, liberal, &c.* he that desires to be noble, good, prudent, liberal, &c. Also before Substantives, as, *as virtudes morays sam quatro, prudencia, justicia, temperancia, fortaleza,* the moral Virtues are four, Prudence, Justice, Temperance, and Fortitude. It is also used after simple Verbs, without any Case; as *pequy fallando, obrando, &c.* I have sinned in speaking, working, &c.

But it is difficult to explain the Difference there is betwixt a Colon (:) and a Semicolon (;). The Colon is a compleat Sentence, but the Sense of the Period is not quite finished. A Semicolon is a Sentence, but something is wanting to make it perfect; and as the Colon is a Division of the Period, so the Semicolon is a Subdivision of a Colon. This last Period may serve for an Example; but this nice Distinction must chiefly be learnt by Practice. The Colon is used when we quote the Words of any Author, e. g. *dizta Salamao: nenhuma cousa he de todo perfeita,* Solomon said: nothing is perfect in every Part. In the same Manner, when we promise to say something, as *diray ao que maldicár: býva como lobo, mas nam me mordas como cam,* I shall say to him that shall speak ill of me: howl like a Wolf; but bite me not like a Dog.

A single Point is used when the Sense of a Sentence is compleatly consummated; of which Observation will easily inform you,

The interrogative Sign is made thus (?) and is used upon all Questions, v. g. *porque a ti mesmo nam conheces?* Why dost thou not know thyself?

porque

porque nam conservas o-lla? Why dost thou not preserve thy own? After the Sign of Interrogation the next following Word should begin with a great Letter.

The Sign of an Interjection is (1) which likewise requires a great Character after it.

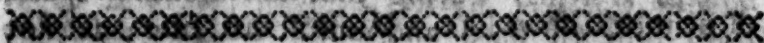
A Parenthesis is known by two Half Moons or Half Circles, which inclose some Words, and exempt them from the rest of the Sentence, *v. g.* *a peccador (se se nam emendâr) sem dúvida sera punido,* the Sinner (if he doth not mend) without Doubt will be punished. So likewise when an Author is quoted;

as *bem aventurada sera a Republica (dizta Platon) na qual os philosophos regnerem,* happy will be the Republick (said Plato) in which Philosophers govern.

The *Ec.* is an Abbreviation of the Latin Words *et cætera*, and the rest, and is made use of to express that the Sentence is not perfectly finished, and that something which is not very material, or obvious to every one, is left for the Reader (or Hearer) to imagine.

The *v. g.* *verbi gratia*, in English to say, and *e. g.* *exempli gratia*, for Example, are applied when something is to be alledged to illustrate what has been said before.

The Asterisk and other Signs we omit for Brevity's Sake, as being what Custom in Reading and Writing will introduce of course.



The ETYMOLOGY. Observations on the Nature of the Language itself.

THE Spaniards pretend the Portuguese is a Bastard of their Language, and endeavour to prove it from History, and the Idiom of the Language

154 *Grammatica Anglo-Lusitânica.*

Language itself, and many Words which appear to be a Contraction of the *Spanish* in some Measure, seem to confirm it; as *pá-sé, cor, dino, leóá, voár, ter, pór, soar, ceár, suar, lex, &c.* in *Spanish*, *palwo, solo, color, digno, leana, volar, tener, poner, sonar, cenar, sudar*, *Dust, alone, Colour, worthy, a Lioness, to fly, to hold, to put, to sound, to sup, to sweat, &c.* But as these Words all proceed from the *Latin*, the *Portuguese* have perhaps as good a Right to say the *Spaniards* have borrow'd them from them, and made them longer, as that they should have had them from the *Spaniards*, and made them shorter. 'Tis true, the *Spaniards* were Masters of *Portugal* for a considerable Time, and probably introduced many of their Words into that Nation, as the *French* have done likewise; but, as upon Account of a Settlement the *Romans* had in *Portugal* as well as in *Spain*, it is more than probable they had their Language immediately from the *Latin*; I don't therefore see, how the *Spaniards* should be allowed the Honour of fathering this Language, although it owes perhaps some Words to them.

The *Portuguese* then derives its Original from the *Latin*; and that it retains a greater Affinity to it than any other Language, is what they much contend for. They can produce whole Sentences which are both good *Latin* and *Portuguese*, and in both Languages express the same Sense; as *durante isto vento tam contrario, tu toleras duras & injustas misérias*, during that so contrary Wind, thou sufferest hard and unjust Miseries; *supplico vos, O Principes, amantes causas publicas!* I intreat you, O Princes, loving publick Causes! If I had not been scrupulous in these Examples, even to a Letter, and if I had thought the Reader would allow a small Alteration, as from *us* to *o*, or from *nt* to *m*, or some such trifling Changes,

I could have inserted considerable Passages of Portuguese all Latin Words. And for this Reason, the Portuguese seem to have retained a greater Affinity to the Latin than any other of its Descendants: Besides, that their Construction is very like the Latin, and that they endeavour to pronounce as they write, and write as they pronounce, are doubtless also reasonable Arguments for the Purity of their Language. But as we have said somewhat already in the Preface on this Head, we forbear saying any more here, to avoid needless Repetitions, and proceed to make our Observations on the Nature of the Language itself.

Such Words as are naturally and originally Latin, ought to be written and express'd in the same Characters; as *terra, massa, syllaba*, except such Words which in their Pronunciation alter their Sound, *v. g.* the Word *choro* in Latin is written with an *b*, and signifies a Choir and Concert of Musick; but in the Portuguese with an *h* signifies Lamentation, and *coro* signifies a Concert and Choir. In the same Manner we are not to write *parochia*, but *paroco*; and *caridade*, not *charidade*; *monarca*, not *monarcha*, and the like, because by the *b* the Syllables obtain a quite different Sound.

When the Latin Letter is doubled, the Portuguese commonly follow their Example; as *aggravar, aggravado; exaggerar, exaggeração*.

The Latin *ti* is commonly changed into *ç, ci* or *s*; as in *graça, presença, doença, paciência, clemência, violência*.

The *c* in Latin Words adapted to this Language, is often changed into *u* or *y*; as *doutor, reitor, perfeito, effeito*, from *doctor, rector, perfectus, effectus*, &c.

As for Words where there is any Doubt, whether the Letter *s* or *z* is to be used, having both the same Sound, they generally follow the Latin,

as they write *uso*, and not *uzo*; *applauso*, not *ap-
plauzo*; *causa*, not *cauza*, and the like.

They generally change the Letters *ph* into *f*;
as in *filósofo*, *ortografia*, *Felippe*, &c.

The Words the *Latins* write with a Diphthong
the *Portuguese* express with a single Vowel; as *E-
thiopia*, *Aethiopia*; *edifício*, *edificium*; *estio*, *estas*;
verdeiro, *heres*; *pena*, *pana*; *seno*, *sanum*.

No *Portuguese* Words end in the following
Consonants, viz. *b, c, d, f, g, n, p, q, t, x*; but
only in *l, m, r, s, z*.

Vowels in general are not doubled if they are
of the same Kind, and belong to the same Word;
I say of the same Kind, because in the Word *men-
tiss* *i* and *y* are Vowels of a different kind; and I
say belonging to the same Word, because when
we say *vendoa* and *amavaa*, for *a vendo* and *a
amava*, the two last Vowels are not duplicate, but
one Vowel is joined to the other, which is an Ar-
ticle; and in *irmãa*, *maçãa*, &c. the *aa* is not to
be considered as two distinct Vowels, because they
soften themselves into one Syllable.

As for Consonants, it is certain that the Let-
ters *x* and *z* can never be duplicate. The dou-
bling of *r* and *s*, the Ear is the best Judge to
distinguish it; for single and double they have
two different Sounds; the one soft and weak, as
in *amara*; the other harsher and stronger, as in
amarra, a Cable. The same may be observed of
the Letter *f*; as in these Words *caso* and *casso*, a
Fork or Flesh-Hook; but as to these, the distin-
guishing Ear and Practice of Conversation will
give the best Rules. In the Word *accento* we easily
perceive a double Consonant, and 'tis not difficult
at all to be distinguished from the Word *acento*; yet
there are some Words, in which Use, rather than
the Ear, teach us whether the Consonants are du-
plicate or no; as for Example, in the Words *af-*

forár

forár, affinar, affogar, to pay Tribute, to refine, to strangle. And it ought to be observed (as above) that in all Words derived from the *Latin*, the *Portuguese* love to imitate them in doubling of Consonants, as in the Words *affinidade, agravar, communicar*; so *elle, amasse, leste, ouvisse, fesse*.

The *f* and *c*, before *e* and *i*, have the same Sound in *Portuguese*, and to distinguish them in Writing, there is no other Rule than that the Words deriving from the *Latin* ought to be written with the same Letters; as *cebôla, cidade, senado, &c.* and not *sebôla, sidade, senado*. The same should be observed also about the Letters *f* and *z*, that though they have the same Sound, they ought not to be used promiscuously; as *mensa* in *Latin* is in *Portuguese mesa*, and not *meza* with a *z*; so they write *casa*, not *taza*.

The *Latin* Words ending in *x* change the *x* for a *z* in the *Portuguese* Language; thus *pax, perdix, vox, lux*, are in *Portuguese, paz, perdiz, voz, luz, &c.*

The *ç*, or *c* with its *Plica* at bottom, is often used for a double *f*; but when the Word is derived from the *Latin*, it is justly deemed a Mistake if you should write *ç* for *ff*; thus you are to write, *passo, massa, professor*, not *paço, maça, profesar*.



Of the PROSODIE, or Accentuation of the Syllables.

THE Quantity of Syllables is either short or long, though some pretend to introduce a Sort of a middle Pronunciation between short and long; which however, to avoid Confusion, we shall take no Notice of.

And

And for the Sake of observing a regular Method, we shall begin with those that have the Penultima in *a*.

The Words ending in *aba, abo, aca, aco, arba, acho, aça, afo, ada, ado, afa, afo, aga, agem, agre, agro, alba, albo, ala, and alo*, have the Penultima's long, except *levado, cagado, estomago, amago, escandalo, bigamo, piramo, &c.* and some other Words derived from the *Latin*, which are short. Also the Penultima's in *apo, apa, aque, ara, aro, arra, arro, ata, ato, ava, avo, axa, axo, aza, and azo*, are long, though not without Exception; as *cantaro, pucaro, liparo, tartaro, &c.* and *concavo* and *bisavó*, which are short.

The Penultima in *e*.

The Penultima's in *eba, ebo, eda, edo, esa, eso*, are marked with an Accent, but are not pronounced quite so long as those terminating in *echa, echo, eca* and *eco*. The Penultima's in *ega, ego, ega* and *ego*, are also long, though not without some few Exceptions; as *corrego, conego, soffrego, pecego, follego, batega, cotege*, which are short. Those in *ela, and elo, ema, emo, ena, eno, epa, epe, epo, eque, era, ero, esa, eso, eta, ete, eto, eva, eve, and evo*, are long, except *prospero* and *aspero*, which are short.

The Penultima in *i*.

Whe Words ending in *iba, ibe, ibo, icha, iche, icho, ica, ico, iça, ice, iço, ida, ide, ido, isa, ise, iso, iga, igo, ija, ijo, ilba, ilbo, ila, ile, ilo, ima, imo, inba, inbo, ina, ino, ipa, ipe, ipo, iqua, ique, iquo, ira, ire, iro, isa, ise, iso, iza, izo, ita, ito, iua, iuo, ixa, and ixo*, are long, except *mecânico, agário, crítico*, and the like, from the *Latin* or *Greek*, and *humido, pálido, torrido, bórrido, pródigo, infimo, anónimo, íntimo, máximo, péssimo, púlpito, vômito, decrepito, espírito*, which are short.

The

The Penultima in *a*.

The Words ending in *oba*, *obe*, *obo*, *obra*, *obre*, *obro*, *oeba*, *ocho*, *oca*, *oco*, *oga*, *ogo*, *oda*, *ode*, *odo*, *ofa*, *ofe*, *ofa*, *ofra*, *ofre*, *ofra*, *oga*, *ogue*, *ogo*, *oja*, *ojo*, *ola*, *ole*, *olo*, *oma*, *ome*, *oma*, *ona*, *ono*, *onba*, *onbo*, *opa*, *ope*, *opa*, *oplo*, *opra*, *opre*, *opro*, *ora*, *ore*, *oro*, *orra*, *orno*, *osa*, *ose*, *ose*, *ora*, *oro*, *ota*, *ote*, *ota*, *ova*, *ove*, *oa*, *ora*, *oro*, are long, except *succabo*, *incabo*, *pirolo*, and *frivelo*, which are short.

Words having their Penultima's in *u*.

Those Words ending in *uba*, *ubo*, *ubra*, *ubro*, *ucha*, *ucho*, *uca*, *uco*, *uda*, *ude*, *udo*, *ufa*, *ufe*, *uso*, *uga*, *uge*, *ugo*, *uja*, *ujo*, *ulba*, *ulbe*, *ulbo*, *ula*, *ule*, *ulo*, *uma*, *ume*, *umo*, *unba*, *unbe*, *unbo*, *una*, *une*, *uno*, *upa*, *upe*, *upo*, *uque*, *ura*, *ure*, *uro*, *usa*, *use*, *uso*, *uza*, *uze*, *uzo*, *uta*, *ute*, *uto*, *utro*, *uxa*, *uxe*, *uxo*, *uva*, *uvo*, are long, except *succubo*, *incubo*, *vocabulo*, *vestibulo*, *ángulo*, *régulo*, *ámbula*, *trémula*, and *computo*, and some others derived from the Latin.

Observations of Penultima's before Vowels.

a before *e* is long, as *sáe*, *cáe*; before *i* short, as *saí*, *caí*; before *o*, and *ya*, *yo*, it is long, except when to the third Person Singular of the Indicative Mood the Particle *o* is added, as *comad*, *bebão*.

e before other Vowels.

e before *a* is long, except in *gátea*, *bóreas*, and in the third Person of the Imperative, when the Particle is annexed, as *mátea*; before *o* it sounds long, except *pátea*, and in the said Persons when the Letter *o* is subjoined, as *máteo*, and in *fínea*, *fínea*, *escórea*, and other Words derived from the Latin; but it is long before the *u*, when the two Vowels melt into a Diphthong, giving a distinct Sound of each, as in *coriséu*, *sandéu*.

i before

i before other Vowels.

i before *a*, *e*, and *o* is long, excepting *espécia*, *séria*, *comédia*, *sciencia*, and other Words from the *Latin*.

o before other Vowels.

o before *a*, *e*, and *u* is long; but before *i* it is hardly perceived as to its Sound, and reputed to be short, as in the Words *roim*, *poir*.

u before other Vowels.

u before *a* is long, except in *cápua*, *pápua*, *in-seca*; before *e*, *i*, and *o* it is long, except in some few Words of the *Latin* produce.

The Accent or Tone of the last Syllables.

First those ending with a Vowel; and to begin with a regular Method, those ending in *a* are short, excepting *tafetá*, *bosetá*, *maná*, *cá*, *lá*, *acolá*, *oxalá*, *pá*, and in the third Persons Singular of the future Tense of the Indicative Mood, v. g. *amará*, *lerá*, *ouvirá*, *rirá*, &c.

Words ending in *e*

Make the last Syllable short, except *galé*, *polé*, *poté*, *maré*, *chaminé*, *loulé*, *pontapé*, *relé*, &c.

Words ending in *i*

Make their last Syllable long; but those that terminate with the Diphthong *ay*, *ey*, *oy*, and *uy*, have their Penultima's long.

Words ending in *o*

Have their last Syllable regularly short, except *avó*, *enxó*, *ichó*, *silbó*, *teyró*, and the third Persons Singular of the Preterperfect Tense Indicative Mood.

Words ending in *u*

Are generally long in the last Syllable, excepting such as have a Vowel precedent to it; for then by forming a Diphthong the Sound is different in the Pronunciation, and the Penultima grows long, as in *amáu*, *leváu*, &c.

Words

Words terminating in *l, m, n, s, z*.
All Words ending in *al* are long, except only one, *Senhal*, a Sea-Port Town of that Name in Portugal.

Those that end in *al* are long in the last Syllable, except *agradavel*, *misivel*, *amavel*, &c.

Words terminating in *il* are long, except *dauil*, *facil*, *babil*, and the like, derived from the *Latin*.

All Words ending in *al* are long, without Exception:

Likewise those in *al* except *consul*, a Consul.

Words terminating in *m*.

The Nouns that end in *am* are long; but the Verbs in the third Person Plural of the Indicative Present are short; and the third Person Plural of the Future Indicative are long, as *amarám*, *lerám*, *haurám*, &c.

Those that end in *em* are short, except some Nouns, *bedém*, *parabém*; also the Verb *tem*, with its Compounds, as *mantém*, *detém*, *retém*, *contém*; with the Words *aquém*, *além*, *porém*, which are long. The Words in *im* are all long. Those in *em* and *um* are also long.

Words terminating in *r*.

Those that terminate in *ar*, are long, except *açúcar*, *néctar*, *aljófar*, *ámbar*, &c.

Those in *er* are likewise long, without Exception. In *ir* are long; such are the Infinitives of the Verbs of the second Conjugation; and here the Verb *múrtyr* is only excepted.

In *or* are long.

Very few Portuguese Words end in *ur*; but those that do, sound long.

Words terminating in *s*.

All Words terminating in *as* being Nouns, in their Pronunciation in the Plural Number imitate the Singular; if short in the Singular, they are so in the Plural; as *casa*, *casas*; *censa*, *cousas*; and if

long in the Singular; they are the same in the Plural; as *cafetá, cafetás; bofetá, bofetás.* The same Rule is also applicable to all Verbs, in what Tense soever; for whatever Letter the first Person ends in, if that be short or long, the second Person will be the same, as *ámo, ámas; amáva, amávas; amaré, amarás.*

All Words ending in *es* in the Plural Number, which in the singular have an *e* short, are likewise short in the Plural; as *tigre, tigres, pádre, pádres;* but those that have an *e* long in the Singular, have a long Termination in the Plural; as *maré, marés; chaminé, chaminés.* The Syllable *es* in the second Person of the Indicative Present in the second and third Conjugation is short; as *escreves, ouvós mîves, tósses.*

Words ending in *is* or *iz* are long, except some Words that end in *ays, eys, oys, uys;* as *cáys, ar-ráys, réys, léys, caracóys, róys, pánfy, azúys,* and the Verbs *amáys, ensináys, diréys, faréys.*

Words ending in *os*, when they derive from a Singular short, the Plural are short also; when the Singular is long, the Plural is so too. All the first Persons Plural of all Verbs are short in their last Syllables: as *amámós, amávamos, amémós, lemos, liamos, ouvimos.*

The Nouns ending in *us* are long, except those that have another Vowel before the *u*, and make a Diphthong, as *sandeu, sandeus.*

Words terminating in *z,*

Whether in *az, ez, iz, oz,* and *uz,* are long, except *appendiz.*

This may suffice to instruct the Reader in the general Rules how and in what Manner to place the Accents or Tones upon Words. We might have said much more upon this Subject, but the rest will soon be learned by Reading or Conversation.

VOCABULARY

English and Portuguese.

CHAP. I.

Nouns Substantives.

Of Things, *De cousas.*

A Thing, *a coisa.*

A Nature, *a natureza.*

a Beginning, o principio.

an End, o fim.

an Order, a ordem.

Time, o tempo.

a Number, o número.

a Place, o lugar.

a Space, o espaço.

a Name, o nome.

a Sign, o sinal.

a Mode or Manner, o modo, a maneira.

a Mark, a marca.

a Kind, a sorte, o género.

a Part, a parte.

a Member, o membro.

a broken Piece, o pedaço.

a cut Piece, a fatia.

a little Piece, o pedacinho.

Nothing, nada.

Matter, a matéria.

Form, a forma.

a Figure, a figura.

a Body, o corpo.

Of the World and the

Elements, *do mundo*

e dos elementos.

the World, o mundo.

the Sky, o firmamento.

the Sun, o sol.

the Moon, a lua.

164 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>a Star,</i> a estrella.	<i>a Fog or Mist,</i> a névoa.
<i>a Planet,</i> o planeta.	<i>a Vapour,</i> o vapor.
<i>a Comet,</i> o cometa.	<i>a Wind,</i> o vento.
<i>Light,</i> a luz.	<i>a gentle Wind,</i> o Zéfiro.
<i>a Sun-beam,</i> o raio do sol.	o vinto gentil.
<i>Darkness,</i> a obscuridade.	<i>a Whirlwind,</i> o pé de vento.
<i>a Shadow,</i> a sombra.	<i>a Tempest,</i> a tempestade.
<i>an Eclipse,</i> a eclipse.	a trabuzana.
<i>the New Moon,</i> a lua nova.	<i>serene Weather,</i> tempo sereno.
<i>the Full Moon,</i> a lua cheia.	<i>good Weather,</i> bom tempo.
<i>the Wane of the Moon,</i> o mingóante da lua.	<i>bad Weather,</i> tempo ruim.
<i>the increasing Moon,</i> a lua crescente.	<i>foggy or dark Weather,</i> tempo nevoado.
<i>an Element,</i> o elemento.	<i>rainy Weather,</i> tempo chuvoso.
<i>Fire,</i> o fogo.	<i>a little Wind,</i> o ventinho.
<i>Air,</i> o ar.	<i>the East Wind,</i> o vento d'Este.
<i>Water,</i> a água.	<i>East-North-East Wind,</i> o vento d'Este Nor d'Este.
<i>Earth,</i> a terra.	<i>North-East Wind,</i> o vento Nor d'Este.
<i>a Flame,</i> a flama.	<i>North-North-East,</i> Nor Nor d'Este.
<i>a Spark,</i> faísca.	<i>North Wind,</i> o vento de Norte.
<i>Smoke,</i> o fumo.	<i>North North-West Wind,</i> o vento Nor Nor d'Oeste.
<i>Soot,</i> a ferrugem.	<i>North-West,</i> Nor Oeste.
<i>a Fire, when a House is on Fire,</i> o incendio.	<i>West North-West,</i> Oeste.
<i>a Firebrand,</i> o tizão aceso.	Nor-Oeste.
<i>a live or hot Coal,</i> o carvão aceso.	<i>West,</i> Oeste.
<i>a Coal,</i> o carvão.	
<i>Sea-coal,</i> o carvão de pedra.	
<i>Embers, or hot ashes,</i> a cinza quente, o borralho.	
<i>Caloud,</i> a nuvem.	<i>West</i>

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 165

<i>West-South-West, Oéste</i>	<i>the Ebb, o vazante da</i>
<i>Sud Oéste.</i>	<i>maré.</i>
<i>South-West, Sud Oéste.</i>	<i>a Shore, o bordo.</i>
<i>South South-West, Sul</i>	<i>a Haven or Port, o porto.</i>
<i>Sud Oéste.</i>	<i>a Gulph or Bay, o golfo,</i>
<i>South-Wind, o vento de</i>	<i>bahia.</i>
<i>Sul.</i>	<i>an Island, a ilha.</i>
<i>South-South-East, Sul</i>	<i>a Peninsula, a península.</i>
<i>Sud este.</i>	<i>a Bank, a ribanceira.</i>
<i>South-East, Sud este.</i>	<i>a Channel, o canal.</i>
<i>East-South-East, Este</i>	<i>a Ford, o vâm.</i>
<i>Sud este.</i>	<i>a Well, o poço.</i>
<i>a Rainbow, o arco-ce-</i>	<i>a Ditch, o fosso.</i>
<i>leste.</i>	<i>a Pool or Pond, a lagôa.</i>
<i>Thunder, o trovão.</i>	<i>a Marsh or Fen, or fenmy</i>
<i>Lightning, o relâmpago.</i>	<i>Ground, terra alagada.</i>
<i>Rain, a chuva.</i>	<i>a Lake, o lago.</i>
<i>a Shower, a chuva de</i>	<i>a Bog, o atoleiro.</i>
<i>trovão.</i>	<i>a Slough, a lamaçal.</i>
<i>Show, a neve.</i>	<i>a Fish-Pond, o viveiro</i>
<i>Hail, o pedrisco.</i>	<i>de peixes.</i>
<i>Dew, o orvalho, rocio.</i>	<i>a Drop of Water, a gotta</i>
<i>hoar or white Frost, o</i>	<i>d'agua.</i>
<i>gelo.</i>	<i>a Bubble, a ampolla d'a-</i>
<i>a great Shower, a bor-</i>	<i>gua.</i>
<i>rasca.</i>	<i>Froth, a espuma.</i>
<i>a Spring or Fountain, a</i>	<i>Ice, a geada.</i>
<i>fonte.</i>	<i>Cold, frio.</i>
<i>a River, a ribeira.</i>	<i>Heat, calor.</i>
<i>a great River, o rio.</i>	<i>the Continent or Main</i>
<i>a Brook, o torrento.</i>	<i>Land, o continente, a</i>
<i>a Stream, a corrente.</i>	<i>terra firme.</i>
<i>the Sea, o mar.</i>	<i>a Mountain, o monte.</i>
<i>the Ocean, o oceano.</i>	<i>a Hill, o outeiro.</i>
<i>a Wave, a onda.</i>	<i>a Rock, a rocha, a penha.</i>
<i>the Tide, a maré.</i>	<i>a plain Field, o campo.</i>
<i>the Flowing, o presente</i>	<i>a Valley, o valle.</i>
<i>da maré.</i>	<i>Mud, o limo, o lodo.</i>

166 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>Dirt</i> , o esterco.	<i>a Watchman</i> , o vigidor.
<i>Dust</i> , o pó.	<i>an Hour</i> , a hora.
<i>a Clod of Earth</i> , o torrão.	<i>Half an Hour</i> , a méya. hora.
<i>a Turf</i> , torram com erva.	<i>a Quarter of an Hour</i> , o quarto de hora.
<i>Clay</i> , o barro.	<i>three Quarters of an Hour</i> , tres quartos de hora.
<i>Red oker</i> , a almagre.	<i>To-day</i> , oje.
<i>Marl, or white Earth</i> , barro branco.	<i>Yesterday</i> , ontem.
<i>Chalk</i> , a greda, o giz.	<i>To-morrow</i> amanha.
<i>Fullers Earth</i> , greda bárro.	<i>before Yesterday</i> , antón-tem.
<i>Heaven</i> , o céu.	<i>this Evening</i> , esta tarda.
<i>Hell</i> , o inferno.	<i>this Morning</i> , esta manhã.
<i>Purgatory</i> , o purgatório.	<i>after Dinner</i> , depois de jantar.
<i>God</i> , Deos.	<i>after Supper</i> , depois de cear.
<i>an Angel</i> , o anjo.	<i>a Week</i> , e semana.
<i>Paradise</i> , o paraíso.	<i>a Fortnight</i> , quinze dias.
<i>a Soul</i> , a alma.	<i>a Month</i> , o mez.
<i>a Devil</i> , o Diabo.	<i>a Year</i> , o anno.

Of Time and the Seasons,
de tempo e seções.

<i>Time</i> , o tempo.	<i>a Minute</i> , o minuto.
<i>a Day</i> , o dia.	<i>a Moment</i> , o momento.
<i>a Night</i> , a noite.	<i>the Spring</i> , o verão.
<i>Noon</i> , o méyo dia.	<i>the Summer</i> , o estio.
<i>Midnight</i> , méya noite.	<i>Autumn</i> , o outono.
<i>Morning</i> a manhã.	<i>the Winter</i> , o inverno.
<i>Evening</i> , a tarde.	<i>Day-break</i> , a madrugada.
<i>a Sun-dial</i> , o relógio. de sol.	<i>Sun-set</i> , o solpoito.
<i>a Clock</i> , o relógio.	<i>Sun-rise</i> , o nascente do sol.
<i>an Hour-glass</i> , o relógio de area.	<i>Dusk of the Evening</i> , o lusco fusco.
<i>a Watch</i> , o relógio de algibeira.	<i>Monday</i> , segunda féyra.
	<i>Tuesday</i> , terça féyra.
	<i>Wednesday</i> , quarta féyra.
	<i>Thursday</i> ,

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 167

<i>Thursday</i> , quinta féyra.	<i>the East-Indies</i> , as Indias Orientaes.
<i>Friday</i> , sexta féyra.	<i>the West-Indies</i> , as Indias Occidentaes.
<i>Saturday</i> , Sábado.	<i>Great Britain</i> , a Grande Bretanha.
<i>Sunday</i> , Domingo.	<i>England</i> , Ingalaterra.
<i>a Holy-day</i> , o dia festivo.	<i>Scotland</i> , Escocia.
<i>a Work-day</i> , o dia do trabalho.	<i>Ireland</i> , Irlanda.
<i>New-year's-day</i> , o anno novo.	<i>Denmark</i> , Dinamarca.
<i>Easter-day</i> , a Páscoa.	<i>Norway</i> , Noruega.
<i>Witsunday</i> , a Pente-coste.	<i>Sweden</i> , Suecia.
<i>St. John's-day</i> , o Sam Joam.	<i>Muscovy or Russia</i> , Moscúvia, Russia.
<i>Michaelmas-day</i> , o Sam Miguel.	<i>Germany</i> , Alemanha.
<i>Christmas day</i> , o natal.	<i>France</i> , França.
<i>January</i> , Janêiro.	<i>Holland</i> , Ollanda.
<i>February</i> , Fevrêiro.	<i>the United Provinces</i> , as Provincias Unidas.
<i>March</i> , Março.	<i>Flanders</i> , Flandes.
<i>April</i> , Abril.	<i>Switzerland</i> , Suissa.
<i>May</i> , Máyo.	<i>Spain</i> , Espanha.
<i>June</i> , Junho.	<i>Portugal</i> , Portugal.
<i>July</i> , Julho.	<i>Poland</i> , Polónia.
<i>August</i> , Agosto.	<i>Italy</i> , Italia.
<i>September</i> , Setembro.	<i>Hungary</i> , Ungaria.
<i>October</i> , Outúbro.	<i>Turky</i> , Turquía.
<i>November</i> , Novembro.	<i>a capital City</i> , a villa capital.
<i>December</i> , Decembro.	<i>London</i> , Londres.
<i>Of Countries and Cities</i> , de terras e cidades.	<i>Edinburgh</i> , Edimburgo.
<i>Europe</i> , Európa.	<i>Dublin</i> , Dublin:
<i>Asia</i> , Asia.	<i>Copenhagen</i> , Copenaga.
<i>Africa</i> , Africa.	<i>Drontheim</i> , Drontheim.
<i>America</i> , América.	<i>Stockholm</i> , Estocolmo.
	<i>Moscow</i> , Mosco.
	<i>Vienna</i> , Viena.
	<i>Paris</i> , Paris.
	<i>Amsterdam</i> ,

168 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

Amsterdam, Amsterdã.

Brussels, Brusselas.

Basil, Basila.

Madrid, Madrid.

Lisbon, Lisboa.

Cracow, Cracovia.

Rome, Roma.

Venice, Veneza.

Belgrade, Belgrada.

Constantinople, Constantinopla.

Of Minerals and precious Stones, De mineraes e pedras preciosas.

a Mine, a mina.

a Mineral, o mineral.

a Metal, o metal.

Gold, o ouro.

Silver, a prata.

Brass, o latão.

Copper, o cobre.

Iron, o ferro.

Steel, o aço.

Lead, o chumbo.

Tin, o estanho.

Quicksilver, o azogue.

white Lead, a alvayade.

Vermilion, or red Lead, o vermelhão.

Verdigrease, a ferrugem do cobre.

Rust, a ferrugem.

Salt, o sal.

Alom, o alume.

Brimstone, o enxofre.

Amber, o âmbar.

Salt Petre, o salitre.

a Stone, a pedra.

a Flint Stone, a pedra de fogo.

a Whetstone, a pedra de sevar.

a Touchstone, a pedra de toque.

Plaster, o gesso.

Lime, a cal.

Sand, a areia.

Gravel, o cascalho.

Marble, o mármore.

a precious Stone, a pedra preciosa.

a Jewel, a jóya.

a Diamond, o diamante.

a Brilliant, o brilhante.

a Rose, a rosa.

a Sapphire, a zafira.

a Chrysolite, a crisolita.

an Emerald, esmeralda.

a Jasper, o jaspe.

an Agate, a agatha.

an Amethyst, a amatista.

a Ruby, o rubim.

a Turkeise, a turquesa.

a Cornelian, a Cornelina.

a Glass, o vidro.

a Chrystal, o cristal.

a Pearl, a pérola.

a Coral, o corál.

Of Herbs and Flowers, De ervaes e flores.

an Herb, a erva.

a Flower, a flor.

Grassy, erva.

Flax.

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese, 169

Flax, o linho.

Hemp, a cânhamo.

a Stalk, o ralo.

a Plant, a planta.

an Artichoke, a alcachofra.

Bean, a fava.

French-Beans, os fey-joins.

a Carrot, a cenoura.

a Cucumber, o pepino.

a Cabbage, a couve.

a Colliflower, a couve de flor.

eatable Herbs, as ortalicias.

Garlick, o alho.

a Gourd, a calabaca.

Lettice, a alface.

a Leek, o porro.

a Melon, o melão.

Mustard, a mostarda.

a Mushbroom, o cogumelo, o fungo.

an Onion, a cebola.

a Radish, o rabo.

Herse-radish, a marreca.

Turnip, o nabo.

Anis, o erva doce.

Baulm, a erva cidreira.

Basil, a basilica.

Borrag, as bortagems.

Burnet, a pimpinela.

Chamomile, a camomila.

Carraways, a caravêa.

Chicory, chicorêa.

Cresses, o mastruço.

Endive, a escarola.

Fennil, o fenolho.

Hop, a pé de gallo, lupulos.

Hyssop, o isopo.

Jessamin, o jasmim.

Lavender, a lavêndo.

a Lilly, o lírio.

Marjoram, a manjorona.

Mint, a hortelã.

a Nettle, a ortiga.

a Poppy, a dormadeira.

Rosemary, o alecrim.

Rue, a ruda.

a Rose, a rosa.

Saffron, o açafrão.

Sage, a salva.

Sorrel, a azeda.

Spinage, as espinafres.

a Thistle, o cardo.

Thyme, o tomilho.

Trefoil, o trefolho.

a Tulip, a tulipa.

Tobacco, o tabaco.

a Violet, a viola.

Wormwood, a lozna.

Corn, o gram.

Barley, a cevada.

Millet, o milho.

Rye, o senteyo.

Oat, a aveia.

Rice, o arroz.

Wheat, o trigo.

Meal or Flower, a farinha.

Bran, o farello.

Pulse, o legumen.

a Lentil, a lentilha.

a Pea,

170 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

a Pea, a ervilha.
a Beard (of corn) a a-
 relta.
an Ear, a espiga.
a Grain of single Corn,
 hum gram.
Straw, a palha.
Seed, a semente.

*Of Trees, Shrubs, and
 Fruits. De árvores,
 matas, e frutos.*

a Bramble, a mata.
a Rose-bush, a rosêira.
a Vineyard, a vinha.
a Vine, a vide.
a Bunch of Grapes, o ca-
 cho de uvas.
a Grape, a uva.
a Tree, a árvore.
a Bough, o ramo.
a Leaf, a folha.
the Trunk of a Tree, o
 tronco.
the Bark, a cortiça.
a Twig, a verga.
the Root, a raiz.
the Juice, o sumo.
Fruit, o fruto.
an Apple-tree, a macieira.
an Apple, a maçã.
a Pear-tree, a pereira.
a Pear, a pera.
a Cherry-tree, a cerejeira.
a Cherry, a cereja.
a Plumb-tree, a ameixeira.
a Plumb, a ameixa.

a Fig-tree, a figueira.
a Fig, o figo.
an Olive-tree, a oliveira.
an Olive, a azeitona.
an Ash-tree, o freixo.
a Beech-tree, a fayá.
a Poplar-tree, o alamo.
an Elm, o almo.
an Oak, o carvalho.
a Fir-tree, o pinheiro.
a Willow, o salgueiro.
a Nut-shell, a casca da
 noz.
a Kernel, o miolo.
a Wall-nut, a noz.
a Small-nut, a avelã.
a Chestnut, a castanha.
a Medlar, a nêspira.
an Almond-tree, a amen-
 doeira.
an Almond, a amêndoa.
a Berry, a baga.
a Date, a tâmara.
a Quince, o marmelo.
an Orange, a laranja.
a Citron, a cidra.
a Lemon, o limão.
an Apricot, o damasco.
a Peach, o pêssigo.
a Strawberry, o morán-
 gam.
a Blackberry, a amora
 bráva.
a Mulberry, o amora.
Currants, as passas de
 coryntha.
a Pomegranate, a romã.
a Nectarin, o durazão.
a Raspberry,

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 171

a Raspberry, a amora do mato.

Wood, o pão.

a Faggot, a feze.

a Wood, o bosque.

a Farnest, a brenha.

a Grove, o arvoredo.

Spice, as especiarias.

Cinnamon, a canela.

Cloves, os cravos da Índia.

Ginger, o gengibre.

Mace, a macia.

a Nutmeg, a noz moscada.

Pepper, a pimenta.

Vinegar, o vinagre.

Frankincense, o ensenso.

Myrrh, a mirra.

Musk, o almiscar.

Rosin, a resina.

Turpentine, a termentina.

Pitch, a pez.

Gum, a gomma.

Of Animals in general.

Das animays em geral.

a Creature, a criatura.

an Animal, o animal.

Life, a vida.

Sense, o sentido.

Sex, o sexo.

the Sight, a vista.

the Hearing, o ouvido.

the Smell, o cheirar.

the Taste, o gosto.

the Feeling, o tacto.

a Colour, a cor.

a Sound, o som.

a Smell, o cheiro.

a Voice, a voz.

a Taste, o sabor.

common Sense, o sentu comum.

the Fancy, a fantasia.

the Memory, a memoria.

Imagination, a imaginação.

a Male, o macho.

a Female, a fêmea.

an Insect, o insecto.

a Bird, o passaro.

a Fish, o peixe.

a Beast or Brute, a besta, o bruto.

a Man, o homem.

Of Insects. De insectos.

a Worm, o bicho.

an Ant, a formiga.

a Flea, a pulga.

a Louse, o pioelho.

a Moth, a traça.

a Silk-worm, o bicho de seda.

a Snail, o caracol.

a Spider, a aranha.

a Bug, o perfovejo.

a Fly, o mosca.

a Bee, a abelha.

a Butterfly, a barboleta.

a Gnat, o mosquito.

a Grass-hopper, a lagosta.

a Wasp, o bespam.

a Viper,

172 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese;*

<i>a Viper,</i> a víbora.	<i>a Crow,</i> a gralha.
<i>an Asp,</i> o áspid.	<i>a Cuckoo,</i> o cucu.
<i>a Snake,</i> a cobra.	<i>a Didapper,</i> o mergulhão.
<i>a Serpent,</i> a serpente.	<i>a Pigeon,</i> a pomba.
<i>a Lizard,</i> o lagartão.	<i>a Turtle-dove,</i> a rola.
<i>a Frog,</i> a rã.	<i>a Ring-dove,</i> o pombo torcã.
<i>a Toad,</i> o sapo.	<i>a Pigeon-base,</i> o pombo.
<i>a Scorpion,</i> o escorpião.	<i>a Duck,</i> a adem.
<i>a Bee-bive,</i> a colmeia.	<i>an Eagle,</i> a águia.
<i>Honey,</i> o mel.	<i>a Falcon,</i> o falcão.
<i>a Honey-comb,</i> o favo.	<i>a Goldfinch,</i> o pintasilgo.
<i>Wax,</i> a cera.	<i>a Goose,</i> o pato.
<i>a Swarm of Bees,</i> o enxame de abelhas.	<i>a Gull,</i> a gaivota.
<i>a Sting,</i> o agulhão.	<i>an Hawk,</i> o açor.

Of Birds, de pássoras.

<i>a Bird's Bill,</i> o bico da ave.	<i>a Jackdaw,</i> a gralhinda.
<i>a Wing,</i> a asa.	<i>a King's-fisher,</i> a pica-peixe.
<i>a Feather,</i> a pena.	<i>a Kite,</i> o minhoto.
<i>Down,</i> a penúgem.	<i>a Lark,</i> a cotovia.
<i>a Spur,</i> a esporã.	<i>a Nightingale,</i> o rouxinol.
<i>a Claw,</i> a unha.	<i>an Owl,</i> o coruja.
<i>a Nest,</i> o ninho.	<i>a Screech-owl,</i> o búfo.
<i>a Cage,</i> a gaiola.	<i>an Ostrich,</i> o avestruz.
<i>an Egg,</i> o ovo.	<i>a Parrot,</i> o papagaio.
<i>a Shell,</i> a casca.	<i>a Partridge,</i> a perdiz.
<i>a Fowler,</i> o caçador de aves.	<i>a Peacock,</i> o pavão.
<i>Birdlime,</i> o visco.	<i>a Pelican,</i> o pelicano.
<i>a Bat,</i> o morcego.	<i>a Pheasant,</i> o faisão.
<i>a Blackbird,</i> a melroa.	<i>a Pye,</i> a pega.
<i>a Capin,</i> o capão.	<i>a Quail,</i> o codorniz.
<i>a Cock,</i> o gallo.	<i>a Raven,</i> o corvo.
<i>a Chicken,</i> o pintão.	<i>a Snipe,</i> o narcéjo, francolim.
<i>a Crane,</i> o grão.	<i>a Sparrow,</i> o perdal.
	<i>a Starling,</i>

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 173

a Starling, o estorninho.
a Stork, a cegonha.
a Swallow, a andorinha.
a Swan, o cisne, o cisne.
a Teal, o marreco.
a Thrush, o tordo.
a Turkey, o peru.
a Turkey-bird, a perna.
a Vulture, o abutre.
a Wagtail, a pizpita.
a Wood-cock, a galinhola.

Of Fishes, de peixes.

a Fish, o peixe.
the Gills, as guelras do peixe.
the Fins, as barbatanas.
the Scale, a escama.
a Shell-fish, o marisco de concha.

a Shell, a concha.
a Fisherman, o pescador.
a Net, a rede.
an Angle-rod, a cana de pescar.
a Line, a sedela.
a Hook, o anzol.
a Bait, a isca.
a Plummert, o prumo.
a Fishmonger, o pescadeiro.
Salt-fish, o badejo.
a Barbel, o barbo.
a Cockle, a amêijoia.
a Cod fish, a pescada.
a Crevice, o caranguejo.
a Dolphin, o golfinho.

an Eel, a enguia, o cyro.
a Gudgeon, o cadoz.
a Herring, o arenque.
a Lamprey, a lamprea.
a Mackerel, a sarda.
a Mullet, a réinha.
Muscles, os mexilhões.
an Otter, a lontra.
an Oyster, a ostra.
a Salmon, o salmão.
a Shrimp, o camarão.
a Sole, a solha.
a Sturgeon, o peixe solha.

a Thornback, a raya.
a Tortoise, a tartaruga, o cágado.
a Trout, a truta.
a Whale, a baleia.
a Whiting, o faneco.

Of Beasts, de feras ou bestas.

a Beast, a fera, besta.
a labouring Beast, o jumento.
Cattle, o gado.
an Herd, a manada de gado.
a Hide, o couro.
a Horn, o corno.
a Hoof, a unha.
a Mane, a coma.
a Bristle, a seda de porco.
a Tail, o rabo, a cauda.
an Ape, o bugio.

174 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

- an Ass*, o asno.
a Badger, o texugo.
a Bear, o urso.
a Beaver, o castor.
a Bull, o touro.
a Camel, o camelo.
a Calf, a vitela.
a Cat, o gato.
a Coney, o coelho.
a Cow, a vaca.
a Crocodile, o crocodilo.
a Deer, o corço, a corça.
a Fawn, o filho de corça.
a Hart or Stag, o cervo.
a Heifer, a novilha.
a Hind, a cerva.
a Dog, o cão.
a Bitch, a cadella.
a Whelp, o cachorro.
a Mastiff, o rafeiro.
a Spaniel, o cão de ca-
 ça das aves.
a Mungrel, o cão mes-
 tiço.
a Dog's Collar, o colar
 do cão.
a Muzzel, o cabresto.
a Dragon, o dragão.
a Drummedary, o drome-
 dario.
an Elephant, o elefante.
a Ferret, o furão.
a Fox, a raposa.
a He-goat, o cabrão bó-
 de.
a She-goat, a cabra.
a Goat-herd, o cabreiro.
a Kid or Lamb, o ca-
 britto.
a Hare, a lebre.
a Hedgehog, o ouriço
 cacheiro.
a Hog, o porco.
a Hogs-sly, o chiqueiro
 de porcos.
Hogs Dung, o esterco de
 porcos.
Hog-head, o porquero.
a wild Boar, o porco
 montez.
a tame Boar, o porco
 marrão.
a Sow, a porca.
a Pig, o leitão.
a Horse, o cavallo.
a Mare, a ega.
a Gelding, o cavallo ca-
 pado.
a Race-horse, o cavallo
 de carreira.
a Nag, a faca.
an ambling Nag, o quar-
 tam.
a Hackney-horse, o ca-
 vallo de alluguér.
a Pack-horse, o cavallo
 de bagagem.
a Groom, o estribeiro.
a Halter, o cabresto.
a Lion, o leão.
a Lioness, a leãoa.
a Monkey, o bugio.
a Mouse, o ratinho.
a Mouse-trap, a ratoeira.
a Mule, o mú.
an Ox, o boi.
a Panther, o onça.
a Rat,

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 175

<i>a Rat,</i> o rato.	<i>a Bachelor or single Per-</i> <i>son,</i> hum (homem) soltéyro.
<i>a Sheep,</i> a ovelha.	<i>a Maid or single Woman,</i> huma (mulher) sol- téyra.
<i>a Ram,</i> o carneyro.	<i>a Man,</i> o homem, va- ram.
<i>a Weather,</i> o carneyro capado.	<i>a Woman,</i> a mulhet.
<i>a Lamb,</i> o cordeyro.	<i>an old Man,</i> o velho.
<i>a Sheep-fold,</i> o corral de ovelhas.	<i>an old Woman,</i> a velha.
<i>a Shepherd,</i> o pastor.	<i>a Lover,</i> o amante, ena- morado, amigo.
<i>a Sheep-hook,</i> o cajado.	<i>a Mistress,</i> a amiga.
<i>a Flock,</i> a manada, o rebanho.	<i>a Bridegroom,</i> o noivo.
<i>Wool,</i> a lã.	<i>a Bride,</i> a noiva.
<i>a Fleece,</i> a vela de lã.	<i>a Husband,</i> o marido.
<i>a Squirrel,</i> o ciúro.	<i>a Wife,</i> a mulher.
<i>a Tiger,</i> a tigre.	<i>a Marriage or Wedding,</i> o casamento.
<i>a Unicorn,</i> o alcorino.	<i>a Kin or Kinsman,</i> o pa- rente, aliado.
<i>a Weazel,</i> a donmida.	<i>the Ancestors,</i> os ante- cessores.
<i>a Wolf,</i> o lobo.	<i>Posterity,</i> os succedores.
<i>Of Man, respecting his</i> <i>Age and Kindred, do</i> <i>bômem, ao respeito de</i> <i>sua idade e parentesco.</i>	<i>a Genealogy or Pedigree,</i> a genealogia.
<i>Age,</i> a idade.	<i>a Grandfather,</i> o avô.
<i>an Infant, o Babe, or</i> <i>Child,</i> o menino, a menina.	<i>a Grandmother,</i> a avó.
<i>a little Boy, a little Girl,</i> a criança.	<i>a Father,</i> o pây.
<i>a Boy or lad,</i> o rapaz.	<i>a Mother,</i> a mãy, mãe.
<i>a Girl,</i> a rapariga.	<i>a great Grandson,</i> o bis- netto.
<i>a young Man,</i> o moço.	<i>a Grandson,</i> o netto.
<i>a young Woman,</i> a moça donzella.	<i>a great Grand-daughter,</i> a bisnetta.
<i>a Virgin or Maid,</i> a vir- gem.	<i>a Grand-daughter,</i> a netta.
	<i>a Son,</i> o filho.
	3 <i>a Daughter,</i>

176 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>a Daughter</i> , a filha.	<i>Twins</i> , os gémeos.
<i>a Brother</i> , o irmão.	<i>a Giant</i> , o gigante.
<i>a Sister</i> , a irmã.	<i>a Dwarf</i> , o pigmeo.
<i>a Father-in-law</i> , o sogro.	<i>an Acquaintance</i> , <i>a Friend</i> ,
<i>a Mother-in-law</i> , a sogra.	o conhecido, o amigo,
<i>a Son-in-law</i> , o genro.	a conhecida, a amiga,
<i>a Daughter-in-law</i> , a nora.	<i>a Woman in Child-bed</i> , a
<i>a Brother-in-law</i> , o cunhado.	Mulher parida.
<i>a Sister-in-law</i> , a cunhada.	<i>a Midwife</i> , a parteyra.
<i>a Step-father</i> , o padraſto.	<i>a Nurse</i> , a ama de leite,
<i>a Step-mother</i> , a madraſta.	a ama.
<i>a Step-ſon</i> , o enteado.	<i>a Delivery at Birth</i> , o
<i>a Step-daughter</i> , a enteada.	parto.
<i>an Uncle</i> , o tio.	<i>a Miſcarriage</i> , o mau
<i>an Aunt</i> , a tia.	parto.
<i>a Nephew</i> , o sobrinho.	<i>an Eſtate</i> , o eſtado, a
<i>a Niece</i> , a sobrinha.	fazenda.
<i>a Couſin-german</i> , or <i>fiſt Couſin</i> , o primo, a prima irmão.	<i>the laſt Will</i> , o teſta-
<i>a ſecond Couſin</i> , o primo ſecundo, a prima.	mento.
<i>a Widower</i> , o viúvo.	
<i>a Widow</i> , a viuva.	<i>Of the Parts of a Man's</i>
<i>an Heir</i> , o heredeiro.	<i>Body</i> , das partes do
<i>an Heire's</i> , a heredeira.	<i>corpo de hum homem.</i>
<i>an Orphan</i> , o orfão.	<i>the Head</i> , a cabeça.
<i>a God-father</i> , o padrinho.	<i>the Trunk</i> , o tronco.
<i>a God-mother</i> , a comadre.	<i>a Limb</i> , o membro.
<i>a God-ſon</i> , o aſilhado.	<i>the Hair</i> , o cabelo.
<i>a God-daughter</i> , a aſilhada.	<i>the Ear</i> , a orelha.
<i>a Baſtard</i> , o baſtardo, a baſtarda.	<i>the Temples</i> , as fontes da
	cabeça.
	<i>the Face</i> or <i>Countenance</i> ,
	o roſtro, a cara.
	<i>a Forehead</i> , a teſta, a
	fronte.
	<i>a Wrinkle</i> , a arrugua.
	<i>the Eye</i> , o olho.

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 177

the Eyelid, a capella do olho.

the Eyebrow, a sobran-celha.

a Nose, o nariz.

a Mouth, a boca.

a Chin, a barba.

the Nostrils, as ventas do nariz.

a Lip, o bcyço.

a Cheek, o queyxada.

the Tongue, a lingua.

the Palate, o paladar.

the Throat, a garganta.

the Neck, o peicoço.

the Breast or Chest, o peito.

the Bosom, o céyo.

a Breast, a mama, a tet-ta, o peito.

the Nipple, o bico do peito.

the Back, as costas.

a Shoulder, o hombro.

the Side, o lado.

the Body, o corpo.

the Belly, a barriga.

the Navel, o embigo.

the Groin, a verilha.

a Loin, o lombo.

the Breech, o cú.

the Buttocks, as nálgas.

an Arm, o braço.

the Elbow, o cotovelo.

a Hand, a mam.

the Fist, o panho.

the Palm of the Hand, a palma da mam.

the Thumb, o polegar.

a Finger, o dedo.

the Right Hand, a mam diréyta.

the Left Hand, a mam esquerda.

a Nail, a unha.

the Hip, a coxa.

the Thigh, a coxa da perna.

the Knee, o joelho.

the Leg, a perna.

the Ankle, o artelho.

the Heel, calcânhar.

the Foot, o pé.

the Sole of the Foot, a planta do pé.

a Toe, o dedo do pé.

Flesh, a carne.

the Skin, a pelle.

Fat, a gordura.

a Bone, o osso.

Marrow, o tutano.

a Gristle, a cartilagem.

the Brain, o cérebro.

a Nerve, o nervo.

the Bowels, as entranhas.

the Heart, o coração.

the Lungs, os bofes.

Breath, a respiraçam, o alento.

the Stomach, o estômago.

the Guts, as tripas.

the Liver, o figado.

the Kidney, o rim.

the Bladder, a Bexiga.

a Tooth, o dente.

the Ribs, as costellas.

Blood, sangue.

Choler, o cóllera.

N

Gall,

178 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

Gall, o fel.
Milk, o leite.
Spittle, a Saliva.
Sweat, o suor.
a Tear, a lágrima.
Piss or Urine, a urina.
Excrements, os escrementos.

Of Diseases and Remedies, *das doenças e remédios.*

a Disease, a doença.
a Physician, o médico.
Physick, a mezinha.
a Surgeon, çurgiaõ.
an Apothecary, o boticário.
a Wound, a ferida, chaga.
a Scar, a cicatriz.
Smart or Pain, a dor.
a Blow or Stroke, o açoute.
Death, a morte.
an Ague, a terçã.
a quartan Ague, a quartã.
a Bunch or Hump-back, a corecõva.
the Consumption, a tísica.
a Cough, a tosse.
the Cholick, a cólica.
the Cramp, a caymbra.
the Dropsy, a hydropezia.
a Cold, o catarro, resfriado.

the King's Evil, as alporcas.
a Fever, a febre.
the falling Sickness, a gota coral.
a Fit, o accessõ.
the French-pox, as boubas.
the Gout, a gota.
a Hoarseness, a ronquẽra.
a Hickup, o saluçõ.
the Itch, a farna.
an Imposthume, a postuma.
a Letargy, o letargo.
a Looseness, as câmaras.
Madness, doudice.
the Measles, o sarampo.
the Plague, a peste.
the Palsy, a parlezia.
the Pleurisy, a pleuris.
a Rupture, a potra.
the Scurvy, o scorbutu.
the Stone, a pedra.
the Small-pox, as bexigas.
an Asthma, a asma.
a Wart, a verruga.
a Medicine, o medicamento.
a Remedy, o remédio.
a Poison, o veneno.
an Ointment, o inguento.
a Plaster, o emprasto.
Blood-letting, a sangria.
Healtb, a saude.
Strength, a força.
Vigour, o vigor.

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 179

Of the Affections of the
Mind, and the Ac-
tions and Qualifica-
tions of Man, *dás af-
feições da mente, e das
acções e qualidades do
homem.*

a Mind, a mente.

an Idea, a ydea.

Memory, a memoria.

*Understanding, o enten-
dimento.*

Reason, a razão.

Judgment, o juízo.

a Will, a vontade.

a Fantasy, a fantasia.

an Opinion, a opinião.

Knowledge, a sciencia.

Prudence, a prudencia.

an Error, o erro.

a Virtue, a virtude.

Patience, paciência.

Constancy, constância.

Charity, caridade.

Humility, humildade.

Civility, cortesia.

*Temperance, temperan-
ça.*

C chastity, castidade.

Modesty, modestia.

Compassion, compaixão.

Friendship, amizade.

Thankfulness, gratidão.

Generosity, generosidade.

a Vice, o vício.

Covetousness, a cobiça.

*Pride, a soberba, a vai-
dade.*

Deceit, o engano.

Craft, a sutileza.

Laziness, preguiça.

Malice, malícia.

Lewdness, a lascívia.

*Impudence, a desvergon-
ha.*

Cruelly, a crueldade.

*Ingratitude, a ingrati-
dão.*

a Passion, a paixão.

Love, amor.

Hatred, odio.

Anger, cólera.

Envy, inveja.

Pleasure, gosto.

Joy, alegria.

Grief, dor.

Sadness, tristeza.

Affliction, afflicção.

Faith, fé.

Hope, esperança.

Fear, temor.

Jealousy, os ciúmes.

Dread, o medo.

Despair, a desesperança.

Courage, o animo.

Cowardice, a covardia.

Shame, vergonha.

Power, o poder.

Help, o socorro, a ajuda.

*a Work, a obra, o tra-
balho.*

Business, negócio.

a Charge, o cargo.

N 2

an

280 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>an Office,</i> o officio.	<i>Of Meat and Drink,</i> dos manjares e do beber.
<i>a Counsel,</i> o conselho.	<i>Meat,</i> comida.
<i>an Art,</i> a arte.	<i>Viſuals,</i> alimento.
<i>Care,</i> o cuidado.	<i>Drink,</i> bebida.
<i>Study,</i> o eſtudo.	<i>Proviſion,</i> proviſam.
<i>Application,</i> a applica- ção.	<i>Bread,</i> pam.
<i>Delay,</i> a detenza.	<i>the Cruſt,</i> a codia.
<i>Heſte,</i> a preſſa.	<i>the Crum,</i> o miolo.
<i>an Action,</i> a acção.	<i>Butter,</i> manteiga.
<i>Fortune,</i> a fortuna.	<i>Cheeſe,</i> queijo.
<i>Proſperity,</i> a proſperi- dade.	<i>Milk,</i> leite.
<i>Happineſs,</i> a felicidade.	<i>Cream,</i> natta.
<i>Miſfortune,</i> a deſgraça.	<i>Fleſh-meat,</i> carne.
<i>Honour,</i> honra.	<i>Bacon,</i> toucinho.
<i>Infamy,</i> infâmia.	<i>a Ham,</i> o prezunto.
<i>Chance,</i> ſorte.	<i>Broth,</i> caldo.
<i>Riches,</i> riqueza.	<i>Soup,</i> ſopa.
<i>Poverty,</i> pobreza.	<i>a Cake,</i> o bolo.
<i>Want,</i> neceſſidade.	<i>Sauce,</i> ſaſa.
<i>Abundance,</i> abundan- cia.	<i>Minced-meat,</i> picado.
<i>Loſs,</i> perda.	<i>Roaſt-meat,</i> aſſado.
<i>Gain,</i> ganho, provêi- to.	<i>Sweet-meats,</i> as confei- turas.
<i>Wearineſs,</i> fadiga.	<i>a Sallad,</i> a ſalada.
<i>Reſt,</i> deſcanço.	<i>the Deſert,</i> a ſobremesa.
<i>Hunger,</i> fome.	<i>a Tart,</i> a tortilha.
<i>Thiſt,</i> ſede.	<i>a Paſty or Pye,</i> o paſtel.
<i>Sleep,</i> ſono.	<i>Boiled-meat,</i> carne co- zida.
<i>a Dream,</i> o ſonho.	<i>a Säuſage,</i> o ſalchicho.
<i>Loathing,</i> o deſgoſto, a adverſam.	<i>Beef or Ox-fleſh,</i> vaca, ou carne de vaca.
	<i>Mutton or Sheep's-fleſh,</i> cordéiro, ou carne de cordéiro.
	<i>Pork</i>

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 181

Pork or Hog's flesh, porco, ou carne de porco.

Veal or Calf's flesh, vitela, ou carne de vitela.

Venison, carne de veado.

a Cook, o cozinheiro.

Oil, azeite.

Vinegar, vinagre.

a Breakfast, o almoço.

a Dinner, o jantar.

a Supper, a cea.

Beer, cerveja.

Wine, vinho.

Cyder, cidra, vinho de maçãs.

a Feast, o banquete.

a Guest, o convidado.

a Table, a mesa.

a Table-cloth, a toalha da mesa.

a Napkin, o guardanapo.

a Trencher, a trincha.

a Salt-seller, o salteiro.

Salt, sal.

a Knife, a faca.

a Fork, o garfo.

a Dish, o prato.

a Pottinger, a tigela.

a Plate, o pratinho.

a Spoon, a colher.

a Basin, a bacia.

a Towel, a toalha.

a Cup, o copo.

a Flaggon, o frasco.

a Jug, o púcaro.

a Bottle, a garrafa, botelha.

Of Cloathing, do vestido.

Cloth, pano.

Silk, seda.

Cotton, algodão.

Velvet, veludo.

Wool, lã.

Linen, lenço.

Lace, renda.

a Garment, o vestido.

Mourning Cloaths, o vestido de luto.

a Hat, o chapéo.

a Cap, o bonéte.

a Puke, a peruca.

a Shirt, a camisa.

a Waistcoat, a vestia.

a Pair of Breeches, os calções.

a Morning-gown, a roupa de chambre.

Stockings, as meyas.

a Garter, a jareteira, a faixa.

a Close-coat, a casaca.

an Upper-coat, o gabiarado.

a Riding-coat, o capote.

a Cloak, a capa.

a Cravat, a garavata.

a Pocket, a algibeira.

a Button, o botam.

a Sleeve, a manga.

a Button-hole, as casas de botões.

a Shoe, o sapato.

a Slipper, a chinela.

a Boot, a botta.

a Spur,

182 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese,*

<i>a Spur</i> , a espôra.	<i>the Entry</i> , a entrada.
<i>a Girdle or Belt</i> , o cingidouro.	<i>a Hall</i> , a sala.
<i>an Apron</i> , o avental.	<i>a Ceiling</i> , o tecto do aposento.
<i>a Bracelet</i> , as manilhas.	<i>a Closet</i> , o gabinete.
<i>Ear-rings</i> , as arrecadas.	<i>a Kitchen</i> , a cozinha.
<i>a Fan</i> , o leque, abano.	<i>a Floor</i> , o chão.
<i>a Glove</i> , a luva.	<i>the Stairs</i> , a escada.
<i>a Handkerchief</i> , o lenço.	<i>a Chamber</i> , o aposento.
<i>a Mantau</i> , o manto, capelo.	<i>a Chimney</i> , o chimené.
<i>a Necklace</i> , o colar.	<i>a Hearth</i> , a fogueira.
<i>a Mask</i> , a máscara.	<i>a Window</i> , a janela.
<i>a Neck-handkerchief</i> , o lenço do pescoço.	<i>the Roof of the House</i> , o tecto.
<i>a Petticoat</i> , a saya.	<i>a Pillar</i> , o pilar.
<i>a Woman's Gown</i> , o vestido de mulher.	<i>a Vault</i> , a boveda.
<i>a Buckle</i> , a fivella.	<i>a Post</i> , o postigo.
<i>a Ring</i> , o annél.	<i>a Lock</i> , a fechadura.
<i>a Hood</i> , a touca.	<i>a Key</i> , a chave.
<i>a Chain</i> , a cadeia.	<i>a Cellar</i> , a adega.

Of Buildings, dos edificios.

<i>a Building</i> , o edificio.	<i>a City</i> , a cidade.
<i>a House</i> , a casa.	<i>a Town</i> , a villa.
<i>a Cottage</i> , a choupana.	<i>a Suburb</i> , o arrebalde.
<i>a Palace</i> , o palacio.	<i>a Street</i> , a rua.
<i>a Castle</i> , o castelo.	<i>a Fortification</i> , a fortaleza.
<i>a Bath</i> , a banho.	<i>a Market</i> , a praça.
<i>a Bridge</i> , a ponte.	<i>an Inn</i> , a pousada.
<i>Common-sewer</i> , o cano do despejo.	<i>a Workman</i> , o obreiro.
<i>a Wall</i> , a parede.	<i>a Hatchet</i> , o machado.
<i>a Corner</i> , o canto.	<i>a Hammer</i> , o martello.
<i>a Gate</i> , a porta.	<i>a Saw</i> , a serra.
<i>a Door</i> , a porta.	<i>a File</i> , a lima.
	<i>a Wedge</i> , a cunha.

a Ruler,

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 183

<i>a Ruler, a regra.</i>	<i>a Pair of Tongs, as tená-</i>
<i>Glue, grude.</i>	<i>zas.</i>
<i>a Nail, o prego.</i>	<i>a Fire-shovel, a paa.</i>
<i>a Brick, o ladrilho.</i>	<i>a Lamp, a lâmpada.</i>
<i>Timber, madeira.</i>	<i>a Candlestick, o candiey-</i>
<i>a Board, a taboinha.</i>	<i>ro.</i>
<i>a Tile, o tijolo.</i>	<i>a Candle, a candéya.</i>

Of Household-stuff or Furniture, de alháyas.

<i>a Chair, a cadeyra.</i>	<i>a Box, a caixa.</i>
<i>a Stool, a trepeffa.</i>	<i>a Coffet or Chest, a arca,</i>
<i>a Bench, o banco.</i>	<i>o cofre.</i>
<i>an Armed-Chair, a ca-</i>	<i>a Basket, o cesto.</i>
<i>déyra de mams.</i>	<i>a Tun, o tonnél.</i>
<i>a Couch, a cama de re-</i>	<i>a Pitcher, o jatro.</i>
<i>póuso.</i>	<i>a Vessel, o vaso.</i>
<i>a Cradle, o berço.</i>	<i>a Hogshead, o quarto.</i>
<i>a Bed, a cama.</i>	<i>a Pipe, a pipa.</i>
<i>Curtains, as cortinas.</i>	<i>a Barrel, o barril.</i>
<i>a Blanket, o cobertor.</i>	<i>a Tap, o espicho.</i>
<i>Sheets, os lanções.</i>	<i>a Cork, o sobro.</i>
<i>a Carpet, o tapete.</i>	<i>a Kettle, o caldeirão.</i>
<i>a Picture, a pintura.</i>	<i>a Spit, o espeto.</i>
<i>a Picture, or Resemblance</i>	<i>a Ladle, o colheram.</i>
<i>of any Person, o re-</i>	<i>a Sponge, a esponja.</i>
<i>trato.</i>	<i>a Pair of Bellows, o fôle.</i>
<i>a Statue, a státua.</i>	<i>a Chamber-pot, o ouri-</i>
<i>a Looking-glass, o espel-</i>	<i>nôl.</i>
<i>ho.</i>	<i>a Privy, a privada.</i>
<i>a Broom, a escóva.</i>	<i>a Wheel, a roda.</i>
<i>a Grate, as grelhas.</i>	<i>a Comb, o péntem.</i>
<i>a Sieve, a panéyra.</i>	<i>a Needle, a agulha.</i>
<i>a Mortar, o almiros.</i>	<i>a Pin, o alfinete.</i>
<i>a Pestle, o almofariz.</i>	<i>a Razor, a navalha.</i>
	<i>a Pair of Spectacles, os</i>
	<i>óculos.</i>
	<i>a Brush, a escova, bas-</i>
	<i>soura.</i>

184 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

Of the Country, *da*
Campanha.

a Village, a aldeia.

a Country-house, a quinta.

a Barn, o celeiro.

a Court-yard, o pátio.

a Field, o campo.

a Meadow, o prado.

a Garden, o jardim.

an Orchard, o pomar.

a Hedge, a sebe.

a Gardener, o jardineiro.

a Farmer, o quinteiro.

a Countryman, o villam.

a Plough, o arado.

Dung, o esterco.

a Fork, a forca.

a Sickle or Scythe, a foice.

a Flail, o mangual de
debulhar.

a Spade, a enxada.

a Wheel-barrow, o car-
reto.

a Cart, a chareta.

a Waggon, o carro.

a Highway, a estrada
real.

a Way, o caminho.

a Journey, a jornada.

a Voyage, a viagem.

a Coach, o coche.

a Coachman, o cocheiro.

a Carter, o carroeiro.

an Axle-tree, o eixo.

a Pole, o timam.

a Wheel, a roda.

a Bridle, o freyo.

a Halter, o cabresto.

the Reins, as rédeas.

a Yoke, o jugo.

a Whip, o acoite.

a Spur, a espóia.

a Saddle, a sella.

a Stirrup, o estribo.

Of Societies, Dignities,

Handicraftsmen, Mu-

sick, and Games, *das*

sociedades, dignidades,

dos artífices, da musica

e dos jogos.

a Family, a familia.

a Republick, a republica.

a Kingdom, o réyno.

an Empire, o império.

a Master, o amo, o sen-
hór.

a Mistress, a ama, a sen-
hóra.

a Man-servant, o criado
o servo, o lacáyo.

a Maid-servant, a criada.

a Citizen, o cidadam.

a Magistrate, o magis-
trado.

an Emperor, o empera-
dór.

an Empress, a empera-
triz.

a King, o réy.

a Queen, a raynha.

a Prince, o principe.

a Princess, a princeza.

a Duke,

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 185

<i>a Duke,</i> o duque.	<i>the Lord Treasurer,</i> o tesoureyro mór.
<i>a Dutcheſs,</i> a duqueza.	<i>a Privy Counſellor,</i> o conſelheiro do conſelho privado.
<i>a Marquis,</i> o marquêz.	<i>a Secretary of State,</i> o Secretario de eſtado.
<i>a Marchionefs,</i> a marquêſa.	<i>a Courtier,</i> o cortelam.
<i>a Count or Earl,</i> o conde.	<i>a Trade,</i> o officio.
<i>a Counteſs,</i> a condeza.	<i>a Handicraftſman,</i> o artiſtices.
<i>a Viſcount,</i> o viſconde.	<i>an Armourer,</i> o eſpingardeiro.
<i>a Viſcounteſs,</i> a viſcondêſa.	<i>a Barber,</i> o barbeýro.
<i>a Baron,</i> o barão.	<i>a Book-ſeller,</i> o livreýro.
<i>a Baroneſs,</i> a baroneſa.	<i>a Blackſmith,</i> o ferrêýro.
<i>a Nobleman,</i> a nobre.	<i>a Maſon or Bricklayer,</i> o pedrêýro.
<i>a Knight,</i> o cavalhéýro.	<i>a Butcher,</i> o carnicêýro.
<i>a Gentleman,</i> o fidalgo.	<i>a Cabinet-maker,</i> o caixinhéýro.
<i>the People,</i> o povo.	<i>a Carpenter,</i> o carpinteýro.
<i>a Stranger,</i> o forasteýro.	<i>a Candler,</i> o candieýro.
<i>the Mob or Rabble,</i> o vulgo.	<i>a Gobler,</i> o remendão.
<i>a Crowd,</i> a multidão.	<i>a Collier,</i> o carvoêýro.
<i>a Nation,</i> a nação.	<i>a Confectioner,</i> o confeiteýro.
<i>a Crown,</i> a corôa.	<i>a Cooper,</i> o tonelêýro.
<i>a Scepter,</i> o cetro.	<i>a Cutler,</i> o faqueýro.
<i>a Throne,</i> o trono.	<i>a Dyer,</i> o tintureýro.
<i>a Court,</i> a corte.	<i>a Farrier,</i> o ferradór.
<i>a Vice-roy,</i> o vice réy.	<i>a Fruiterer,</i> o fruitêiro.
<i>an Ambaſſador,</i> o embaixador.	<i>a Girdler,</i> o cintureýro.
<i>an Envoy,</i> o enviado.	<i>a Glaſier,</i> o vidracêýro.
<i>a Governor,</i> o governador.	<i>a Goldſmith,</i> o prateiro.
<i>a Reſident,</i> o reſidente.	<i>a Grocer,</i> eſpecêiro.
<i>the Lord Chancellor,</i> o chancelor mór.	<i>a Hatter,</i> o chapelêýro.
<i>the Lord Chamberlain,</i> o camarêiro mór.	<i>a Hoſier,</i>
<i>the Lord Steward,</i> o mor domo mayór.	

186 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

- a Hostler, o meçeyro.*
a Joiner, o merceneyro.
a Mountebank, o charlatam.
a Laundress, a lavandeira.
a Merchant, o mercador.
a Miller, o moléiro.
a Mercer, o merceyero.
a Painter, o pintor.
a Pastry-cook, o pastelero.
a Packer, o embalador.
a Perfumer, o perfumador.
a Plumber, a chumbreiro.
a Porter, o marriola.
a Potter, o olléyro.
a Poulterer, o galinhéiro.
a Printer, o imprimidor.
a Rope-maker, o cordéyro.
a Taylor, o alfayate.
a Shoe-maker, o sapateyro.
a Stage-player, o comediante.
a Stone-cutter, o scultor de pedras.
a Sword-cutter, o espadeyro.
a Vintner, o tavernéiro.
a Weaver, o tessedor.
a Workman, o obreyro.
an Apprentice, o aprendiz.
a Musician, o músico.
an Instrument of Musick, o instrumento músico.
the Harpsicord, o cravo.
the Harp, a harpa.
the Lute, o alaude.
a Flute, a flauta.
a Violin, a rebeca, o violim.
a Bass-Viol, o rebecam.
a String, a corda.
a Bow, o arco.
the Bridge, o ponte.
a Tone or Sound, o som.
a Diversion, a diversam.
a Play or Game, o jogo.
a Dye, o dado.
a Game of Draughts, o jogo de tablas.
a Game of Chess, o jogo de enxadres.
a Game of Charis, o jogo de cartas.
a Ball, a pela.
a Racket, a raqueta.
-
- Of a School and Learning, da escola, e da aprender.*
a Master, or Teacher, o mestre.
a Scholar, o discipulo.
Reading, a lectura, o ler.
Writing, a escritura.
a Discourse, o discurso.
a Language, a lingua.
an Oration, a oracão.
a Sermon.

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 187

a Sermon, o sermão.
a Letter, a letra.
a Sentence, a sentença.
a Syllable, a sílaba.
a Word, a palavra.
a Letter, a carta.
a Book, o livro.
a Treatise, o tratado.
a News-paper, as novas,
 a gazeta.
an Author, o autor.
a Title, o título.
a Leaf, a folha.
a Page, a página.
a Pen, a pena.
Ink, a tinta.
an Inkborn, o tintreiro.
Paper, o papel.
a Quire of Paper, a mam
 de papel.
a Sheet of Paper, a folha
 de papel.
a Parchment, o perga-
 minhão.
a Penknife, o canivete.
a Line, a linha.
a Rule, a regra.
a Rod, a vara.
a Study, o estudo.
a Science, a ciência.

**Of Ecclesiastical Affairs,
 das cousas ecclesiasticas.**

a Church, a igreja.
a Chapel, a capella.
a Cathedral Church, a
 igreja cathedral,

an Archbishop, o arce-
 bispo.
a Bishop, o bispo.
a Priest, or Minister, o
 sacerdote, ministro.
a Curate, o cura.
a Deacon, o decano.
a Reader, o leitor.
a Clerk, o clérigo.
an Elder, o ancião.
a Sexton, o sacristão.
a Chaplain, o capelão.
Religion, a religião.
an Altar, o altar.
a baptising Font, a pia
 de baptismo.
an Organ, o órgão.
a Pulpit, o púlpito.
a Pen, o banco.
the Bible, a biblia.
the Testament, o testa-
 mento.
the Gospel, o evangelho.
the Steeple, o campana-
 rio.
a Bell, o sino.
a Church-yard, o adro.
a Grave, o sepulcro.
a Funeral, o enteramento.
a Monument, o monu-
 mento.

**Of Judicial Affairs, das
 cousas judiciais.**

a Government, o governo.
a Court of Justice, a corte
 de justiça.

188 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>a Law,</i> a ley.	<i>Favour,</i> graça, favor.
<i>an Example,</i> o exemplo.	<i>a Gift or Present,</i> a dádiva, o dom.
<i>a Mayor,</i> o alcaide.	<i>Reputation,</i> reputação.
<i>a Judge,</i> o juiz.	<i>Authority,</i> autoridade.
<i>an Advocate,</i> o letrado, advogado.	<i>Honour,</i> honra.
<i>a Witness,</i> a testemunha.	<i>Money,</i> dinheiro.
<i>a Clerk or Secretary,</i> o escrivão.	<i>Price,</i> preço.
<i>a Bailiff,</i> o agualil.	<i>Pay,</i> paga.
<i>a Common Officer,</i> o pregoeiro.	<i>Praise,</i> o louvor.
<i>Right,</i> direito.	<i>Wages,</i> o salario.
<i>Justice,</i> justiça.	<i>a Recompense,</i> a recompensa.
<i>Punishment,</i> castigo.	
<i>a Sentence,</i> a sentença.	<i>Of War and Peace,</i> da guerra e paz.
<i>a Hangman or Executioner,</i> o algoz.	<i>a Friend,</i> o amigo.
<i>a Crime,</i> o crimem.	<i>Friendship,</i> amizade.
<i>Deceit,</i> o engano.	<i>an Alliance,</i> a confederação.
<i>a Fault,</i> a culpa.	<i>Leisure,</i> ociosidade.
<i>Fraud,</i> a fraude.	<i>Safety,</i> segurança.
<i>Theft,</i> o furto.	<i>Quiet,</i> descanso.
<i>Treason,</i> a traição.	<i>Disagreement,</i> discórdia.
<i>Villany,</i> a maldade.	<i>Danger,</i> perigo.
<i>an Adulterer,</i> o adúltero.	<i>an Enemy,</i> o inimigo.
<i>a Cut-throat,</i> o assassino.	<i>a Tumult,</i> o tumulto.
<i>a Thief,</i> o ladrão.	<i>a Battle,</i> a batalha.
<i>a Whore,</i> a puta.	<i>a Combat,</i> a peleja.
<i>Banishment,</i> desterro.	<i>Ruin,</i> ruína.
<i>Death,</i> morte.	<i>a Siege,</i> o cerco.
<i>Infamy,</i> infâmia.	<i>a Victory,</i> a vitória.
<i>a Fine,</i> a penalidade, a multa.	<i>a Flight,</i> a fugida.
<i>a Prison or Gaol,</i> a prisão.	<i>a Conqueror,</i>
<i>Pardon,</i> o perdão.	

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 189

a Conqueror, o vencedor.
a General, o general.
an Admiral, o almirante.
a Colonel, o coronel.
a Major, o sargento-mor.
a Captain, o capitão.
a Lieutenant, o tenente.
an Ensign, o alféres.
a Serjeant, o sargento.
a Corporal, o cabo da
 esquadra.
a Trumpeter, o trombe-
 teiro.
a Soldier, o soldado.
a Horseman, o caval-
 heiro.
a Dragoon, o dragão.
a Centinel, a sentinela.
a Guard, a guarda.
a Foot-soldier, o soldado
 infante.
a Company, a compan-
 hia.
a Regiment, o regimen-
 to.
an Army, o exercito.
a Camp, o arrayal.
a Tent, a tenda.
a Flag or Colours, a ban-
 deira.
Arms or Weapons, as ar-
 mas.
a Club, a maça.
a Sword, a espada.
a Sling, a funda.
a Bow, o arco.
an Arrow, a setta.

Fire-arms, armas de fo-
 go.
a Cannon, a peça de ar-
 tilheria, canã. *a*
a Gun, a espingarda.
a Pistol, a pistolete.
Gunpowder, pólvora.
Shot, pelouros miudos.
a Bullet, a balla.
a Cannon-ball, a balla
 de canã.
a Helmet, o capacete.
a Buckler or Shield, o
 escudo.
a Trumpet, o trombeta.
a Drum, o tambor.
a Kettle-drum, o atabale.

*Of Ships, their Load-
 ings and mercantile
 Affairs, dos navios, suas
 cargações, &c.*

a Man of War, não de
 guerra.
a Merchant-man, o na-
 vio de carga.
a Sloop, a balandra.
a Fisher-boat, a barca de
 pescador.
a Galley, a galé.
a Ferry-boat, o barco de
 passagem.
a Boat, o batel.
a Cock-boat, a barqueta.
an Oar, o remo.

a Waterman,

190 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>a Waterman or Rower,</i>	<i>a Shipwreck,</i>
o reméyro.	o naufrá-
<i>a Fleet,</i>	gio.
a frota.	<i>Provision,</i>
<i>the Fore-deck,</i>	o bastimento.
a prôa.	<i>Loading,</i>
<i>the Stern,</i>	a cargaçam.
a popa.	<i>Unloading,</i>
<i>the Keel,</i>	a descarga.
a quilha.	<i>a Contract,</i>
<i>the Deck,</i>	o contracto.
as cubertas.	<i>Freight,</i>
<i>a Captain,</i>	o frete.
o capitam.	<i>a Bill of Lading,</i>
<i>a Cabin,</i>	o con-
a camarote.	hecimento.
<i>the Helm,</i>	<i>a Bill of Exchange,</i>
o leme.	a le-
<i>the Stem,</i>	tra de cambio.
o espóram.	<i>a Policy, or Writing of</i>
<i>a Mast,</i>	<i>Insurance,</i>
o masto.	a poliça ou
<i>the Main-yard,</i>	escritura de seguro.
a verga.	<i>a Correspondent,</i>
<i>on board,</i>	o cor-
a bordo.	respondente.
<i>between Deck,</i>	<i>a Valuer,</i>
o conves.	o valor.
<i>a Sail,</i>	<i>a Partner,</i>
a vela.	o compan-
<i>the Main-sail,</i>	héiro.
a vela	<i>a Company,</i>
grande.	companhia.
<i>a Pulley,</i>	<i>Custom or Duty,</i>
o carrilho.	o di-
<i>a Rope,</i>	reito.
a corda.	<i>Entry,</i>
<i>a Cable,</i>	a entrada.
a amarra.	<i>the Custom-house,</i>
<i>a Jack,</i>	a alfân-
os galhardetes.	dega.
<i>the Streamer,</i>	<i>Goods,</i>
a bandéira.	as fazendas, gé-
<i>an Anchor,</i>	neros.
a âncora.	<i>Merchandizes,</i>
<i>the Lantborn,</i>	mercado-
a linterna.	rias.
<i>a Pole,</i>	<i>Averidge,</i>
a vara.	a avaria.
<i>the Pump,</i>	<i>Money,</i>
a bomba.	o dinhéiro.
<i>a Sounding-line,</i>	<i>Ready Money,</i>
o prí-	dinhéiro
mo.	de contado.
<i>the Ballast,</i>	<i>Current Money,</i>
o lastro.	dinhéiro
<i>the Compass,</i>	corrente.
o compasso	<i>a Bank-Note,</i>
de marear.	hum a no-
<i>the Pilot,</i>	ta de banco.
o piloto.	<i>Money or Coin,</i>
<i>the Master,</i>	a moeda.
o mestre.	
<i>a Mariner,</i>	
o marinheiro.	
<i>a Passenger,</i>	
o passageiro.	
<i>a Shipwright,</i>	
o architec-	
to de navios.	

Golden

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 191

<i>Golden Coin</i> , moeda d'ouro.	<i>the Post</i> , o coréo.
<i>Silver Coin</i> , moeda de prata.	<i>Advice</i> , o aviso.
<i>Copper Coin</i> , moeda de cobre.	<i>Order</i> , a ordem.
<i>Credit</i> , crédito.	<i>a Letter</i> , a carta.
<i>a Debt</i> , a dívida.	<i>an Answer</i> , a resposta.
<i>a Debtor</i> , o devedor.	<i>a Bale</i> , a bala.
<i>a Creditor</i> , o creditor.	<i>a Packet</i> , o paquete.
<i>a Cash</i> , a caixa.	<i>Effects</i> , effeitos.
<i>a Cashier</i> , o caixeiro.	<i>an Agent</i> , o agente.
<i>a Bankrupt</i> , o quebrado.	<i>a Warehouse</i> , o almazem.
<i>a Banker</i> , o cambiador.	<i>a Pattern</i> , a mostra.
<i>the Exchange</i> , o cambio.	<i>Commission</i> , a commissão.
<i>the Bank</i> , o banco.	<i>a Broker</i> , o corredor.
<i>a Counting-house</i> , o contador.	<i>Brokerage</i> , o corretagem.
<i>a Book-keeper</i> , o caixeiro.	<i>a Factor</i> , o negociador.
<i>a Man of Business</i> , homem de negocio.	<i>Interest</i> , o interese.
<i>a Merchant</i> , o mercador.	<i>a Letter of Attorney</i> , hum instrumento de procuração.
<i>a Desk</i> , o almario.	<i>A Charter party of a Freightment</i> , carto ou instrumento de fretamento.
<i>the Cash-book</i> , o livro de caixa.	<i>a Letter of Recommendation</i> , huma letra de recommendação.
<i>the Clod-book</i> , o borrador.	<i>a Letter of Credit</i> , a letra de credito.
<i>the Journal</i> , o jornal.	<i>Letters Patent</i> , alvaras do Rey.
<i>the Ledger</i> , o livro grande.	<i>a Letter-carrier</i> , o mesfageiro.
<i>an Account-current</i> , a conta corrente.	
<i>an Account-sale</i> , a conta de venda.	

C H A P. II.

Nouns Adjective.

N. B. The Words marked with *c.* are of the common Gender, both Masculine and Feminine.

A <i>B L E</i> , skilful, cã- paz, <i>c.</i>	courageous, animoso, <i>sa.</i>
<i>agreeable</i> , agradável, <i>c.</i>	covetous, cobiçoso, <i>sa.</i>
<i>all</i> , todo, <i>da.</i>	<i>crafty</i> , cunning, astuto, ta. sutil, <i>c.</i>
<i>alone</i> , só, <i>c.</i>	<i>contented</i> , contento, <i>ta.</i>
<i>alive</i> , vivo, <i>va.</i>	<i>crooked</i> , curvo, <i>va.</i>
<i>antient</i> , antigo, <i>gua.</i>	<i>convenient</i> , conveniente; <i>c.</i>
<i>another</i> , outro, <i>tra.</i>	<i>cruel</i> , cruel, <i>c.</i>
<i>any</i> , qualquer, <i>c.</i>	<i>courteous</i> , cortes, civil, <i>c.</i>
<i>bad</i> , máo, <i>ma.</i>	<i>dainty</i> , delicado, <i>da.</i>
<i>barbarous</i> , bárbaro, <i>ra.</i>	<i>deaf</i> , surdo, <i>da.</i>
<i>barren</i> , esteril, <i>c.</i>	<i>dead</i> , morto, <i>ta.</i>
<i>base</i> , low, baixo, <i>xa.</i>	<i>dear</i> , caro, <i>ra.</i>
<i>beautiful</i> , bello, <i>la.</i>	<i>deep</i> , profundo, <i>da.</i>
<i>big with Child</i> , prenhe, <i>c.</i>	<i>delightful</i> , delicioso, gul- toso, <i>sa.</i>
<i>bitter</i> , amargo, <i>ga.</i>	<i>dextrous</i> , destro, <i>tra.</i>
<i>blind</i> , cego, <i>ga.</i>	<i>different</i> , diferente, <i>c.</i>
<i>both</i> , ambos, <i>bas.</i>	<i>difficult</i> , dificultoso, <i>sa.</i>
<i>brisk</i> , active, vivaz, <i>c.</i>	<i>diligent</i> , diligente, <i>c.</i>
<i>broad</i> , largo, <i>ga.</i>	<i>diverse</i> , diverso, <i>sa.</i>
<i>captive</i> , cativo, <i>va.</i>	<i>doubtful</i> , duvidoso, <i>sa.</i>
<i>certain</i> , certo, <i>ta.</i>	<i>drunk</i> , bêbado, <i>da.</i>
<i>chaste</i> , casto, <i>ta.</i>	<i>dry</i> , seco, <i>ca.</i>
<i>cheerful</i> , gay, alegre, <i>c.</i>	<i>dirty</i> , sujo, <i>ja.</i>
<i>charitable</i> , caritativo, <i>va.</i>	<i>each</i> , cada hum, cada hũa.
<i>cheap</i> , barato, <i>ta.</i>	<i>easy</i> , facil, <i>c.</i>
<i>chief</i> , principal, <i>c.</i>	<i>elegant</i> , elegante, <i>c.</i>
<i>clean</i> , limpo, <i>pa.</i>	
<i>cold</i> , frio, <i>a.</i>	
<i>common</i> , comum, <i>mú.</i>	

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 193

<i>empty</i> , vazio, zia.	<i>honest</i> , honesto, ta.
<i>equal</i> , igual, c.	<i>honourable</i> , honorado, da.
<i>every one</i> , qualquer, c.	<i>how many</i> , quantos?
<i>faint</i> , frable, fraco, ca.	<i>how great</i> , quanto? quam grande?
<i>fair</i> , branco, ca, ruivo, va.	<i>jealous</i> , ciôso, sa.
<i>false</i> , falso, sa.	<i>imperfect</i> , imperfeito, ta.
<i>faithful</i> , fiel, c.	<i>industrious</i> , industrioso, sa.
<i>famous</i> , famoso, sa.	<i>intire</i> , intêiro, ra.
<i>fat</i> , gordo, da.	<i>joyful</i> , jocundo, da.
<i>few</i> , pouco, ca.	<i>just</i> , justo, ta.
<i>firm</i> , firme, c.	<i>kind</i> , favorável, c.
<i>fit</i> , apto, ta.	<i>knowing</i> , sabido, da.
<i>foolish</i> , parvo, va. tonto, ta.	<i>lame</i> , coxo, xa.
<i>former</i> , precedente, c.	<i>large</i> , largo, ga.
<i>fortunate</i> , fortunado, da.	<i>lazy</i> , preguiçoso, sa.
<i>free</i> , libre, c.	<i>lean</i> , magro, gra, fraco; ca.
<i>frequent</i> , frequente, c.	<i>learned</i> , docto, ta.
<i>fresh</i> , fresco, ca.	<i>left-handed</i> , esquerdo, da.
<i>full</i> , chéyo, yá.	<i>liberal</i> , liberal, c.
<i>generous</i> , generoso, sa.	<i>like</i> , semelhante, c.
<i>genteel</i> , gentil, c.	<i>little</i> , piqueno, na.
<i>glad</i> , alegre, c.	<i>little or few</i> , pouco, ca.
<i>godly</i> , pious, devout, pia- doso, sa, devoto, ta.	<i>lonely</i> , sozinho, ha.
<i>good</i> , bom, boa.	<i>long</i> , longo, ga.
<i>great</i> , grande, c.	<i>low</i> , baixo, xa.
<i>greedy</i> , avarente, c.	<i>maimed</i> , mocho, cha, a- leijado, da.
<i>guilty</i> , culpado, da.	<i>manifest</i> , manifesto, ta, evidente, c.
<i>half</i> , méyo, ya.	<i>many</i> , muito, ta.
<i>handsome</i> , fermoso, sa.	<i>mean</i> , baixo, xa.
<i>happy</i> , ditoso, sa, feliz, c.	<i>merciful</i> , misericordioso, sa.
<i>hard</i> , duro, ra.	<i>merry</i> , alegre, c.
<i>hard</i> , difficult, difficul- toso, sa.	<i>middle</i> , méyo, ya.
<i>high</i> , alto, ta.	<i>miserable</i> , miserável, c.
<i>hollow</i> , concavo, va.	<i>holy</i> , santo, ta.
<i>holy</i> , santo, ta.	O modest;

194 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

<i>modest</i> , modesto, ta.	<i>ready</i> , prompto, ta.
<i>moderate</i> , moderado, da.	<i>resolute</i> , determinado, da.
<i>more</i> , mais, c.	<i>rich</i> , rico, ca.
<i>too much</i> , demasiado.	<i>right</i> , direito, ta.
<i>naked</i> , nú, nua.	<i>right</i> , maduro, ra.
<i>narrow</i> , estreito, ta.	<i>roasted</i> , assado, da.
<i>neat</i> , pretty, lindo, da.	<i>rough</i> , áspero, ra.
<i>necessary</i> , necessário, ria.	<i>round</i> , redondo, da.
<i>neither</i> , nenhum nem outro.	<i>rude</i> , uncivil, rustico, ca. descortez, c.
<i>new</i> , novo, va.	<i>sacred</i> , sagrado, da.
<i>noble</i> , nobre, c.	<i>sad</i> , triste, c.
<i>none</i> , nenhum, hua.	<i>safe</i> , salvo, va.
<i>old</i> , velho, ba.	<i>salted</i> , salgado, da.
<i>odious</i> , tiresome, odiolo, sa, emfadoso, sa.	<i>same</i> , mesmo, ma.
<i>pale</i> , palido, da.	<i>savage</i> , bravo, va.
<i>pleasant</i> , agradavel, c.	<i>secret</i> , secreto, ta.
<i>plentiful</i> , copioso, sa.	<i>secure</i> , seguro, ra.
<i>powerful</i> , poderoso, sa.	<i>severe</i> , severo, ra.
<i>poor</i> , pobre, c.	<i>short</i> , brief, curto, ta, breve, c.
<i>present</i> , presente, c.	<i>sick</i> , enfermo, ma, do- ente, c.
<i>pretty</i> , lindo, da.	<i>slow</i> , vagaroso, sa.
<i>private</i> , occulto, ta.	<i>smooth</i> , lizo, za.
<i>prodigal</i> , prodigo, ga.	<i>sober</i> , sóbrio, bria.
<i>profane</i> , profano, na.	<i>soft</i> , brando, da, mole, c.
<i>profitable</i> , proveitavel, c.	<i>sound</i> , sã, sa.
<i>proper</i> (one's own) pró- prio, pria.	<i>sour</i> , azedo, da, agro, gra.
<i>prosperous</i> , próspero, ra.	<i>spreading</i> , extended, es- tendido, da.
<i>proud</i> , soberbo, ba.	<i>still</i> , quiet, affogado, da.
<i>publick</i> , público, ca.	<i>stinking</i> , fedorento, ta.
<i>pure</i> , puro, ra.	<i>straight</i> , estreito, ta.
<i>quick or swift</i> , prompto, ta. acelerado, da.	<i>stranger</i> , estrangeiro, ra.
<i>rare</i> , raro, ra.	<i>strong</i> , forte, c.
<i>rash</i> , temerário, ria.	<i>subtle</i> , crafty, sutil, sa- gaz, c. astuto, ta.
<i>raw</i> , cru, crua.	<i>such</i>

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 195

<i>such</i> , tal, c.	<i>wanton</i> , lascivious, lascivo, va.
<i>sure</i> , seguro, ra.	<i>weak</i> , fraco, ca, debil, c.
<i>sweet</i> , doce, c.	<i>weary</i> , tired, fatigado, da, cansado, da.
<i>swift</i> , ligeiro, ra.	<i>wet</i> , húmido, molhado, da.
<i>tall</i> , alto, ta.	<i>what manner</i> , que maneyra?
<i>tender</i> , tenro, ra.	<i>what number</i> , que número?
<i>terrible</i> , cruel, terrível, cruel, c.	<i>which</i> , qual, c.
<i>thankful</i> , agradecido, da.	<i>whole</i> , all, inteiro, ra, todo, da.
<i>thick</i> , grosso, sa.	<i>whosoever</i> , qualquer, c. quemquer, c.
<i>thin</i> , delgado, da.	<i>wicked</i> , malvado, da.
<i>tired</i> , cansado, da.	<i>wild</i> , bravo, va.
<i>torn</i> , rasgado, da.	<i>wise</i> , prudente, c. sábio, bia.
<i>troublesome</i> , emfadoso, sa.	<i>witty</i> , facetious, ingenhoso, sa.
<i>true</i> , verdadeiro, ra.	<i>wonderful</i> , milagroso, sa.
<i>vain</i> , vam, vãa.	<i>worse</i> , peior, c.
<i>valiant</i> , strong, magnânimo, ma, forte, c.	<i>worthy</i> , dino, na.
<i>ugly</i> , feyo, ya.	<i>wounded</i> , chagado, da.
<i>unable</i> , incapaz, c.	<i>young</i> , moço, ça.
<i>unmarried</i> , single, solteiro, ra.	<i>zealous</i> , zeloso, sa.
<i>uncivil</i> , descortês, c.	
<i>unsavoury</i> , insipid, desfavoroso, sa, infavido, da.	
<i>utmost</i> , extremo, ma.	
<i>wandering</i> , vagabundo, da.	

C H A P. III.

Of Numbers, dos números.

O NE, hum, húa.	<i>five</i> , cinco, c.
<i>two</i> , dous, duas.	<i>six</i> , seys, c.
<i>three</i> , três, c.	<i>seven</i> , sete, c.
<i>four</i> , quatro, c.	<i>eight</i> , oito, c.
	O 2
	<i>nine</i> ,

196 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

nine, nove.
 ten, dez.
 eleven, onze.
 twelve, doze.
 thirteen, treze.
 fourteen, catorze.
 fifteen, quinze.
 sixteen, dez e seys.
 seventeen, dez e sete.
 eighteen, dez e oito.
 nineteen, dez e nove.
 twenty, vinte.
 twenty-one, vinte e hum.
 twenty-two, vinte e dois.
 twenty-three, vinte e tres.
 twenty-four, vinte e qua-
 tro.
 twenty-five, vinte e cinco.
 thirty, trinta.
 forty, quarenta.
 fifty, cincoenta.
 sixty, sessenta.
 seventy, setenta.
 eighty, oitenta.
 ninety, noventa.
 hundred, cem, centos.
 two hundred, duzentos,
 tas.
 three hundred, trezentos,
 tas.
 four hundred, quatrocen-
 tos, tas.
 five hundred, quinhentos,
 tas.
 a thousand, mil.
 a hundred thousand, cem
 mil.
 a million, hum milhão.

*Of Ordinal Numbers,
 dos números de ordem.*

the first, priméyro, pri-
 méyra.
 the second, segundo, da.
 the third, terceiro, ra.
 the fourth, quarto, ta.
 the fifth, quinto, ta.
 the sixth, sexto, ta.
 the seventh, sétimo, ma.
 the eighth, oitavo, va.
 the ninth, nono, na.
 the tenth, décimo, ma.
 the eleventh, onzeno, na.
 the twelfth, dozeno, na.
 the thirteenth, trezeno, na.
 the fourteenth, catorzeno,
 na.
 the fifteenth, quinzeno,
 na.
 the sixteenth, décimo sex-
 to, ta.
 the seventeenth, décimo
 sétimo, ma.
 the twentieth, vinteino,
 na.
 the twenty-first, o vinte
 hum, a vinte húa.
 the twenty-second, o vinte
 dois.
 the thirtieth, trintéino, na.
 the hundredth, contélimo,
 ma.
 the thousandth, millésimo,
 ma.
 the middlemost, méyo, ya.
 the last, último, má.

C H A P. IV.

Of Colours, *dás cores.*

Shining, o, a, lucente.

clear, claro, ra.

pale, pálido, da.

white, branco, ca.

grey, pardo, da.

pearl grey, cor de perla.

dark grey, pardo escuro.

Asb colour, cor de cinza.

dark, escuro, ra.

black, negro, gra.

brown, moreno, na, fuf-
go, ga.

Chestnut Colour, cor de
castanha.

yellow, amarelo, la.

Citron, or Lemon Colour,
cor de cidram, limam.

Orange Colour, cor de
laranja.

blue, azul, c.

Sky-blue, azul celeste.

Violet Colour, morado,
da, violeto, ra.

purple, púrpura.

green, verde, c.

light-green, verde claro.

Olive-Colour, cor de a-
zeytona.

dark-green, verde escuro.

red, corado, vermelho.

Carnation, Flesh - Colour,
encarnado.

Fire-Colour, cor de fogo.

scarlet, escarlate, grana.

Rose-Colour, cor de rosa.

Cherry-Colour, cor de ce-
reija.

crimson, carmesí.

Brick-Colour, vermelho
bucarado.

C H A P. V.

A Collection of the most necessary and com-
mon Verbs, *Huma abreviação dos verbos
mais necessarios e comuns.*

TO study, estudar.

to learn, aprender.

to read, ler.

to write, escrever.

to correct, corrigir.

to begin, começar.

to continue, continuar.

to end, acabar.

to do, fazer.

to know, conhecer.

to be able, poder.

to desire or will, querer.

198 *A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese.*

Of Speaking, *dó fallar.*

to speak, fallar.
to say, dizer.
to pronounce, pronunciar.
to converse, conversar.
to be silent, callar-se.
to call, chamar.
to answer, responder.
to ask, perguntar.

To eat and drink, *de comer e beber.*

to eat, comer.
to drink, beber.
to chew, mastigar.
to swallow, engulir.
to cut, cortar.
to taste, gostar.
to fast, jejuar.
to breakfast, almoçar.
to dine, jantar.
to sup, ceiar.
to be hungry, ter fome.
to be thirsty, ter sede.

To go to Bed, *de ir a cama.*

to lie down, deitar-se.
to go to Bed, ir a cama.
to sleep, dormir.
to watch, velar, vigiar.
to dream, sonhar.
to wake, despertar, acordar do sono.
to rise, levantar-se.

To dress one's self, *de vestir-se.*

to dress, vestir-se.
to undress, quitar, deitar os vestidos.
to put on the Hat, pôr o chapéo.
to cover one's self, cubrir-se.
to put on the shoes, pôr os sapatos.
to put on the Stockings, pôr as meiyas.
to wash one's self, lavar-se.

The Actions of Man, *as acções do homem.*

to laugh, rir.
to cry, chorar.
to sigh, suspirar.
to sneeze, espirar.
to blow, assoprar.
to whistle, assoviar.
to sing, cantar.
to command, ordenar.
to obey, obedecer.
to hear, ouvir.
to smell, cheirar.
to spit, cuspir.
to see, ver.
to sweat, suar.
to feel, tocar.
to tremble, tremer.
to cough, tossir.
to look, olhar.

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 199

to pinch, bellicar.
to scratch, arranhar.
to strike, ferir.
to wound, chagar.
to give, dar.
to take, tomar.
to kill, matar.
to pay, pagar.
to owe, dever.
to swear, jurar.

Actions of Love, acções de amor.

to love, amar.
to caress, acariciar.
to flatter, lisongear.
to embrace, abraçar.
to kiss, beijar.
to salute, saudar.
to teach, ensinar.
to nourish, nutrir.
to correct, corrigir.
to punish, punir.
to chastise, castigar.
to touch, tocar.
to whip, acoutar.
to deny, negar.
to defend, defender.
to beat, bater.
to hate, aborrecer.
to pardon, perdoar.
to dispute, disputar.
to quarrel, brigar, liti-
gar.
to protect, emparar.
to abandon, desamparar.

to bless, bendizer.
to curse, maldizer.
to grant, conceder.

*For the Sick, pólos do-
antes.*

to dress, affeitar.
to cure, sarar, curar.
to be better, se achar
melhor.
to bleed, sangrar.
to take Physick, tomar
mézinha.
to purge, purgar.
to cut, cortar.
to prick, picar.
to examine, examinar.
to break, quebrar.
to heal, sarar.

To buy, por comprar.

to buy, comprar.
to sell, vender.
to cheapen, regatear.
to value, avaliar, estimar.
to measure, medir.
to pay, pagar.
to offer, offerecer.
to lend, emprestar.
to borrow, pedir presta-
do.
to engage, empenhar.
to cheat, enganar.
to gain, ganhar.
to lose, perder.

At Church, *ná igreja.*

to pray, rezar.
to preach, pregar.
to baptise, baptizar.
to ring the bells, repicar os sinos.

Actions of Motion, *acções de mover.*

to go, hir.
to walk, passear.
to come, vir.
to return, tornar.
to stop, parar.
to march, marchar.
to run, correr.
to follow, seguir.
to flee, fugir.
to escape, escapar.
to depart, partir.
to advance, adiantar.
to retire, retirar-se.
to approach, chegar.
to turn, voltar.
to fall, cair.
to slide, escorregar.
to hurt, fazer mal.
to arrive, chegar.
to enter, entrar.
to go out, sair.
to mount, subir.
to descend, decer, hir para baixo.
to sit down, acentar-se.

Manual Actions, *acções de mãos.*

to work, trabalhar.
to touch, tocar.
to handle, apalpar.
to bind, atar.
to loosen, soltar.
to take away, tirar.
to take, tomar.
to rob, roubar.
to gather, colher.
to tear or rend, rasgar.
to present, apresentar.
to receive, receber.
to hold, ter.
to break, quebrar, romper.
to hide, esconder.
to cover, cubrir.
to discover, descobrir.
to dirty, sujar.
to clean, limpar.
to rub, esfregar.
to shew, mostrar.
to tickle, cocegar.
to scratch, arranhar.

Of Memory and Imagination, *dá memoria e imaginação.*

to remember, lembrar-se.
to forget, esquecer.
to think, cuidar.
to believe, crer.
to doubt, duvidar.
to suspect, suspeitar.

A Vocabulary in English and Portuguese. 201

<i>to observe,</i> observar.	<i>to unload,</i> descarregar.
<i>to take care,</i> tomar cuidado.	<i>to risk,</i> aventurar.
<i>to imagine,</i> imaginar.	<i>to sink,</i> margulhar-se.
<i>to wish,</i> dezejar.	<i>to drown,</i> afogar.
<i>to hope,</i> esperar.	<i>to recover,</i> recobrar.
<i>to fear,</i> recear.	<i>to escape,</i> escapar.
<i>to assure,</i> assegurar.	<i>to agree,</i> estar de acordo.
<i>to judge,</i> julgar.	<i>to promise,</i> prometer.
<i>to conclude,</i> concluir.	<i>to oblige one's self,</i> obrigarse.
<i>to resolve,</i> resolver.	<i>to declare,</i> declarar.
<i>to feign,</i> dissimular.	<i>to confess,</i> confessar.
<i>to grow angry,</i> agastar-se.	<i>to sign,</i> assinar.
<i>to finish,</i> acabar, finir.	<i>to correspond,</i> corresponder.

*Of Arts and Tradesmen,
das artes e artífices.*

<i>to paint,</i> pintar,	<i>to stay,</i> ficar.
<i>to engrave,</i> esculpir,	<i>to contract,</i> contratar.
<i>to draw,</i> tirar.	<i>to charge to Account,</i> cargar a conta.
<i>to draw (as Painters do)</i> traçar, debuxar.	<i>to credit,</i> abonar.
<i>to embroider,</i> brostar.	<i>to pack or stow,</i> arrumar.
<i>to enamel,</i> esmaltar.	<i>to anchor,</i> ancorar.
<i>to gild,</i> dourar.	<i>to certify,</i> certificar.
<i>to print,</i> imprimir.	<i>to assign,</i> assinar.
<i>to work,</i> trabalhar, obrar.	<i>to seal,</i> sellar.

Of Shipping and mercantile Affairs, do navegar e negocios de mercaderes.

<i>to embark,</i> embarcar.	<i>to confirm,</i> confirmar.
<i>to load,</i> carregar.	<i>to recover,</i> cobrar.
<i>to insure,</i> assegurar.	<i>to accept,</i> aceitar.
<i>to freight,</i> fretar.	<i>to indorse,</i> endossar.
<i>to sail,</i> navegar, dar a vela.	<i>to draw,</i> tirar.
	<i>to remit,</i> remeter.
	<i>to demand,</i> demandar.
	<i>to advise,</i> avisar.
	<i>to order,</i> ordenar.
	<i>to consign,</i> consignar.
	<i>to obligate one's self,</i> empenhar-se.
	<i>to pack,</i> emballar.

FAMILIAR
DIALOGUES

IN
English and Portuguese.

Dialogue I.

Some Compliments

GOOD Morroon,
(Day) Sir, how
do you do?
Very well, God be
thanked, at your Ser-
vice.

Not very well.

I thank you Sir, (a
thousand Years to you) I
am your Servant.

How doth the Gentle-
man your Brother do?

He is in Health; he
is well; but my Sister is
ill of a Fever and A-
gue.

I am glad to hear it.
I am sorry for it.

Pratica I.

Alguns cumprimentos.

BONS dias, Senhor;
como está V. M?
(Vossa Mercê)

Muy bem, graças a
Deos, para servir a V.
M.

Não muy bom.

Agradeço a V. M.
mil annos, sou seu cria-
do.

Como está o Senhor
seu irmão?

Está com feude;
está bom; porém min-
ha irmã está doente
de huma febre e maléi-
tas.

Folgo de ouvir. A
minha me pesa muito.

Sit

Sit down, Sir: Boy, give a Chair to the Gentleman.

Is it not necessary; for I must go to make a Visit to Mr. N.

Is he arrived in Safety, (in Health?)

Yes, Sir. It is Time for me to go.

You are in a great Haste, Sir; stay a while; for I want to see him too, and we will go together.

I will come back; I cannot stay now; good bye, I kiss your Hands.

Acentese V. M. Rapaz, dá cá hum cadeira ao Senhor.

Não he necessario; porque ey de fazer hum visita ao Senhor N.

Chegou ja a salvemento (com saude?)

Sim Senhor. He tempo que eu me va.

V. M. está muy apressado; espere hum pouco; que eu quero tambem velo, e hiremos junctos.

Eu tornarey outra vez; agora não posso aguardar; a Deos, beijo as mãos de V. M.

Dialogue II.

Of rising from Bed, and Dressing.

WH O knocks at the Door? Who is there?

A Friend. Open the Door.

I ask Pardon, Sir; Is it you? I did not know who it was.

Walk in, Sir; you come very early; is there any Body else?

No, Sir? but why are you so late in Bed?

Pratica II.

De alevantar e vestirse.

QUEM bate á porta? quem está ali?

Amigo. Abra a porta.

Perdõe Senhor, V. M. he? não sabia quem era.

Entre Senhor, V. M. vem bem cedo; está cá alguem mais?

Não Senhor; mas porque está V. M. tam tarde na cama.

Betausa

Because I am very
tired with my Journey,
what a Clock is it?

The Clock has struck
Ten.

Is it so late? I was
mistaken in my Reckoning.

You are lazy, Sir;
make haste, and rise
quickly.

Let me alone; I
must sleep yet longer, I
have not slept well last
Night, and my Head
aches.

Don't you remember,
Sir, that you have Busi-
ness to do upon Change?

'Tis true, and for that
Reason I must rise. Boy,
give me my Shoes and
Stockings.

Where are they? I
cannot find 'em.

Go to look for them; I
believe they are under the
Bed.

They are not there; I
don't see them.

Put on your Breeches
and Coat, and put on your
Shoes.

Take out of the Chest
a Cravat and Ruffles,
and forget not to comb my
Peruke.

Porque fico muy can-
sado de minha jornada;
que horas sam?

O relógio deu dez
horas.

Tam tarde he? fi-
quêy enganado nã min-
ha conta.

V. M. He Muy pre-
guiçoso; avie, e levan-
tese depressa.

Dêixeme; ey de
dormir ainda mais, nã
dormi bem esta noite; e
mê dóe a cabeça.

Nã se lembra V. M.
que tem negocios que
fazer nã bolsa?

He verdade; e por
esta rezaõ he mister que
me alevante. Rapaz,
dá cá as meias e os ça-
patos.

Aõnde estãm? nã
os posso achar.

Vay buscallos; crêyo
que estãm em baixo da
cama.

Alí nam estam; eu
nã os vêjo.

Vesta os calçõens e
a casaca; e calce os ça-
patos.

Tira da caixa a gra-
vata com punhos e nam
esqueças de pentear a
minha cabelêra.

Sir,

Sir, ~~nowhere~~ is the
Comb? I see none, nei-
ther of Horn or Bone.

You'll find it on the
Table behind the Looking-
glass. Give me some clean
Water to wash my Hands,
and a Towel.

Here are your Cloaths,
Sir; but won't you put on
a clean Shirt, To-day?

Yes, I did not think on
it, this is very dirty.

I don't wonder at it;
for it is now three Days
since you put it on clean.

Whose Fault is it?

Not mine, Sir, because
the Landress is not come
with your Linen as she
ought.

Go to her To-day, and
bid her come and speak
with me To-morrow
Morning early.

Sir, I don't see your
Handkerchief.

May be they stole it
out of my Coat Pocket
last Night in the Street;
then take Money to buy
me another.

What will it cost?

Senhor, onde está o
pentem? não acho nen-
hum nem de ponta nem
de buxo.

O acharás na mesa
detrás do espelho. Dá
cá agoa limpa para la-
var as mãos, com huma
toalha.

Eis aqui tem V. M.
seus vestidos; mas nam
quer pôr hoje huma ca-
misa limpa?

Si, não cuidey nisto;
esta está muito suja.

Nam me espanto
disso; pois ha agora tres
dias que V. M. pôz a
limpa.

Quem tem a culpa?

Não a tenho eu, por
que a lavandeyra não
tem vindo com a roupa
como devia.

Vá ter com ella oje,
e dizlhe, que venha
fallar comigo cedo pella
menhã.

Senhor não vejo o seu
lêngo.

Pode ser que mō
roubaram da algibeira
da casaca ontem a noite
na Rua; pois toma
dinheiro para comprar
outro.

Quanto ha de custar?

Here

Here is a Crown, and
return me the rest.

What sort must it be,
of Silk, Cotton, or Linen?

Let it be of a fine
Silk, because the coarse
ones are not strong; but
before you go, give me my
Hat, Sword, Can, and
Gloves; for I go out with
this Gentleman to break-
fast at my Uncle's (in my
Uncle's House.)

Now I think you are
dress'd; and, if you
please, we will go to
Change, to see what News
there is, or if any Post is
arrived.

'Tis well, I'll go with
you; but, with your Leave,
we must breakfast first.

Then let us go to a
Coffee-house, to drink a
Dish of Coffee or Choca-
late, and at the same Time
we may read the News-
papers.

I must call, en passant,
at my Uncle's, who, I am
persuaded, will be very glad
to see you.

Eis aqui hum crúza-
do, entornamé a dar a
demásia.

De que sorte ha de ser,
de seda, algodão, o pano
de linho?

Que seja de seda
fina (delgada) porque
os de seda grossa não são
fortes; mas antes que vas
dá cá o chapéo, a espa-
da, com a cana e luvas,
porque eu vou com este
Senhor almoçar em casa
de meu tio.

Agora a mim me pa-
rece, está V. M. vestido
de todo, e se quer hire-
mos pella bolsa para
ver que novas ha, ou
se tem chegado algum
correo.

Está bem, hirey com-
vosco, mas priméiro
com licença de V. M.
temos de almoçar.

Pois vámonos á hum
caffé para beber huma
tigela de caffè ou de
chocolate, e nó mesmo
tempo podremos lêr as
gazetas.

Ey de entrar, ao
passar, ná casa de meu
Tio, que está persuadi-
do folgará de ver a V. M.

Dialogo III.

Of Breakfasting.

WHAT will you have for Breakfast, Sir?

I'll go into the Kitchen to see what the Cook has to give us.

There is nothing but Bread, Butter and Cheese, and some Fruit, as Pears, Apples, Figs, &c.

Put the Kettle on the Fire to make the Water boil, for I will drink some Coffee this Morning.

If you'll eat some Meat, Sir, I'll send to Market for some Veal, Mutton or Beef.

No, Sir, I don't care to eat Flesh in the Morning; Bread and Butter with a little Cheese is sufficient for me.

What will you drink? will you please to taste the Ale or Beer, or white or red Wine? all these sorts are here at your Service.

Pratica III.

De almoçar.

QU E quer V. M. para almoçar.

Hirey ná cozinha para ver o que tem na cozinha heiro (a cozinheira) que damos.

Não ha senão pão manteiga e queijo, e alguma fruta, como peras, maçãs, figos, &c.

Põem a caldeira sobre o fogo, para fazer ferver a água, porque quero beber café esta manhã.

Se V. M. quizer comer carne, eu mandarei á praça por vitela, carneiro, ou vaca.

Não Senhor, a mim não se medá de comer carne pela manhã, pão e manteiga, com hum pouco de queijo basta para mim.

Que quer V. M. beber? será V. M. servido de provar Ella ou cerveja, ou vinho branco ou tinto? todas estas sortes estão aqui ao serviço de V. M.

With

202 *Familiar Dialogue*

With your Leave, I'll drink some red Wine with Water.

Why don't you cut a Piece of Bread? have you no Knife, Sir?

Yes, I have. To your Health, Sir.

I thank you (for you may Tarry.)

I think it is pleasanter to drink out of the Glass than the Cup.

Drink it all, I take it to be good Wine.

I can drink no more, I have drank enough.

What think you of the Wine?

The Wine is very good.

You don't eat.

I have eat so much that I shall not be able to dine.

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

Com licença de V. M. beberéy vinho tinto com água.

Por que não corta huma fatia de pam? não tem V. M. faca?

Si tenho. A sua Saude de V. M.

Agradeço (a V. M. muitos annos.)

A mim me parece mais gostoso beber do copo de vidro que do púcaro.

Beba todo, tenho para mim que o vinho he regalado.

Não posso mais Senhor, tenho bebido bastante.

Que lhe parece á V. M. do vinho?

O vinho he muy bom.

V. M. não come.

Tenho comido tanto que não podrey jantar.

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

Dialogue IV.

To speak Portuguese.

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

Pratica IV.

Para fallar Portuguez.

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

...

on *Nat much; I am as yet
not very learned; I
say they say you talk
very well. I wish to God it was
true; those that I say
are much mistaken.*

*I assure you Sir; I was
old in dress up to*

*I can say. Some words
I know by heart.*

*That is necessary to
begin.*

*It is not enough to be-
gin, but it is necessary
also to end.*

*Speak always well or
ill; that is no matter;
this Language is not dif-
ficult.*

*I know it, and that
it is very useful in several
Parts of the World.*

*Particularly to Men of
Business.*

*How happy should I be
if I knew it!*

*You must study to learn
it.*

*How long is it that you
have learnt?*
*It is not yet quite a
Month.*

*What is your Master's
Name?*

His Name is Mr. N.

*Nam muito; e ainda
nao estou mui perito.*

*Porem dizem que
V. M. falla mui bem.*

*Provera Deus que
fosse verdade; os que o
dizem se enganam muito.*

*Lhe asseguro a V. M.
que mo diceram.*

*Posso dizer algumas
pallavras que tenho de
cor.*

*Isso he necessario para
começar.*

*Naõ he bastante
começar, mas he mister
tambem acabar.*

*Falla sempre, bem
ou mal, isso naõ im-
porta nada; esta lingua
naõ he mui difficul-
tosa.*

*Eu o sey, e que he
mui util em diferentes
partes do mundo.*

*Particularmente a ho-
mens de negocio.*

*O que seria eu diso-
se a soberania?*

*Ha de estudar para
sabella.*

*Quanto tempo ha que
V. M. tem apreendido?*

*Naõ ha ainda hum
mez.*

*Como se chama o seu
mestre.*

Se chama o Senhor N.

I have

I have known him
a long Time; he has
taught several of my
Friends. Doth he not tell
you that you must speak
Portuguese?

Yes, Sir, he tells it me
often.

For why don't you
speak then?

With whom should I
speak?

With those who speak
to you.

I would fain speak, but
I dare not.

You must not be timo-
rous; but boldly speak,
well or ill.

Eu o conheço muito
tempo há; tem ensi-
nado a muitos dos meus
amigos: Nam lhe diz a
V. M. que ha mister
fallar Portuguez?

Si Senhor mó diz
muitas vezes.

Por que rezão então
não falla V. M?

Com quem fallaria
eu?

Com os que lhe fal-
larem a V. M.

Eu quizera fallar po-
rem não me atrevo.

V. M. não deve ser
medroso; mas ha de fal-
lar intrepidamente bem
ou roim (mál.)

Dialogue V.

Of the Weather.

WHAT Weather
is it?

It is good Weather. It
is bad Weather.

Is it cold? Is it
warm?

The Weather is tem-
perate; neither cold nor
hot.

Doth it rain?

No, for the sky is clear
(serene.)

Pratica V.

Dó Tempo.

QUE tempo faz?

Faz bom tempo.

Faz tempo roim.

Faz frio? Faz ca-
lor?

O tempo está tem-
perado; nem frio nem
quente.

Chove?

Naõ, porque o céu
está claro (sereno.)

The Weather is changed. Yesterday the Sky was very cloudy and rainy.

But as the Wind is not changed, I fear we shall have Rain.

It will not rain To-day.

I believe it will thunder and lighten.

That may be; but I am sure it will not snow.

For certain; 'tis more probable that it will hail.

You have a great Cold, Sir.

I have had this Cold this Fortnight.

I don't wonder; it is a very common Thing, and the Fruit of the Season.

What shall we do to pass the Time till Dinner?

Let us take a little Walk.

With all my Heart. I consent; but whither shall we go?

Let us go to walk in the Garden.

Let us go; but see first if the Key is in the Door.

O tempo está mudado; ontem o céu estava muy nevçada, e chuvoso.

Más como o vento não está mudado recéo teremos chuva.

Naõ choverá oje.

Creio que avera trovada e relámpagos.

Isso pode ser (isso si) porem estóu persuadido que naõ nevará.

Por certo; he mais provavel que ha de pedriscar.

V. M. está muito refriado.

Tive este frio quinze dias ha.

Naõ me admiro; he cousa mui commúa, e a fruta da estação.

Que faremos para passar o tempo até o jantar?

Vámonos passear hum pouco.

De todo meu coração. Eu consinto; mas onde hemos de hir?

Vámonos passear no jardim.

Vamos; mas veja primeiro se a chave, está na porta.

Yes it is, but I cannot open the Door, the Key is rusty.

Let me see; if you turn it that Way you'll break it.

What think you of the Garden? Is it not fine and pleasant?

Yes, Sir, these Shades and Arbours look very beautiful.

Let us walk in that Walk, where it is not so hot.

This Walk is beautify'd with a thousand various kinds of Flowers.

I think the Roses, with the Tulips and the Ranunculusses, the Carnations and Lilies, charm the Eye with the Briskness of their Colour.

This Place is a Paradise on Earth.

Gather any of these Flowers, if you please, to make a Nosegay.

No, Sir, it is enough for me to smell them here, and that I have the Pleasure of seeing them in their Spring.

This is my Pastime when I am alone.

Si, esta, podem não posso abrir a porta; a chave esta ferrugenta.

Diexama ver; se V. M. a vira por esta parte, a quebrará.

Como lhe parece o jardim? não he lindo e prazentêiro?

Si Senhor estes arvoredos e ramados tem bellissima vista.

Passemos naquelle passeio, aonde não faz tanta calma.

Este passeio está rodeado com mil varios generos de flores.

A mim me parece que as rosas, com as tulipas e os renúnculos com os cravos e lirios encantaõ os olhos com a viveza de suas cores brilhantes.

Este lugar he hum Paraíso terreal.

Colha V. M. quaesquer destas flores se quizer, para fazer hum ramalhete.

Não Senhor, basta para mim que as cheiro aqui, e que tenho o gosto de vellas na sua primavera.

Este he o meu passatempo quando estou sozinho.

I must take my Leave
of you, Sir; I have some-
thing to do at Home that
cannot be excused.

That cannot be; out of
Civility you ought to dine
with me.

With your leave, Sir,
I must go, for the Business
is very urging; another
Time I will accept your
Favour.

Ey de despedirme de
V. M. tenho que fazer
em casa que não se póde
excusar.

Isso não se ha de sof-
frer; em cortesia ha de
jantar comigo.

Com licença de V. M.
ey de ir, pois o negocio
he muy preciso; para
outra vez accitaei o seu
favór.

Dialogue VI.

Of Dinner.

I Believe it is near Din-
ner-time; let us go
Home.

I agree, for I am hun-
gry. Here, Boy, go see if
Dinner be ready.

I go, Sir, but I believe
it is yet early.

Lay the Cloth, and
bring the Salt-seller, with
clean Plates and Napkins.

Bring here Knives and
Forks and Spoons, and
let the Soup come upon the
Table. Sit down, Sir,

and let us use (let there be)
no Ceremonies.

This is my favourite
Dish (greatest Dainty) I

Pratica VI.

Do jantar.

CRéyo que serão
horas de jantar, va-
mos pera casa.

Eu consinto, porque
tenho fome.

O rapaz, vay ver se o
jantar está feito.

Eu vou, Senhor, mas
créyo que ainda he cedo.

Põem a mesa, e tráz
o saleiro com pratos
e guardanapos limpos.

Dá cá facas, garfos, e
colheres, e venham as
sopas sobre a mesa. A-

centese V. M. e não
aja cerimonia.

Isso he o meu mayór
regalo, paraceme saõ

think it is good and well seasoned.

These Turnips are delicious, and the Carrots with the Cabbage are not bad.

They cannot be better.

Be pleased to help yourself to some Beef; I believe it is well roasted.

I would rather have boiled Mutton with Spinage.

John, take away this Plate, and bring something else to Table.

It is coming, Sir, the Cook is taking it up, and will send it presently.

Do you like Wood-Pigeons? Now is their Season, and they are very fat.

I know it very well, Sir, but I had rather have a Leg of the Turkey, or a Wing of the Goose or Capon.

How do you like this Fish? Help yourself to some Sturgeon; there stand the Crewets, with Oil and Vinegar, and there is melted Butter in another Plate.

bóas e bem temperadas.

Estes nabos são regalados, e as cenouras com a couve não são maas.

Naõ podem ser melhores.

Seja V. M. servido de partir para si da vaca! crêyo que está bem assada.

Antes queria do carneiro, cozido com espinafres.

O Joaõ tira este preto, e venha máis que comer á mesa.

Ja vem Senhor o cozinheiro está tirandoo, e logo o mandará.

Gosta V. M. daquellas rôlas? agora he seu tempo dellas, e são bem gordas.

Beim o sey Senhor, más antes quero a perna do Perú, ou a aza do pato ou capão.

Como lhe parece este peixe? parta V. M. do peixe solha; allí estão as galhetas com azeite e vinagre, e noutro prato tem manteiga derretida.

'Tis a good Fish, and
it looks white like Veal.

Shall I help you to some
of the Turbet? It is very
fresh and fat, and in the
Opinion of most, is no con-
temptible Fish.

Lord, Sir, it is one of
the best that swims, and
so well dress'd, that it
tempts (opens) my Appe-
tite.

Fill the Gentleman
some Wine; they used to
say in former Times, that
Fish without Wine is Poi-
son.

Is there any Snow in
the House? If not, put
some Wine in the Well to
cool.

There is, Sir; I bought
two Pounds To-day, and
there are two Bottles of
Wine cooling.

Fill some cool Wine and
Water.

If you please, Sir, I'll
send your Boy to the
Water-side to see for a
Boat.

What for? Whither
will ye go? It is late,
I believe no Boat will be
found.

He hum bom peixe
e parece alvo como vi-
tela.

Quer que eu parta
para V. M. do rodova-
lho? bem fresco he e
gordo, e no parecer co-
mum, não he péixe des-
prezível.

Oh Senhor, he hum
dos melhores que náda,
e de tal modo guisado,
que me abre a vontade
de comer.

Enche vinho ao Sen-
hor; foy dito nós tem-
pos antepassados, que o
péixe sem vinho he pe-
çonha.

Ha algũa neve em
câsa? se não ouver, me-
te o vinho no poço para
esfriar.

Ha Senhor; oje com-
préy dous arrateis, e es-
tamse esfriando duas
garrafas de vinho.

Enche vinho frio com
agoa serenada.

Se V. M. for servi-
do mandaréy o rapaz á
praya buscar hum batel
(fragata.)

Para que? adónde vay
V. M? já he tarde, creyo
que não se achará batel
(fragata.)

Let him go to see, I must go on the other Side of the Water.

If your Business is not very pressing, stay till To-morrow, and I will wait on you.

I will stay with all my Heart, but we must know what o'Clock the Tide serves.

The Tide begins to flow To-morrow Morning, and the Watermen say, it will be low Water at Five o'Clock in the Morning.

Very well; we'll take Boat at Six, and with a favourable Wind we shall be at N. by Eight.

Boy, go see if there be any Thing in the House to carry with us for our Journey.

Yes, Sir, I have already put into the Boat two cold roasted Fowls, a Couple of Bottles of Wine, and all other Necessaries.

Bring the Fruit to the Table, and if there is any Thing else of a Desert, to make up a small Dinner.

Taste these Grapes; they are the first of the Season (Year,) and these

Que va ver; pois hey de ir á banda da-lém da agoa.

Se o negocio não for muito apressado, espere até menhã e acompanharey a V. M.

Esperarey de boa mente, mas avemos de saber a que horas serve a maré.

Começara a encherse a maré a menhã, pella menhã e dizem os barqueiros que ás cinco horas de menhã estará vazia.

Bellamente, embarcaremos ás seis horas, e com o vento em popa estaremos á N. ás oito.

O rapaz, vay ver se ha alguma cousa na casa para a nossa viagem.

Si henhor, ja meti na fragata (batel) duas frangas assadas frias, duas canécas de vinho, com todo o mais necessario.

Venha a frúita para a mesa, e se ouver alguma cousa mais de sobremesa, para acabar hum jantar limitado.

Prove V. M. aquellas uvas; são as primeiras do anno, e as maçãs
Apples

*Apples and Nuts have
now only their natural
Taste.*

*If you want any Thing
else, command as if you
were in your own House
(at Home.)*

*Nothing more, I hum-
bly thank you, Sir; I have
eat enough.*

*If you please to sleep
after Dinner, here you
have a fresh retiring Room
with a Couch.*

*e nozes agora só tem seu
gosto natural.*

*Se V. M. quizer algu-
ma coisa mais, mande
como se estivesse na sua
própria casa.*

*Nada mais, viva V. M.
mille annos; já comi bas-
tante.*

*Querendo V. M. dor-
mir a festa depois de
jantar, eis aqui huma
câmara de fresquidão
com huma caminha.*

Dialogue VII.

*Of a young Woman,
and what News passes.*

SEE there a handsome
Damsel, or young
Woman.

She is very well made.

*She has a beautiful
Face.*

Do you know her?

*No, I do not know her:
She has fine Eyes.*

*She walks very grace-
fully.*

*And she is very well
dressed too.*

*Yes, and I believe she
must be a Person of Dis-
tinction.*

Pratica VII.

*De huma moça, e do que
se passa de novo.*

EIS aqui huma fer-
mosa donzella, ou
moça.

He muy bem feita.

*Tem huma bella ca-
ra.*

V. M. a conhece?

*Não a conheço; tem
os olhos bellos.*

*Anda muy graciosa-
mente.*

*E tambem está muy
bem vestida.*

*Si e creyo eu que he
huma pessoa de destina-
ção*

That

That may be; what say you, Sir, should you not be happy with such a Wife?

Yes, if I had a good deal of Money with her.

You are too interested; the enjoying so fine a Wife is worth a Fortune.

I am not of that Opinion; but let us drop that Discourse. What News is there To-day? Do you know no News?

I have heard nothing.

I have read the Dutch Gazette, which speaks of nothing but War; and they write from Paris, they expect hourly News of some Rencontres between the French and the Imperialists.

What do they say of the Princes of the North? How go the Affairs between the King of Poland and the King of Prussia?

The Reports are various in all Places; some say they are in good Friendship, others think they are jealous of each other.

Isso pode ser; que diz V. M. não seria ditoso com tal mulher?

Sim se tivera muito dinheiro com ella.

V. M. he demasiado interessado; o gozar humma tal mulher val hum dote.

Não sou desta opinião; mas deixemos este discurso. Que novas ha oje? não sabe V. M. nada de novo?

Não tenho ouvido nada.

Eu tenho lido a gazeta d'Ollanda, que não falla fenaõ de guerra; e escrevem de Paris, que todas as horas estam esperando novas de algum encontro entre o Francezes e as forças do Imperio.

Que dizem dos principes do Norte? como vay o negocio entre o rey de Polonha, e o rey de Prussia?

Os rumores são vários em todas as partes; huns dizem que estão em boa amizade; outros cuidam que estão ciolos hum do outro.

*Be it as it will, the
supreme Government is
still the same, and there
is a great deal of Truth
in that old Saying, That
very often a good War
makes an advantageous
and lasting Peace.*

*They write from Spain
that the Spanish Fleet is
ready to sail.*

*Their Preparations
make a great Noise in the
World; they have Mari-
ners, Ammunition, and
Ships enough; but it is
said they want Money.*

*Others say the Expe-
dition is deferred till next
Spring, for other political
Reasons.*

*We must leave those
Things to Time, which
clears up all Doubts.*

*Seja o que for, ainda
Deos esta onde estava,
e he muita verdade na-
quella ditto antigo, que
muitas vezes socede que
a boa guerra faz huma
boa e durante paz.*

*Escrevem de Espan-
ha, que a frota Espan-
hola está pronta para na-
vegar.*

*As suas preparaçõs
rugem muito no mun-
do; tem marinheýros,
provimto de guerra, e
naviós bastantes, porein
se diz que lhes falta
dinheiro.*

*Outros dizem, que a
expedição se pospoem
pelo verão proximo por
rezoens politicas.*

*Temos de deixár isso
ao tempo que aclara to-
das as dúvidas.*

Dialogue VIII.

*To enquire about a
Person.*

WHO is that Gen-
tleman that spoke
to you just now?

He is a German.

Pratica VIII.

*Para inquerir sobre huma
pessoa.*

QUEM he esse fi-
dalgo que agora
lhe fallava?

He hum Alemão.

I thought

210 Familiar Dialogues

I thought he was an Englishman. Eu cuidava que era Ingrez.

No, Sir, he is from Vienna. Não Senhor, he de Vienna.

He speaks very good Portuguese. Falla muy bem Portuguez.

He pronounces it like one born and educated at Lisbon. O pronuncia como hum nacido e criado em Lisboa.

Has he been long in Portugal? Esteve muito tempo em Portugal?

No more than two Years. Não mais que dous annos.

I am surprized he learnt so much in so little Time. Me espanto que tem aprendido tanto, em tam pouco tempo.

He has the Advantage of knowing Latin well, and he understands the Grammar perfectly. Tem a ventagem de saber bem o Latim, e entende a grammatica perfeitamente.

In short, you say he is a Scholar, and I see by his Mien, that he is an accomplished Gentleman. Em curto, V. M. diz que he docto, e eu vejo por sua apparencia exterior que he hum fidalgo aperfeiçoado.

Your Opinion is very just, and I always found him such. A sua opiniao de V. M. he justa, e eu o achei sempre tal.

He is of a genteel Behaviour, and a polite, complaisant, handsome young Man. He muy gentil na conversação, e hum mui polido, cortez, e feroso moço.

You speak so favourably of him, that, were he a Woman, I should think you were in love with him. V. M. falla d'elle tam favoravelmente, que se fosse mulher, creia eu que estivesse enamorado d'elle.

You

You joke, Sir; but I must own I have such an Esteem for him, that I should be obliged to you if you would do me the Favour to procure me his Acquaintance.

If you will, we will To-morrow go to his Lodging together.

Where doth he lodge?

Not far off; in New-Street.

'Tis very well: Good Night, Sir.

I thank you: Farewel, Sir.

I kiss your Hands: I wish you well Home.

V. M. zomba; podem ey de confessar tenho tanta reverencia por elle, que tivera muita obrigacão a V. M. se quizera fazerme o favor de procurar-me sua amizade.

Se V. M. quizer, haremos amenhaã juntos a sua pousada.

Onde se hospeda?

Naõ muy longe daqui, na Rua nova.

Estã bem: Boas noites Senhor.

Agradeço a V. M. a Deos Senhor.

Beijo as mãõs de V. M. Chegue com bem a sua casa.

Dialogue IX.

For to write.

GIVE me a Sheet of Paper, a Pen and Ink.

Go into my Closet, you will find there on the Table what you want.

I see no Pens.

There are a great many in the Inkborn.

They are not good.

Pratica IX.

Para escrever.

DA cá huma folha de papel, huma penna e tinta.

Entre em minha recâmara e achará V. M. na mesa o que quizer.

Naõ vejo pennas.

Ha muitas no tinteiro.

Naõ valem nada. Naõ sãõ boas.

Here

Here are some others.

They are not cut.

Where is your Pen-knife?

Do you know how to cut Pens?

This is not bad.

Whilst I finish this Letter, be so kind as to fold up that Packet.

What Seal must I put?

Seal it with my Coat of Arms, or my Cypher.

What Seal-wax shall it be?

'Tis no matter; take of the red or the black, which you please.

Have you put the Date?

I think I have; but I am not sure whether I have signed or no.

What Day of the Month is it?

'Tis the twentieth Day of the Month.

Put the Superscription.

There is no Sand here.

There is some in the Sand-box.

*Look, here is your Ser-
vant; will you have him
carry the Letters to the
Post?*

Eis aqui outras.

Naõ estão cortadas.

*Onde está o seu cani-
vete?*

*Sabe V. M. cortar
penas?*

Esta naõ he má.

*Entre tanto que aca-
bo eu esta carta façame
V. M. a graça de dobrar
este paquete.*

*Que sello tenho de
pôr?*

*Selleo com as minhas
armas, ou cifra.*

Que lacre ha de ser?

*Naõ importa nada;
tome V. M. dó verme-
lho ou negro; o que
quiser.*

*Tem V. M. posto a
data?*

*Créo que si, mas naõ
estou certo se tenho fir-
mado ou naõ.*

*A quantos do mez
estamos oje?*

*Estamos a vinte do
mez.*

*Ponha V. M. o so-
brescrito.*

Naõ ha aréa aqui.

A tem na poiera.

*Eis aqui vosso criado;
quer V. M. que leve as
cartas ao correo?*

Don't

Don't forget to pay the
Postage.

I have no Money.

Here is a Crown; make
haste, and return present-
ly.

I will not tarry, Sir; I
will dispatch.

Dialogue X.

For to buy.

W Hither do you go?
If it is no Mat-
ter of Secrecy, I'll wait
on you.

You do me much Ho-
nour: I only go to speak
with a Shop-keeper, to
buy me a new Suit of
Cloaths.

What is the Shop-keep-
er's Name? Probably he
may be my Acquaintance.

I think his Name is
M. N. or something like
it; I do not know it for
certain.

I know him very well;
he lives in the Middle of
the Street, on the Right
Hand, over against the In-
surance-Office.

Well then, let us go and
do our Business.

Não esqueça de pagar
o porte.

Não tenho dinheiro.

Aqui tems hum cru-
zado; vay de pressa e
torna logo para casa.

Naõ ey de tardar Sen-
hor, despacharéy.

Pratica X.

Para comprar.

O NDE vay V. M.
Se o negócio nao
fôr cousa de segredo,
acompanharéy a V. M.

V. M. me fas muita
honra; eu vou somente
para fallar a hum mer-
cadór de loja, para com-
prarme hum vestido no-
vo.

Como se chama o
mercador? tal vez será
meu conhecido.

Creyo que se chama
M. N. ou tal; naõ o féy
por certo.

Eu bem o conheço;
mora no méyo da rua,
á mão deréita, justo em-
frente da casa dos legú-
ros.

Pois, vámonos e tra-
têmos o nosso negócio.

God

God save your Person,
Mr. M. N. I come re-
commended to you by a
Friend of yours, Mr. N.
having Occasion for some
Things out of your Shop.

Sir, you are welcome,
and the whole Shop is at
your Service.

I have Occasion for
some fine Cloth to make
me a Suit; have you any
that is good?

Yes, Sir, I will shew
you a Piece that I believe
will not displease you.

Look you, here is a
Piece, and, in my Opini-
on, one of the best that
is this Day in Portugal,
being very fine, well
wrought, and of an agree-
able Colour.

The Cloth is not bad,
but the Colour doth not
please me: I am no Friend
to this Ash Colour, be-
cause it is soon filled with
Spots.

Look here, how do you
like this Piece? It is of a
more lively Colour, and
more chearful for the
Summer.

Guarde Deos á pessoa
de V. M. Senhor N.
venho entommendado
a V. M. por hum amigo
seu o Senhor N. por
aver mister algúas cou-
sas de sua tenda.

Seja V. M. bem vin-
do, meu Senhor, e tudo
que está na lója fica ás
suas ordens.

Ey de mister algum
pano fino, para fazer
hum vestido; tem V. M.
algum que preste?

Ténho Senhor, mos-
traréy a V. M. huma
peça que não lhe des-
contentará.

Eis aqui húa peça, e
no meu parecer húa das
melhores que oje ha em
Portugal, por ser muy
fina, bem lavrada, e de
côr agradável.

O pano não he máo,
mas a cor não me agra-
da; não sou amigo des-
ta cor de cinza, por-
que logo se enche de
nódoas.

Olhe cá Senhor, como
lhe parece esta outra pe-
ça? he de cor mais vi-
va e mais alegre para o
verão.

Yes,

*Yes, this I like; how
do you sell it a Covado*,
and be at a Word with
me?*

*Sir, I'll tell you, I can
not sell it under two Mil
and five hundred Reas a
Covado.*

*It is very dear; I know
I can buy cheaper in other
Places.*

*If you find any so good,
and of this Make, for less
Money, I will give it you
for nothing.*

*Hark ye, Sir, I'll give
you two Mil two hundred
and forty Reas, and I am
persuaded it can be worth
no more.*

*Well then, to be short,
I will not let it go under
two Mil four hundred
Reas, although it were to
my Brother.*

*Do you know how many
Covado's will be sufficient
to make a Suit?*

*Truly I cannot tell; but
I'll send and call a Taylor
that lives close by in the
Neighbourhood, and he
will soon inform us.*

*Isto sim; a como ven-
de o covado, e digamo
em huma palavra?*

*Eu lhe diréy a V. M:
nãõ posso vendéllo por
menos de dous mil e
quinhentos reis o covado*

*He muito caro, bem
féy que posso comprállo
mais acomodado em ou-
tras partes.*

*Se V. M. achar al-
gum tão bom e déste
feitio por ménos din-
heiro eu lhó darey por
nada*

*Ouçame V. M. eu
lhe daréy dous mil do-
zentos e quarenta reis,
e tenho para mim que
nãõ podo valer mais.*

*Em fim, para usar de
brevidade nãõ ey de lar-
gallo por menos de dous
mil e quatrocentos reis,
ainda que fosse ao meu
irmão.*

*Sabe V. M. quantos
côvados bastaram para
fazer hum vestido?*

*Nãõ féy por certo;
mas mand réy chamar
hum alfayate que mora
aqui perto ná vezinhan-
ça, e elle logo o dirá.*

* A Covado is a Measure almost an English Yard.

How many Córdoades must I have to make a compleat Suit?

You must have for Coat, Waistcoat, and Breeches, four Córdoades and a half.

What may be the Breadth of it? I believe I must have more.

No, Sir, it is a Yard and three Quarters broad, and I am sure four or five Yards will be sufficient.

Very well, cut me off five Yards, that none may be wanting.

Here is just a Remnant of five Yards.

See what it comes to, and I will give you your Money.

Five Yards at two Mil four hundred Reas per Córdado, amount to twelve Milreas in Portugal Money.

How much is it in Sterling, or current Money of England?

Twelve Milreas, at six Shillings and three Pence per Mil, make three Pounds fifteen Shillings Sterling.

Quantos córdados hey de mistér para hum vestido inteiro?

V. M. ha mistér para cassaca, vestia, e calções quatro córdados e méyo.

Que largura téra? créyo que ey de mistér mais.

Não Senhor, tem de largura hum córdado e tres quartos, e asseguro-lhe que quatro para cinco córdados bastaram.

Andar; córteme cinco córdados, que não aja falta.

Eis acqui hum retalho de cinco córdados justos,

Veja quanto importa, e lhe darey o seu dinhéiro.

Cinco córdados a dous mil e quatro centos reas o córdado, montam doze milreis em dinhéiro de Portugal.

Quanto vem á ser em dinhéiro estarlino ou moeda corrente de Inglaterra?

Doze milrea, (12000 rs.) á seis chelins e tres peniques por mil, fazem tres livras e quinze chelins estarlinos.

Here,

*Here, tell your Money,
and see if it be right.*

*It is, Sir, I humbly
thank you, and hope ano-
ther Time I shall have the
same Honour.*

Eis aqui, conte V. M.
o dinhéiro, e veja se está
certo.

Está Senhor, agrade-
ço a V. M. mil annos,
e espero que em outra
oçasiã terey a mesma
honra.

Dialogue XI.

Of Playing.

LET us play a Party
at Piquet.

*How much will you
play for?*

*Let us play for one
Shilling to pass the Time.*

Give us some Cards.

*Let us see who is to
deal.*

You are to deal.

*Shuffle the Cards; all
the Court Cards are toge-
ther.*

*They are mixed suffi-
ciently; cut the cards, if
you please.*

*Have you all your
Cards.*

I think I have.

How many do you take?

I take all, I leave none.

I have a bad Game.

Pratica XI.

Dó jogar.

JUguemos huma par-
tida a o piquete.

*Por quanto quer V. M.
jugar?*

*Juguemos por hum
chelin por passo o tempo*

Danos humas cartas.

*Vejamos quem ha de
dar has cartas.*

V. M. as ha de dar.

*Baralhe as cartas; to-
das as cartas de figura
estão juntas.*

*Estão bastantemente
misturadas; parta V. M.
as cartas, se fór servido.*

*Tem V. M. todas suas
cartas?*

Creyo que tenho.

Quantas toma V. M?

*Tomo tudo; deixo
nenhuma.*

*Eu tenho hum máo
jogo.*

Let us deal the Cards
over-again.

No, Sir. My Game
puzzles me.

You must have a fine
Game; for I have no-
thing.

Count your points; fifty,
sixty, &c.

They are not good. They
are good.

A Quint Major, a
Quint from the King, a
Quart from the Queen, a
Tierce from the Knave.

I have fourteen Kings,
three Aces, three Queens,
and three Knaves.

Play Hearts, Spades,
Clubs, or Diamonds.

I have lost. You have
won.

You owe me a Shilling.

Pardon me, Sir, you
owed me one.

Then we are quits.

Dêmos as cartas ou-
tra vez.

Não Senhor. O meu
jogo me embarça.

V. M. ha de ter hum
bello jogo, por que eu
não tenho nada.

Conte V. M. os feos
pontos; cincoenta, sei-
centa, &c.

Não valem nada. Es-
tão bôms.

Huma quinta mayor,
humã quinta do Réy,
humã quarto dá Sôta,
humã terça dô cavallo.

Eu tenho cartorze de
Reys, tres ases, tres sou-
tas e tres cavallos.

Jogue copas, espadas,
páos, ou ouros.

Eu tenho perdido,
V. M. tem ganhado.

V. M. me deve hum
chelin.

Perdoeme V. M. mó
devia.

Pois estamos iguáis.

Dialogue XII.

About a Journey, with
some other Occurrences.

O Sir, are you here
yet? I expected a
Letter from you from

Pratica XII.

De humã viagem com ou-
tras cousas diferentes.

S Enhor, está V. M.
ainda aqui? estive
esperando por humã
London

London by the last Week's Post.

It is true, Sir, there was no Remedy: I thought to depart last Week, but I had an imbroiled Business, which has detained me.

But what hinders you now? Is the Ship ready, and are the Goods dispatched at the Custom-House?

Not yet, all will be cleared To-morrow.

Is the Ship cleared in the Custom-house? And have you your Provision on board?

Yes, Sir, I think I shall have Occasion for nothing more.

Don't you think I am sufficiently provided for? I have put on board, for myself and my Footman, two Sheep, four Dozen of Fowls, four Turkeys, four Geese, and a Barrel of Wine.

Your Provisions are sufficient for a Voyage of two Months: Have you agreed with the Captain for your Passage? How much are you to give him

carta de V. M. de Londres, pello corréo da semana passada.

He verdada Senhor; não ouve remedio, tratey de partir a semana passada, mas tive hum negocio embaraçado que me pos em detença.

Pois agora que ha de impedimento? o navio está lestes? e as fazendas estão despachadas na alfandega?

Ainda não; todo liquidarsea a menhaa.

O navio está despachado na alfandega? e tem V. M. sua matalotagem abórdo?

Si Senhor, creyo que não hey de mister nada mais.

Não lhe parece que estou provido bastante-mente? pois mandey a bordo para mim e meu criado dous carneiros, quatro duzias de galinhas, quatro perús, quatro patos, com hum barril de vinho.

Os mantimentos baf-tam por huma viagem de dous meses. Tem V. M. ajustado com o capitão por sua passagem? quanto ha de dar-

for yourself and your Foot-man?

I made a Bargain with the Captain for the Cabin for me and my Servant for twenty Milreas, or about six Pounds five Shillings Sterling.

I think it is very reasonable. God send you a good Voyage.

But pray tell me, is it any Business of Consequence that obliges you to this sudden Departure.

It is, Sir, I have some Accounts to adjust with my Correspondents of great Moment.

Have you any Money owing you there among your Acquaintance?

Yes, Sir, my Business is such, that I cannot do it by Letters of Attorney; but my Presence is necessary.

You have a Brother there, and if you will not trust him, whom will you trust?

Don't you know the Proverb; avoid Accounts with Relations, as Debts with such as are absent.

lhe por V. M. e mais o seu criado?

Eu fiz concerto com o capitão pello camerote, por mim e mais meu criado, em vinte milres, ou seis libras e inco chellins estarlinas.

Bem acomodado está nó meo parecer. Deos lhe de boa viagem.

Más dígame ha algum negotio de importancia que obriga a V. M. a esta apressada partida?

Ha Senhor, tenho outras contas que ajustar com meus correspondentes de muito pezo e valor.

Tem algum dinheiro que se lhe fica devendo de seus conhecidos?

Sim Senhor, meus negocios são taes que não posso fassellos por hua carta de procuração, mas a minha presença he necessaria.

V. M. tem lá hum irmão, e se não quizer fiarse delle de quem se fiara?

Não sabe V. M. o provérbio, guardate de contas com parentes, como de dívidas com ausentes.

You

*You say right, Sir;
mean while farewell, Sir;
To-morrow Morning I'll
come to kiss your Hands,
and to take my Leave of
you.*

*No, Sir, that shall not
be; you must, without
Fail, dine with us, and
we will wait for you till
one o'Clock.*

*Sir, your Servant; you
have overcome me with
Crassities, and shall be
obeyed.*

V. M. diz bem Sen-
hor; ora entretanto a
Deos Senhor, a menhaa
pella manhã virey bei-
jar suas mãos e despe-
dirme de V. M.

Não Senhor, isso não
ha de fer; V. M. sem
falta jentara com nosco
e esperaremos por V. M.
até a huma hora.

Criado, meu Senhor;
V. M. me tem vencido
com cortezias e fera ser-
vido.

Dialogue XIII.

To reckon with the
Landlord.

GOOD Evening,
Sir, are you con-
tented (pleased) with your
Supper?

*Was the Supper to your
Liking?*

*We are satisfied; but
now we must pay you.*

*The Expence is not
great.*

*See what we must pay
for ourselves, our Servants
and Horses.*

Pratica XIII.

*Para contar com o estala-
jadéiro.*

BOAS tardes Sen-
hores meus, estão
V. M. S. contentes com
a cêa?

Esteve a cêa ao gosto
de V. M. S?

Estâmos satisfeitos?
mas agora he mister pa-
gar a vossê.

Os gastos não são
grandes.

Veja quanto temos de
pagar por nos, e mais
os nossos criados e ca-
vallos.

for yourself and your Footman?

I made a Bargain with the Captain for the Cabin for me and my Servant for twenty Milreas, or about six Pounds five Shillings Sterling.

I think it is very reasonable. God send you a good Voyage.

But pray tell me, is it any Business of Consequence that obliges you to this sudden Departure.

It is, Sir, I have some Accounts to adjust with my Correspondents of great Moment.

Have you any Money owing you there among your Acquaintance?

Yes, Sir, my Business is such, that I cannot do it by Letters of Attorney; but my Presence is necessary.

You have a Brother there, and if you will not trust him, whom will you trust?

Don't you know the Proverb; avoid Accounts with Relations, as Debts with such as are absent.

lhe por V. M. e mais o seu criado?

Eu fiz concerto com o capitão pello camerote, por mim e mais meu criado, em vinte milres, ou seis libras e cinco chelines esterlinas.

Bem acomodado está nó meo parecer. Deos lhe de boa viagem.

Más dígame ha algum negotio de importancia que obriga a V. M. a esta apressada partida?

Ha Senhor, tenho outras contas que ajustar com meus correspondentes de muito pezo e valor.

Tem algum dinheiro que se lhe fica devendo de seus conhecidos?

Sim Senhor, meus negocios são taes que não posso fassellos por hũa carta de procuração, mas a minha presença he necessaria.

V. M. tem lá hum irmão, e se não quizer fiarse delle de quem se fiara?

Não sabe V. M. o provérbio, guardate de contas com parentes, como de dívidas com ausentes.

You

*You say right, Sir;
mean while farewell, Sir;
To-morrow Morning I'll
come to kiss your Hands,
and to take my Leave of
you.*

*No, Sir, that shall not
be; you must, without
Fail, dine with us, and
we will wait for you till
one o'Clock.*

*Sir, your Servant; you
have overcome me with
Civilities, and shall be
obeyed.*

V. M. diz bem Sen-
hor; ora entretanto a
Deos Senhor, a menhaa
pella manhã virey bei-
jar suas mãos e despe-
dirme de V. M.

Não Senhor, isso não
ha de ser; V. M. sem
falta jentara com nosco
e esperaremos por V. M.
até a huma hora.

Criado, meu Senhor;
V. M. me tem vencido
com cortezias e sera ser-
vido.

Dialogue XIII.

To reckon with the
Landlord.

GOOD Evening,
Sirs, are you con-
tented (pleased) with your
Supper?

*Was the Supper to your
Liking?*

*We are satisfied; but
now we must pay you.*

*The Expence is not
great.*

*See what we must pay
for ourselves, our Servants
and Horses.*

Pratica XIII.

Para contar com o estala-
jadéiro.

BOAS tardes Sen-
hores meus, estão
V. M. S. contentes com
a cea?

Esteve a cea ao gosto
de V. M. S?

Estamos satisfeitos?
mas agora he mister pa-
gar a vossê.

Os gastos não são
grandes.

Veja quanto temos de
pagar por nos, e mais
os nossos criados e ca-
vallos.

Reckon yourselves, Gentlemen, and you will find there are seven Crowns.

It seems to me you ask too much.

On the contrary, I am very reasonable (moderate.)

How much do you make us pay for the Wine?

Fifteen Pence the Bottle.

Bring us another Bottle, and To-morrow Morning we will pay you. We will abate nothing.

It seems to me this Gentleman doth not find himself well.

I am well, but I am tired and fatigued.

You must have Courage.

It will be better for me to be in Bed than at Table.

Tell my Servant to come and undress me.

Good Night, Gentlemen; good Repose to you all; sleep well.

I humbly thank you (live you a thousand years) God preserve your person.

Have you ordered clean Sheets for our Beds?

Contem V. M. S. mefmos e acharam que são sete coróas.

A mim me parece que Vossê pede demais do.

Pélo contrario, estou múi razoado (moderado.)

Quanto nós faz pagar pello vinho?

Quinze peniques o frasco.

Tagra nós hum outro frasco e menha pella menha pagaremos á Vossê; não lhe abatemos nada.

Tenho para mim que esse Senhor não se acha bem.

Estou bem, mas estou cansado e fatigado.

Ha mistér ter animo.

Sera melhor para mim estar ná cama, que ná mesa.

Diga ao meu criado que venha dispirme.

Bóas noites Senhores, Bom repouso a V. M. S. todos; dormam V. M. S. bem.

Viva V. M. mil annos; guarde Deos a pessoa de V. M.

Tem vossê ordenado lançóys limpos para nossas camas?

Take

Take care that they
may wake us early To-
morrow Morning.

I will not fail; good
by, Gentlemen, good Night.

Hark ye, Hostler, have
you look'd well after the
Horses?

Yes, Sir, for my Part
I have been wanting in
nothing? they have their
Fill of Hay and Barley.

Do us the Favour to
have our Horses ready To-
morrow at Six o'Clock in
the Morning.

Here, Master Land-
lord, tell your Money;
and the Half-Crown
which is over and above,
let it be shared among the
Servants.

Your humble Servant,
Gentlemen; I hope every
Thing has been to your
Liking.

When you pass by this
Way you have all your
humble Servants at Com-
mand.

You are welcome, Gen-
tlemen.

A good journey (Voyage)
to you, Gentlemen.

Tomc vossê cuidado
que nós despertem cedo
à menhã pella menhã.

Não faltarey; a Deos
Senhores, boas noites.

O vossê, moço de
estribaria, tem tratado
bem os cavallos?

Si Senhor, dá minha
parte não faltéy nada;
tiveram de feno e ce-
vada em abundancia.

Faça nós a Terce de
tér os cavallos prontos
à menhã as seys horas
pella menhã.

Ouçã Senhor nosso
amo, conta Vossê o di-
nhêiro, e a méya corôa
que sobeja repartasse en-
tre os criados.

Vivam V. M. S. mil
annos Senhores; espero
que todo esteve a seu
gosto.

Quando passarem por
este caminho, a qui tem
todos os seus criados
prontos ás suas ordens.

V. M. S. estão bem
vindos.

Bôa jornada (viagem)
tenham V. M. S.

Dialogue XIV.

About the Exchange.

WHERE are you going, Sir?

To Change; and pray where do you come from?

I come from thence.

Did you hear any News?

No, Sir, nothing particular.

Nothing that is remarkable.

How is the Exchange for Amsterdam To-day?

Thirty four Skillings and four Groats.

Who told you so?

My Broker.

Is there a great deal of Business doing To-day?

Yes, and if you have any to do, I advise you to make haste.

Then good by to you, Sir.

I am your Servant. Pray my Service at home.

Do you design to draw or to remit?

I am not yet determin'd what I shall do; tell me: What do you think, is the Exchange for Amsterdam likely to rise or to fall?

Pratica XIV.

Da bolsa.

A Donde vai V. M.?

A bolsa, e peço-lhe de donde vem V. M.

Venho de lá.

Ouvio V. M. alguma mas novas?

Não Senhor, nada em particular.

Nada que seja remarcavel.

Como vai o cambio para Amsterdam oje?

Trinta e quatro soldos e quatro grossos.

Quem lhó disse?

Meu corredôr.

Se faz muito negocio oje?

Si, e se tem que fazer eu lhe a conselho que va de pressa.

Pois a Deos Senhor.

Sou seu servidor. Faça-me Mercê de dar meus beijamãos em casa.

V. M. intenta sacar ou remeter?

Não estou ainda resolto ó que farei; digame: o cambio para Amsterdam parece-lhe que subirá ou que baixará?

They

They talk variously about it; yet according to Appearance it will fall.

Can you get me some good Bills of Exchange?

I was just now offer'd some from a very good House, and People of a good Reputation.

Were the Bills at Sight or Usance?

I can have either the one or the other.

How much Brokerage must I give you?

You know the Custom is one Eighth per Cent.

I want to negotiate some Bills; What do you advise me? Should I send these Bills to Amsterdam or to Hambourg?

I have not made any Calculation yet; I'll tell you by and by.

They say Mr. N. has refused Payment.

Yes, and a great many Bills drawn on him have been sent back again to Holland, protested, by Yesterday's Post.

I am surprized, that a Man who was in so good Business, and bore

Fallam variavelmente nisto; porém ao parecer baixará.

Pode V. M. procurar-me algumas boas letras de câmbio?

Inda agora me offercerão algumas de boa casa, e gente de boa reputação.

Eram as letras a vista ou usos?

Posso tér de humãs ou de outras.

Quanto de correctagem lhe éy de dar?

V. M. sabe que o costume he hum outavo por cento.

Eu quero negociar algumas letras; que me aconselha? que mande estas letras a Amsterdam ó Hamburgo?

Não he feito calculo nenhum ainda; lhó direy daqui a pouco.

Dizem que o Senhor N. refusou pagamento.

Sim e muitas letras sacadas sobre elle se mandaram outra vez protestadas a Hollanda, pelo correo de ontem.

Me admiro, que hum homem que tinha bom negotio, e de bom ca-

a good Character, should
owe so much Money.

Some say he is broke,
and that he cannot pay
50 per Cent.

What do People ima-
gine to be the Reason?

Some fancy his Friend
and Correspondent abroad
is broke; others say he
games, or that his Wife
is extravagant.

When will his Credi-
tors meet?

They have taken alrea-
dy Possession of all his
Effects and Goods, and
they will examine the Ba-
lance of his Books To-
morrow.

I hope our Friend
Mr. N. has not lost by
him.

No, for he suspected
him a great while, and I
remember that he has of-
ten refused to take his
Bills.

Do you know any Man
of Credit who insures up-
on Ships and Goods?

Yes, Sir, if you'll leave
your Business to me, I'll
get it done to your Appro-
bation, and for a mode-
rate Premium.

racter devesse tanto di-
nhêiro.

Alguns dizem que fal-
tôu é que não pode pa-
gar cincoenta por cento.

Que lhes parece ao
publico seja a razão?

Alguns imaginão que
o seu amigo e correspon-
dente fora faltôu; ou-
troz dizem que jogou ou-
que sua mulher he muy
extravagante.

Quando se ajuntarão
seus acredores?

Tem já tomado pos-
sessão de todos seus efei-
tos e fazendas, e exa-
minarão o balanço dos
seus livros a menhã.

Espero que nosso a-
migo N. não tem per-
dido com elle.

Não, por que o sos-
peitava já ha muito
tempo, e me lembra
que muitas vezes tem
refulado suas letras.

Sabe V. M. algum
homem de credito que
assegura sobre navios e
fazendas?

Sim Senhor; se V. M.
quer deixar seu negocio
a mi, lhó far ei fazer á
seu contento, e por pre-
mio moderado.

When

When is the India Com-
pany's Sale?

In a Fortnight.

I am glad of it, for
then I shall have Time
enough to execute my Com-
mission before the Ships
sail (or depart.)

Quando he a venda
da companhia da India?

Em quinze dias.

Estimo, por que en-
tão terey tempo bas-
tante para executar a
minha commissão, ante
que os navios se ponham
à vela (ou que partam.)

Dialogue XV.

Of the Laws of England.

BY what Laws is
England govern'd?

They have several, ac-
cording to the Nature of
Affairs, and the Diver-
sity of Places.

How are they distin-
guished?

They are called the
Common Law, the Statute
Law, the Civil Law,
and the Canonical (or Spi-
ritual, or ecclesiastical)
Law?

What is the Common
Law?

It is nothing but the
common Customs of the
Kingdom, which by length
of Time have obtained the
Force of Laws.

The Statute Laws have
been made by several

Pratica XV.

Dás leys de Inglaterra.

POR que leys se go-
verna a Inglaterra?

Tem diversas con-
forme a natureza dós ne-
gocios, e a diversidade
de lugares.

Como se distinguem?

Se chamam a ley co-
múia, a léy dós statutos,
a ley civil, e a ley cano-
nica (ou espirital ou ec-
clesiastica.)

Quey he a ley comúia?

Não he outro senão os
costumes comús dó rey-
no, os quais com o tem-
po tem alcançado a for-
ça de leys.

As leys de statutos se
fizeram por diversos
Kings

Kings of England, by the Advice and Consent of both Houses of Parliament, the Lords and Commons of England.

The Civil Law is the written Law, or a Collection of the Judgments and Opinions of the wisest Men in all Nations for many hundred Years past.

What is the Use thereof? To preserve the Peace and Tranquility of Mankind in General.

Who was the Author of the Book which contains the Civil Laws, and is intituled the Codex?

The Emperor Justinian, in the Year 527, had it compiled by the greatest Lawyers of his Time.

What do you call the Canonical Law?

Certain Canons compiled by the Clergy to support the Dignity of the Church, and to decide in all Matters relating to Ecclesiastical Affairs.

The Civil Law is used in the Court of Admiralty because therein are plead-

Reys de Inglaterra, por conselho e consentimento de ambas casas do parlamento, os condes e os comuns de Inglaterra.

A ley civil he a ley escrita, ou huma collecção das sentenças e opiniões dos mais sabios homens de todas as nações por muitos seculos passados.

Que uso he o seu? Para preservar a paz e tranquillidade do genero humano em geral.

Quem foi o autor do livro que contem as leis civiys, e he intitulado o Codex?

O Emperador Justiniano no anno 527, o fez collegir pellos mayores letrados de seu tempo.

Que chamays a ley canonica?

Cyrtos canones collegidos por clerigos para supportar a dignidade da igreja e por decidir em todas materias tocante os negocios ecclesiasticos.

A ley civil se usa na corte de almirantazgo, por que nella se litigam

ed and judged Affairs of
Foreigners, as well as of
Englishmen.

What is the privilege
of a born Englishman?

That he may not be
commanded by an arbi-
trary Power, but ac-
cording to the known
Laws of the Land: viz.
the Common and Statute
Laws, and especially by
that called Magna Char-
ta, the great Charter,
which preserves him in
his Liberty and Pro-
perty.

How do they plead and
try their Causes?

The Accuser and Accu-
sed, or Defendant, stand
forth in the Court of Ju-
stice; their Advocates
plead the Cause, the Wit-
nesses depose upon Oath
what they know of the
Matter; the Judge who
sits on the Bench, recapit-
ulates what has been said
on both sides, and declares
the Law in that Case.
Then the twelve Jurors
(who are House-keepers,
and chosen by Turns, not
belonging to the Law, but
all Men that have com-
mon Sense may serve in
this Case) go into a Room

e julgam negocios de
forasteiros tam bem co-
mo dós Ingrefes.

Que he o privilegio
de hum Ingres nacido?

Que não sega gover-
nado por hum poder ar-
bitrario, mas conforme ás
leys conhecidas dá terra,
a saber, a comúa, e as
leys de statutos, e espe-
cialmente por aquella
chamada *Magna Charta*,
ou grande privilegio, a
qual o conserva ná sua
liberdade e possessão.

Como litigam e jul-
gam seus pleitos?

O accusante e o ac-
cusado ou defendente
estão diante dá corte de
justiça; seus avogados
representam o pleito;
as testemunhas depoem
sobre juramento o que
sabem dá materia. O
juez, que esta sentado
nó banco (cadéira) re-
pite o que se tem dito
de ambas partes, e de-
clara a ley em este caso.
Então os doze jurados
(os quais são gente que
tem casa, e escolhidos
por vezes, não são letra-
dos, mas todo homem
que tem uso de rezam

by

by themselves, and when they are all agreed, return into Court, and declare what they think, guilty or not guilty, and the Judge pronounces Sentence accordingly.

Are criminal Matters managed in the same Manner?

Yes, and thus an Englishman has the Happiness of being tried and judged only by God and the Laws of his Country, acknowledging no arbitrary Power at all.

Happy is that Nation which enjoys their Life, Liberty, and Property, and can lose neither of them, but by those same Laws upon which the Safety of all their Fellow-Countrymen depends.

pode servir neste caso) vam em hum aposento sós e quando accordão todos bolvem pera a corte e declarão quema imaginão ser reo ou não; e o juez pronuncia a sentença em conformidade.

Os casos criminaes se dirigem dó mesmo modo?

Sim e assim hum Ingrez tem a satisfacção de ser julgado sómente por Deos e as leys de sua patria, não reconhecendo nenhum poder arbitrario.

Ditosa he essa nação que goza de sua vida, liberdade, e possessões, e não póde perder nen humá déllas, se não por aquellas mesmas leys sobre as quais depende a segurança de todos seus compatriotas.

GRAMMATICA

LUSITANO ANGLICA,

O U

GRAMMATICA

PORTUGUEZA e INGLEZA.

SEGUNDA PARTE,

A qual serve para Instruir a os *Portuguezes* na
Lingua Ingleza.



L O N D O N :

Printed in the Year 1770.

GRAMMATIC

ДОКЛАД ОБЪЕДИН.

GRAMMATIC

FOR TUBULES & TUBULES

SECRETARY



MODOS

Printed in the Year 1770.

A OLEITOR

SENDO varias as Razoens, que rendem esta Obra util e necessaria ; não farey mais que observar, ser para o homem de negocio, de absoluta importancia, e para o curiozo estudante de entretenimento e recreyo ; o que suposto, darey principio a o dictame que se observou nesta empreza.

Primeiramente se tratou das letrās e sua pronunciaçãõ mostrando como se leyem por exemplos no estillo Portuguez de soletrar, como tambem das vogai, syllabās, diphtongos, triphongos, &c. Seguindolhe despois as declinaçoens, conjugaçãoens, regras da sintáxe, etymologia, prosodia e accentos. Com um vocabulario, e dialogos das couzas mais commuās que a contecem na vida juntamente varias cartas sobre o negocio ou commercio ; e finalmente, a carta, ou instrumento de procuraçam, a cartā, ou instrumento de fretamento. A plice de seguro. O conbimento. O instrumento, ou escritura de compromisso. A letra de cambio, e seu protesto, &c. o que sem duvida nenhuma será o melhor e mais seguro methodo de obter e conservar o conbimento de ambas as linguas, e que tenha o efeito desejado he o que o author muy sinceramente implora.

A O L E I T O R

Quando a natureza se apresenta ao homem, e este se apresenta ao mundo, é necessário que se estabeleça uma relação entre os dois. Esta relação é a que se estabelece entre o homem e o mundo, e é a que se estabelece entre o homem e o homem.

Quando a natureza se apresenta ao homem, e este se apresenta ao mundo, é necessário que se estabeleça uma relação entre os dois. Esta relação é a que se estabelece entre o homem e o mundo, e é a que se estabelece entre o homem e o homem.

Quando a natureza se apresenta ao homem, e este se apresenta ao mundo, é necessário que se estabeleça uma relação entre os dois. Esta relação é a que se estabelece entre o homem e o mundo, e é a que se estabelece entre o homem e o homem.

CASTRO.

GRAMMATICA
LUSITANO-ANGLICA;

ou

Grammatica, *Ingleza*, e *Portugueza*.

SEGUNDA PARTE.

C A P. I.

Das Letras, e sua Pronunciaçãõ.

O *S Inglezes* não sô mente Escrevem de hum modo e Leyem de outro; mas tambem não falaõ como Leyem ou Escrevem: Se não por hum modo muy rapido, que para com elles tem total dominio; o que sem duvida cauza grande harmonia a os Fôraстеiros; para facilitar o qual, tenho applicado todas as diligencias possiveis para expressar, tanto a *Alphabeto Inglez*, por estilo *Portuguez*, como tambem as Vogais, Syllabas, Diphtongos, Triphthongos, &c. com suas distincçoens; allegando as mais adequadas Regras, para que possa o curiozo *Portuguez*, adquirir o conhecimento de ditto *Lingua*.

O Alphabeto *Inglez* contem 26 Letras asaber.

A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I
E,	bi,	ci,	di,	i,	ef,	gi,	etche,	ai,
j,	k,	l,	m,	n,	o,	p,	q,	r,
je,	que,	el,	em,	en,	o,	pi,	quiu,	ar,
s,	t,	u,	v,	w,	x,	y,	z.	
es,	ti,	iu,	vi,	dabiliu,	eks,	uay,	zed.	

Ingles.

Portugues.

ba,	be,	bi,	bo,	bu,	be,	bi,	bai,	bo,	bu,
ca,	ce,	ci,	co,	cu,	que,	ci,	sai,	co,	cu,
da,	de,	di,	do,	du,	de,	di,	dai,	do,	du,
fa,	fe,	fi,	fo,	fu,	fe,	fi,	fai,	fo,	fu,
ga,	ge,	gi,	go,	gu,	gue,	gi,	jai,	go,	gu,
ha,	he,	hi,	ho,	hu,	he,	hi,	hai,	ho,	hu,
ja,	je,	ji,	jo,	ju,	je,	ji,	jai,	jo,	ju,
ka,	ke,	ki,	ko,	ku,	que,	qui,	cai,	co,	cu,
la,	le,	li,	lo,	lu,	le,	li,	lai,	lo,	lu,
ma,	me,	mi,	mo,	mu,	me,	mi,	mai,	mo,	mu,
na,	ne,	ni,	no,	nu,	ne,	ni,	nai,	no,	nu,
pa,	pe,	pi,	po,	pu,	pe,	pi,	pai,	po,	pu,
qua,	que,	qui,	quo,		que,	qui,	quai,	quo,	
ra,	re,	ri,	ro,	ru,	re,	ri,	rai,	ro,	ru,
sa,	se,	si,	so,	su,	se,	si,	sai,	so,	su,
ta,	te,	ti,	to,	tu,	te,	ti,	tai,	to,	tu,
va,	ve,	vi,	vo,	vu,	ve,	vi,	vai,	vo,	vu,
wa,	we,	wi,	wo,	wu,	ue,	ui,	uai,	uo,	uu,
ya,	ye,	yi,	yo,	yu,	ye,	yi,	yai,	yo,	yu,
za,	ze,	zi,	zo,	zu,	ze,	zi,	zai,	zo,	zu.

O seguinte he o (ba) areves o qual muda, o Son das Vogais como consta peilos Accentos ; dos quais o primeiro se pronuncia largo e com aboca bem aberta, o segundo mais curto e com menos força.

Ingles.					Portugues.				
ab,	eb,	ib,	ob,	ub,	êb,	ēb,	ib,	āb,	āb,
ac,	ec,	ic,	oc,	uc,	ec,	ec,	ic,	ac,	ac,
ad,	ed,	id,	od,	ud,	ed,	ed,	id,	ad,	ad,
af,	ef,	if,	of,	uf,	ef,	ef,	if,	af,	af,
ag,	eg,	ig,	og,	ug,	eg,	eg,	ig,	ag,	ag,
ab,	be,	ob,			êh,	ēh,	oh,		
ak,	ek,	ik,	ok,	uk,	êk,	ēk,	ik,	āk,	āk,
al,	el,	il,	ol,	ul,	el,	el,	il,	al,	al,
am,	em,	im,	om,	um,	em,	em,	im,	am,	am,
an,	en,	in,	on,	un,	en,	en,	in,	an,	an,
ap,	ep,	ip,	op,	up,	ep,	ep,	ip,	ap,	ap,
ar,	er,	ir,	or,	ur,	ar,	ar,	ir,	ar,	ar,
as,	es,	is,	os,	us,	es,	es,	is,	as,	as,
at,	et,	it,	ot,	ut,	et,	et,	it,	at,	at,
ax,	ex,	ix,	ox,	ux,	eks,	eks,	iks,	aks,	aks,
az,	ez,	iz,	oz,	uz,	ez,	ez,	iz,	az,	az,
amp,	emp,	imp,	omp,	ump,	emp,	emp,	imp,	amp,	amp,
ant,	ent,	int,	ont,	unt,	ent,	ent,	int,	ant,	ant,
ast,	est,	ist,	ost,	ust,	est,	est,	ist,	ast,	ast,
ath,	eth,	ith,	oth,	uth,	eth,	eth,	ith,	ath,	ath,
bla,	ble,	bli,	blo,	blu,	ble,	bli,	blai,	blo,	blu,
bra,	bre,	bri,	bro,	bru,	bre,	bri,	brai,	bro,	bru,
cha,	che,	chi,	cho,	chu,	che,	chi,	chai,	cho,	chu,
cla,	cle,	cli,	clo,	clu,	cle,	cli,	clai,	clo,	clu,
cra,	cre,	cri,	cro,	cru,	cre,	cri,	crai,	cro,	cru,
dra,	dre,	dri,	dro,	dru,	dre,	dri,	drai,	dro,	dru,
dwa,	dwe,	dwi,			dué,	duí,	duai,		
fla,	fle,	fli,	flo,	flu,	fle,	fli,	flai,	flo,	flu,
fra,	fre,	fri,	fro,	fru,	fre,	fri,	frai,	fro,	fru,

248 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

Inglez.	Portuguez.
<i>gla, gle, gli, glo, glu,</i>	<i>gle, gli, glai, glo, glu,</i>
<i>gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu,</i>	<i>ne, ni, nai, no, nu,</i>
<i>gra, gre, gri, gro, gru,</i>	<i>gre, gri, grai, gro, gru,</i>
<i>kna, kne, kni, kno, knu,</i>	<i>ne, ni, nai, no, nu,</i>
<i>pba, pbe, pbi, pbo, pbu,</i>	<i>fe, fi, fai, fo, fu,</i>
<i>pla, ple, pli, plo, plu,</i>	<i>ple, pli, plai, plo, plu,</i>
<i>pra, pre, pri, pro, pru,</i>	<i>pre, pri, prai, pro, pru,</i>
<i>rba, rbe, rbi, rbo, rbu,</i>	<i>re, ri, rai, ro, ru,</i>
<i>sca, sce, sci, sco, scu,</i>	<i>esquê, si, fai, escô, escû,</i>
<i>sba, sbe, sbi, sbo, sbu,</i>	<i>xe, xi, xai, xo, xu,</i>
<i>ska, ske, ski, sko, sku,</i>	<i>esqué, elquí, esquái, escô,</i>
	<i>escû,</i>
<i>sia, sie, si, slo, slu,</i>	<i>celê, cili, celai, celo, celû,</i>
<i>sma, sme, smi, smo, smu,</i>	<i>cemê, cimi, cimai, cemô,</i>
	<i>cemû,</i>
<i>sna, sne, sni, sno, snu,</i>	<i>cenê, ciní, cinai, cenô,</i>
	<i>cenû,</i>
<i>sua, sue, sui, suo, suu,</i>	<i>espê, espí, espai, espô,</i>
	<i>espû,</i>
<i>squa, sque, squi, squo,</i>	<i>esquê, esquí, esquái, esquô,</i>
	<i>esquû,</i>
<i>sta, ste, sti, sto, stu,</i>	<i>estê, esti, estai, estô, estû,</i>
<i>sua, sue, sui, suo, suu,</i>	<i>fuê, fui, fuai, fuô, fuû,</i>
<i>tba, tbe, tbi, tbo, tbu,</i>	<i>the, thi, thai, tho, thu,</i>
<i>tra, tre, tri, tro, tru,</i>	<i>trê, tri, trai, tro, trû,</i>
<i>twa, twe, twi, two,</i>	<i>tuê, tuí, tuai, tú,</i>
<i>wha, whe, whi, who,</i>	<i>ué, uí, uai, ú,</i>
<i>wra, wre, wri, wro, wru,</i>	<i>re, ri, rai, ro, ru,</i>
<i>sca, scre, scri, scro, scrû,</i>	<i>escre, escri, escrai, escró,</i>
	<i>escrû,</i>
<i>sbra, sbre, sbri, sbro, sbu,</i>	<i>xerê, xerí, xerai, xerô,</i>
	<i>xerû,</i>
<i>spla, sple, spli, splo, splu,</i>	<i>esplê, espli, esplai, esplô,</i>
	<i>esplû,</i>
<i>spra, spre, spri, spro, spru,</i>	<i>esprê, esprí, esprai, esprô,</i>
	<i>esprû,</i>

stra, stre, stri, stro, stru, estré, estrí, estrai, estró,
 estrú,
thra, thre, thri, thro, thru, thré, thrí, thrai, thró,
 thrú,
tbwa, tbwe, tbwi, thué, thuí, thuai,

Letra he hum Character, q^a. significa hum Simple Articulado Son sem Composição. As Letras na Língua Inglesa são 26 como seve do Alphabeto atras.

Dividense em Consoantes, e Vogais. As Vogais tem hum cheo, e perfeito Son de si mesmo, sem ajuda de outra qual quer Letra; e são Sinco, asaber. *a, e, i, o, u,* —e, y, Grego que sepoem no fim das Palavras: Todas em Geral soão na forma Seguinte asaber. *a*, antes de, *ll*, he, *a* Portuguez, Ex. *tall, Wall, all, &c. lease, tal, uál, al, &c.* Tambem antes de, *ld*, he, *a* Portuguez, Ex. *bald, scald, &c. lease, bald, escáld, &c.* e antes de *lk*, Ex. *talk, walk, lease, tak, uák*, e antes de *lt*, Ex. *Malt, Salt*; e entre *w* r, Ex. *war, ward, warm, &c.* e tambem em *Watch, Water, was, wash*, e nas Palavras derivadas de qual quer destes; assim tambem os Diphtongos.

Au, aw, São, *a*, Portuguez, Ex. *Authority, Audience, saw, law, raw, &c. lease, Athárity, ádi-ence, sa, la, ra, &c.*

A, he, *e*, Portuguez em todos os Nomes de huma Syllaba que acabaõ com huma Consoante, Ex. *bat. can, far, mad, &c. lease, bet, quen, fer, med, &c.* tambem quando duas Consoantes da mesma especie se encontraõ no meyo de huma Palavra. Ex. *Battle, cannot, Farrier, &c. lease, bétíl quénнат, féríar, &c.* e tambem quando huã singela Consoante em o meyo Soa como dobrada, Ex. *banish, Dragon, Habit, &c. lease, bénix, Drégan, Hebit, &c.*

E.

E. em Palavras que acabão com huma ou mais Consoantes he, e, *Portuguez.* Ex. *Bed, blest, length, Strength, &c. lease, bed, blest, length, strength, &c.*

E. Singello no fim de alguns Nomes proprios soa como, i, *Portuguez.* Ex. *Phébe, Penelope, &c. lease, Phibi, Penélipi, &c.* e assim deve ser no fim de todos os Nomes Gregos, e Latinos, Ex. *Epitome,* como tambem em, *be, she, we, he, ye, the,* tambem, y, no fim de varias Palavras soa como, i, *Portugues.* Ex. *holy, happy, daily, &c.*

E. tacito e que não Soa serve para fazer longa a Vogal q̄, lhe fica atras, e tambem para abrandar, o, e, g, Ex. *mad, made, bit, bite, not, note, tun, tune, lac, lace, rag, rage, flag, stage, bug, huge, &c. lease, med, mede, bit, bait, not, nat, &c.* Note-se, q̄. quando, e, não Soa no fim das Palavras, se chama, e, final: O qual algumas vezes serve para alongar on Son da Vogal que fica atras; como Ex. *save,* e algumas vezes he redundante como Ex. *give.* E não Soa no fim das Palavras depois de r mas se converte em a *Portuguez.* Ex. *fire, desire, acre, meagre, &c. lease, falar, dizaiar, ecar, migar, &c.*

I. tem o Son de, ai, *Portuguez,* Ex. *pint, mind, wild, &c. lease, páint, máind, úaild,* e de i em *tin, win, sing, &c. lease, tin, úin, sing, &c.* Tambem antes de gh, he ai, *Portuguez.* Ex. *high, nigh, sigh, &c. lease, hái, náí, saith, &c.* excepto nos Diphthongos Impropios de ui, que he, i, *Portuguez.* Ex. *build, built, guilty, &c. lease, bild, bilt, gúilty, &c.*

O. Tem 4 Sons asaber.

1º. Como o *Portuguez,* Ex. *go, lo, so, &c.*

2. Como a, Ex. *hot, not, plot, &c. lease, hat, nat, plat, &c.*

3. Como u, *Rome, move, prove, &c. lease, Rum, muvé, pruvé, &c.*

4. Como *a*, Ex. *some, mouth, monk, &c. lease, sam, maúth, mánk.*

U. Soa como *e*, Portuguez nesta Palavra, *bury, lease, béri, porem em busy, business, soa como i, Portuguez, e se leyem bizi, bizines.* U. em Palavras de huã Syllaba ou seguinolhe qual quer Consoante he *a Portuguez, Ex. rub, gun, burst, custom, cluster, mustar, &c. lease, rãb, gãn, bãrft, cãstãm, clãtar, mãtar, &c.* Em todos os Monosyllabas que terminaõ cõ *e* soa como *u* apertado, Ex. *cube, pure, flute, confuse, lease, quĩub, pĩuar, fĩut, cõflut, &c.* Y. Em os Nomes de huã Syllaba, se pronuncia como *i Portuguez, Ex. by, my, why, thy, &c. lease, bai, mai, uai, thai, &c.*

No fim dos nomes Adjectivos, e Substantivos, se pronuncia como *i Portuguez, Ex. beauty, bounty, angry, ready, city, heavy, &c. lease, bĩuti, bãunti, éngri, rêdi, cĩti, évi, nos Verbos de duas Syllabas se pronuncia, como ai Portuguez, Ex. deny, apply, &c. lease, dinãi, épplai, &c.*

Tiraõse os Verbos que acabaõ em, *ry*, que nestes se pronuncia como *i Portuguez, Ex. carry, tarry, merry, lease, quẽri, têri, méri.*

No principio das Palavras se Pronuncia como *i Portuguez, ainda que se lhe siga Vogal, Ex. Yard, yes, year, you, your, yours, youth, yet, young, &c. lease, iãrd, iẽs, iẽr, iũ, iũar, iũars, iũth, iũt, iãng, &c.*

Su. Soa como *x Portugues, Ex. Sugar, assure, insure, lease, Xugar, éxuar, ínũar, &c.* Tambem, *ti*, quando lhe segue qual quer das 5 Letras Vogais Soa como *x, Ex. Nation, vexation, condition, determination, patience, &c. lease, nẽxian, vẽksẽxian, cãdĩxian, dĩterminexian, pẽxience, &c.*

Todas as Palavras que acabaõ em, *ure*, Soaõ coma *or Portugues. Ex. Nature, adventure, procedure, &c. lease, nẽitar, édvẽtar, prodar, &c. ric.*

As

As Consoantes, *g b*, em o meyo de qual quer Palavra não Soaõ porem no fim Soaõ algumas vezes como *f*. Ex. *rough, cough, laugh, enough, lease, raf, caf, laf, enaf, &c.*

As Consoantes, *sh*, tem o Son de *x* Portuguez, Ex. *shine, Shirt, Shift, Ship, short, &c. lease, xain, xart, xift,, xip, xart, &c.*

K seguin dolhe *n* não Soa, Ex. *know, knot, knee, knuckle, lease, no, nar, ni, naïquil, &c.* Tambem *w*, em lhe seguindo, *r* não tem Son, Ex. *write, wrist, wrong, &c. lease, raít, rift, ráng, &c.* Taõ pouco, *g*, seguindo-lhe *n* tem Son, Ex. *gnaw, gnai, &c. lease, na, net, &c.*

Estes Nomes Singulares, *knife, wife, life, lease, naïf, uaif, laif*, e seus Compostos, no número Plural mudaõ o *f* em *v*, Ex. *Knives, Wives, lives, lease, naïvs, uaivs, laivs, &c.*

Dos Diphtongos.

Diphtongos são duas Vogais juntas, fazendo hum Son, ou huma Syllaba, dos quais ha duas Sortes; proprios, e improprios.

Os proprios, São duas Vogais em huma Syllaba fazendo hum Son Afaber.

O Diphtongo *ai* he *e* Portuguez. Ex. *fair, pair, pain, stain, &c. lease, fer, per, péin, estéin, &c.*

O Diphtongo *ee* he *i* Portuguez. Ex. *Queen, seen, meet, &c. lease, Quin, lin, milt, &c.*

O Diphtongo *oo* he *u*, Portuguez, Ex. *good, noon, cook, lease, gud, nun, cuk, excepto nestas palavras que Soa como a, Ex. blood, flood, foot, lease, blad, flad, fat, &c.*

O Diphtongo *oi*, he *ai* Portuguez, Ex. *void, toil, joil, spoil, &c. lease, váid, raíl, saíl, espárl, &c.*

Os Diphtongos, *ou, ow, Soaõ*, como *au* Portuguez, Ex. *House, Mouse, rouse, Cow, now, bow, lease, áus, máus, ráus, caú, aú, &c.*

Dos Diphtongos Improprius.

Este Diphtongo he o encontro de 2 Vogatis em huã Syllaba, soando sô huã dellas e ficando a outra muda. Ha 10. asaber.

aa, ea, eo, eu, ei, ie, oa, oe, ue, ui.

aa, he e Portuguez, Ex. *Aaron, Isaac, Canaan, lease, éran, áizac, Kénan.*

ea Tem 4 Sons asaber.

1º. Como e Portuguez, Ex. *Bear, swear, tear, wear, &c. lease, bér, fúer, tér, úer, &c.*

2º. Como a Portuguez, Ex. *Heart, beard, bearken, &c. lease, hart, hard, harkin, &c.*

3º. Como e Portuguez, Ex. *Already, Bread, Breast, Head, &c. lease, álredi, bréd, bréft, héd, &c.*

4º. Como i Portuguez, Ex. *appear, fear, near, Veal, deal, conceal, Flea, Plea, Pea, Sea, Tea, yea, &c. lease, éppiar, fiar, níar, vil, dil, cáncil, fli, pli, pi, Si, Ti, ii, &c.*

eo, Tem 3 Sons asaber.

1º. Como e Portuguez, Ex. *Jeopardy, Leopardy, Feoffee, &c. lease, Jepardy, Lepardy, Feffi, &c.*

2º. Como i Portuguez, Ex. *People, Feodary, &c. lease, pipil, fidery.*

3º. Como a Portuguez, Ex. *Geometry, Geography, &c. lease, Geámetri, Geágrefi, &c.*

eu, ew, Soaõ como *u* Portugues, Ex. *Deuce, Pleurisy, Dew, few, Pew, Pewter, &c. lease, díus, plúrisi, diu, fiu, píu, píutar, &c.*

ei, Tem 2 Sons asaber.

1º. Como e Portuguez, Ex. *feign, reign, lease, féin, rein, &c.*

254 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica:*

2º. Como *i*, Ex. *perceive*, *Deceit*, *Conceit*, *in-veigle*, *Réceipt*, *receive*, &c. *lease*, *pârliv*, *dîsit*, *cânfit*, *înviguil*, *ricit*, *riciv*, &c.

ie, he *i* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Belief*, *believe*, *brief*, *Cashier*, *Field*, *pierce*, *Priest*, &c. *lease*, *bîlif*, *bîliv*, *brif*, *Kexiar*, *Fild*, *pîars*, *prist*, &c. e Tambem em *busie*, *crasie*, *Gypsie*, &c. que em lugar de *ie* no fim se escrevem hoje com *y* Ex. *busy*, *crasy*, *Gipsy*, *dignify*, &c. *lease*, *bîzi*, *crézi*, *jiphi*, &c.

OA, he *o* *Portugues*, Ex. *Coat*, *Cloak*, *Coast*, *Float*, *Boat*, &c. *lease*, *Cot*, *Clok*, *Cost*, *Flot*, *Bot*, &c. excepto em *broad*, *Groat*, que he *a* *Portuguez*, *lease*, *brad*, *grat*, e em *Goal*, que he *e* *Portugues*, *lease*, *Gek*.

oe, Soa algumas vezes como *e* *Portuguez*, Ex. *OEconomy*, *OEidipus*, *OEconomical*, &c. *lease*, *écanimi*, *edîpas*, *écanamical*, &c. Tambem he *o* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Foe*, *Toe*, &c. *lease*, *fo*, *to*, &c. excepto em *Sboe*, que he *u* *Portuguez*, *lease*, *xu*.

ue, he *u* *Portuguez*, Ex. *accrue*, *sue*, *avenue*, *pursue*, *Residue*, &c. *lease*, *écru*, *fu*, *cyinu*, *parfu*, *residu*, &c. depois de *g* serve para fazelo forte, e a largar a Vogal que vay a diante e emtaõ he *a* *Portuguez*, Ex. *Catalogue*, *Dialogue*, *Epilogue*, *Fatigue*, *League*, *Synagogue*, *prorogue*, *Rogue*, *Tongue*, &c. *lease*, *Ketelâg*, *Daielâg*, &c.

ui, Tem 3 Sons a saber,

1º. Como *ai* *Portuguez*, Ex. *beguile*, *guide*, *disguise*, *quite*, *lease*, *bîgâil*, *gâid*, *disgâis*, *quait*, &c.

2º. Como *i*, Ex. *Guildford*, *build*, *rebuilt*, &c. *lease*, *Guîldford*, *bild*, *rébild*, &c.

3º. Como *u*, Ex. *bruise*, *recruit*, *Fruit*, *Brute*, &c. *lease*, *brús*, *ricrut*, *Frut*, &c. Tambem quando 3 Vogais vem juntas em huã palavra se chama hum *Triphthongo*, Ex. *Beauty*, *lieu*, *adieu*, *lease*, *bîuti*, *liû*, *edîu*.

Das

Das Consoantes em Geral.

Consoante he huã Letra, a qual não pode ter Son, sem que antes, ou depois se lhe junte huã Vogal, Ex. *m* em, *d* de. A Lingua Ingleza them 21, viz.

b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, w, x, y, z.

B. não se pronuncia antes de *m*, Ex. *Comb, Lamb, dumb, &c. lease*, côm, lem, dam, &c. Tambem antes det, Ex. *Doubt, Debt, Debtor, &c. lease*, daut, det, détar, &c.

C. Tem dois Sons, hum forte e duro, como em *Cat, cast, &c. lease*, Ket. Kest, &c. e outro brando como em *City, Cell, &c. lease*, Citi, Cél, &c. Soa sempre duro antes de, *a, o, l, r*, Ex. *can, Cord, Crab, clean, &c. lease*, Ken, Card, Creb, clin, &c. Soa brando antes de *e, i, y*, Ex. *cease, cement, City, Cypher, &c. lease*, cis, ciment, Citi, Saifar, &c. E antes de hum Apostrophe (') denota a auzencia de *e* Ex. *plac'd*, em lugar, de *placed, lease*, plésed. Quando Soa duro antes de, *e, i, n*, sempre se escreve com *k*, Ex. *keep, kill, knack, know, &c. lease*, kip, kil, néck, no, &c.

Cb, em palavras meramente Inglezas tem o Son forte como em Portuguez, Ex. *Church, rich, such, cheap, &c. lease*, Charché, rich, saché, chip, &c. pore[m] na quellas que se dirivão do Francés se pronunciaõ brandamente como se focem escritas com *x* Portugues, Ex. *Chevalier, Chaise, Champain, Capucin, Machine, &c. lease*, Xéveliar, Xés, Xem, péin, Quepuxin, Mexin, &c. nos Nomes dirivados dos hebreos, ou dos Gregos Soa como *K*, Ex. *Acham, Barodach, Antioch, Christian, Monarch, Chronicle, lease*, équam, Berodek, Entiak, Chrístian, Manark, Crâniquil, &c.

D.

D. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* nas Palavras em que compoem Syllaba, porem não se pronuncia nas Palavras seguintes, servindo so para cargar na Syllaba, Ex. *Badge, Hedge, Bridge, Lodge, Judge, &c. lease*, bége, hége, brigi, láje, jáge, &c.

F. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

G. Tem dois Sons, hum duro gutural, Ex. *Game, Gold, Gum, &c. lease*, guem, guld, gam, &c. e outro brando, Ex. *gentle, danger, Ginger, lease*, jéntil, dénjar, jingar, &c.

Soa sempre duro antes de *a, o, u, l, r*, e no fim das Palavras, excepto se for molificado por *d, ou e*, Ex. *Bag, Badge, Cag, Cage, Log, lodge, Dog, dodge, bug, buge, &c. lease*, beg, bége, quég, quéje, lag, láge, dag, dáge, hag, iúje, &c.

Soa communmente brando antes de *e, i, y*, Ex. *Gender, gentle, Ginger, Gipsy, &c. lease*, jéndar, jéntil, jínjar, jípsi, &c. excepto que seja endurecido por *b* ou *u*, Ex. *guide, guile, guest, ghest, Ghost, &c. lease*, gaíd, gáil, guélt, gués, góft, &c.

Nas Palavras seguintes retem, o seu natural duro Son antes de *e*, Ex. *altogether, Anger, beget, Finger, forget, Geese, get, Hunger, linger, &c. lease*, álto-guethar, éngar, bíguít, fíngar, fárgit, guís, guit, hángar, língar, &c. e em todas as Palavras derivadas de *long, big, strong, beg, sing, bring, &c.*

Da mesma sorte Soa duro antes de *i* nas Palavras seguintes, Ex. *begin, forgive, giddy, Gift, Girt, Girl, Gizzard, &c. lease* bíguin, fárguiv, guídi, guíft, gárt, guél, guizard, &c. Tambem quando dois *gg*, vem juntos, ambos tem o Son duro, ainda que, *e, i, y*, se sigão depois delles, Ex. *Gagg, Dagger, &c. lease*, Guégue, Dégar, &c.

As Letras que a companhia *g*, na mesma Syllaba são *b, l, n, r*, e fazem o Son de *g* duro, Ex. *Ghest, Ghost, glad, great, Ground, lease*, gués, góft, gled, grét, gráund, &c.

G. Antes de *n* no fim das Palavras he mudo, e so serve para fazer longa a Vogal que fica atras, Ex. *Sign, Design, Ensign, consign, &c. lease, sain, disain, insain, consain, &c.*

H. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez* apertando mais a respiração.

J. Não tem variedade eu seu Son soando sempre como *g* brando, Ex. *just, joint, jointure, &c. lease, jast, jáint, jáintar, &c.*

K. Se pronuncia como *Q* *Portuguez*.

L. Não se pronuncia antes de *f, k*, Ex. *Chalk, Calf, half, Walk, lease, chák, kef, éf, uak, &c.* tão pouco se pronuncia em, *could, should, would, lease, cud, núd, úd, &c.*

M. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

N. Nunca se pronuncia depois de *m*, Ex. *Autumn, damn, lease, átam, dém, &c.*

P. Não se pronuncia em *Psalm, tempt, Receipt, lease, Sâm, temt, ricit, &c.*

Ph. ou principie ou termine a Syllaba, sempre Soa como *f*, Ex. *Physic, Physician, Philosopher, lease, Fízik, Fízixien, Fílazifar*; excepto em *Pbthysick, Pbthysical*, aonde, *Pb*, são mudos e não soão, *lease, thízik, thízical, &c.*

Q. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *Quail, quick, Quality, lease, quêil, quíc, quáiti, &c.*

R. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*, Ex. *run, rest, Rain, lease, rán, rest, réin, &c.*

S. Entre duas Vogais se pronuncia como *z*, Ex. *Desire, despise, praise, dispraise, &c. lease, dízaíar, díspaíz, préiz, dispréiz, &c.* mas no principio das Palavras se pronuncia como nó *Latin es*, e nó fim mesmo como *s* *Portuguez*.

T. Se pronuncia como em *Portuguez*.

Th. Tem difficultoza pronuncia a melhor instrução he aquella da Vóz humana; sem embargo a

sua pronuncia he ficioza metendo a Lingua entre os dentes, Ex. *that, thou, thence, this, they, thine, &c. lease, thét, thaú, théns, this, thé, tháin, &c.*

V. Sempre se poem antes das Vogais, e nunca depois dellas, sem se lhe seguir e mudo, Ex. *vain, Voice, vulgar, have, Lease, Love, sav'd, lov'd*, em lugar de *saved, loved, lease, vein, váiz, válgar, év liv, lav, séved, láved, &c.*

Seguese depois das Consoantes *lr* Ex. *Calves, Carve, &c. lease, quélvs, querv, &c.*

W. Tem dous Sons a saber, de Consoante, e de Vogal; antes de Vogal; he consoante, Ex. *Want, went, Winter, lease, úant, úent, úintar*, porem de pois de *a, e, o*, he Vogal, Ex. *Awl, crawl, Dew-few, boio, now, lease, ál, crál, diú, fu, áu, náu, &c.* mas todas as vezes que he pronunciada no principio das Palavras ou Syllabas, sempre tem o Son de *a* Vogal em Portuguez, Ex. *want, went, was, &c. lease, úant, úent, úas, &c.*

X. Sempre Soa como *es, ou, ks*, nunca começa palavras commuas e só da principio a alguns nomes proprios, sempre a acaba, mas nunca começa Syllaba; algumas vezes tem *e* despois, mas nunca *s* Ex. *Ax, vex, six, Ox, Box, Flux, Example, exempl, express, &c. lease, éks, veks, fiks, ács, báks, flács, éksampil, eksempt, ékspres, &c.*

Z. Não tem alteraçã no seu, Son, pode estar antes ou depois de qual quer Vogal, mas nunca pode estar immediatamente antes, ou depois de Consoante na mesma Syllaba.

Para a melhor execucao das referidas Regras, daremos aqui ao Leitor huma pequena Carta em Inglez, escrita pello estilo Portuguez de Soletrear.

Inglez.

Since mine of the 16th Instant I have yours of the 14th ditto, and refer myself to what I have already written in answer to your said Letter. This serves at present to desire you to furnish and pay to Mr. J. M. to the Value of two hundred Pounds, at one or more Times, according as he shall desire it from you, taking his Bill or Bills of Exchange for what you shall so furnish him with, and put it to my Account, and this my Letter of Credit shall be your sufficient Warrant for so doing.

O mesmo Inglez por estilo Portuguez.

Sênse máin av thi 16 instant Ai ev iúars av thi 14 ditto, end risár mársel self tu úat Ai ev alrédy rítin in énsar tu iúar séid Létar. This sárvs et prézent tu dizáir iú tu fárnix end péy tu Místar J. M. tu thi vélhu av tu hándad páunds et uán ar mór Táims eccarding es hi xal dizáiar it fram iú, teking his Bill ar Bills av Exchénge far úat iú xal so fárnix him úith end pát it to mái eccáunt, end this mái Létar av Credit xal be iúar fáffi xient Uárant far so dúing.

Regras, para se saber quando se hade Escrever com Letra grande, ou pequena.

As Letras grandes se não devem de uzar no meyo ou fim de qual quer Palavra, sem que toda ella seja composta dellas, mas sempre no principio; e ainda a-hi sômente nestes 6 Casos, asaber. 1. Em o Principio de qual quer Escritura. 2. Depois de Cada Periodo, ou Ponto final, quando começa

huã nova Sentença. 3. Em o Principio de cada re-
gra na Poezia, e qual quer Verso na Bibilia. 4. Em
Nomes Proprios, de todos os Generos, tanto de
Pessoas, Lugares, ou Couzas, &c. 5. Em Ter-
mos de Artes, e Nomes de dignidades, Officiaes,
ou outra qual quer Palavra de especial Veneração
em huã Sentença; ou a quem se da em particular
todo o devido Respeito. Tambem todos os Nomes
Substantivos podem começar com Letra grande;
e se podem conhecer pellos signaes, *a, an, ou, the,*
antes delles; *Ex. a Man,* hum Homem; *a Mouse,*
hum Rato; *an Ox,* hum Boy; *an Ass,* hum
Burra; *the City,* a Cidade; *the River,* a Ribeira,
&c. E ultimamente o pronome Pessoal *I, eu,* se
hade sempre Escrever com Capital ou Letra grande.
As pequenas se uzaõ em qual quer lugar que seja.

Das Paradas, ou Pontos, e Virgulas.

As Paradas servem para mostrar que distancia
de Tempo se deve observar entre Palavra e Palavra
quando se lê. E são tão absolutamente necessarias
para a melhor Inteligencia do que Escrevemos, e
lemos, que sem ellas, todas as Escrituras seriaõ muy
confuzas, sujeitas a contrarias interpretaçõens. São
4 a saber.

Comma, Semicólon, Cólon, e Período, ou
Ponto final.

Caha huma destas tem alguma a-finidade com o
Compasso da Muzica: Porque, o Comma, para
a Voz do Leitor entre-mentes q'elle possa com de-
liberação contar hum. O Semicólon, dous. O
Colon, tres; e o Período, ou Ponto final, Qua-
tro.

Comma (,) he huã Virgola ao pé de huma Pala-
vra.

Semicólon (;) Ponto, e Virgola.

Colon (:) dous Pontos.

Período

Periodo (.) hum Ponto só ao Pé de huã Palavra.

Porem em se preguntando huã Questão se põem hum risco em riba do Periodo, e se chama Interogação; assim (?)

Se de repente se expressa alguã couza de admiração, emtaõ se poem hum risco direito em riba do Periodo, e se chama nota de Admiração; assim (!)

Se huma Sentença estiver incluza com outra, da qual não he nem tem Parte, em taõ se poem dous meynos Circulos, e se chamaõ Entre Parenthesis, assim () e, quando se lê, estes fazem q' o Ton da Voz seja mais baixo, como huma couza que vem por acazo interrompendo a Coherencia e concordia do Periodo, e tirandolhe a força da intelligencia que de outro modo podera ter. Cada huã Parte delle tem o mesmo Tempo de deliberação como huã Virgola.

Estas que seguem são as Marcas, ou Characteres que mais se uzaõ quando se escreve.

O, Accento (') em estando em cima de huã Vogal, mostra, que o Ton, ou força da Voz na pronunciação está sobre a-quella Syllaba.

Apostrofa (') he huã Virgola que se poem em cima das Letras, e denota alguma Letra, ou Letras que se deixáraõ de Escrever em alguã Palavra para apressar a Pronunciação, Ex. *I'll, I will*; eu quero. *Would'st, Wouldest*; queres tu. *Shan't, shall not*; não eyde. *Ne'er, never*, nunca.

Asterism (*) he huma Estrela que serve de guia para alguã Remarca na Margem, ou ao Pé da Folha, ou Pagina.

Muytas dellas junctas significão que falta alguã couza na-quelle Passagem, ou relação do Author a qual tem defeito ou immodestia.

Breve, (~) he hum risco torto sobre huã Vogal.

Caret, (^) se poem debaixo da Regra, e denota, que alguma Letra, Palavra, ou Sentença, ficou de fora por erro, e se deve incluir exactamente adonde aponta.

Circumflex (^) he do mesmo talho como o Caret, mas sempre se poem encima de alguma Vogal em huã Palavra, e demonstra ser hua Syllaba longa, Ex. *Euphrates*.

Diæresis (¨) dous Pontos em cima de 2 Vogais em huã Palavra, que de outro modo fariaõ hum Diphthongo, e as reparte em duas diversas Syllabas.

Hyphen, (-) he hum risco derecho, o qual em estando no fim de huã Regra, denota, que as Syllabas de huã Palavra estaõ apartadas, e q̃. o resto della está no Principio da outra Regra.

Tambem se uza para ajuntar, ou Compor, de duas Palavras hua; Ex. *Ale-bouse*, Caza, ou Taverna de Cerveja; *Inn-keeper*, Estalajadeiro, ou Estalajadeira.

Estando por cima de huã Vogal, emtaõ naõ se chama propriamente Hyphen, mas sim huã Pilica, e de-nota haverse omitido hum *m*, ou *n*, quando se escreveo, Ex. *nothing is more commendable than fair Writing*; *nothing is more commendable than fair Writing*.

Naõ ha couza q̃. mereça mais louvor q̃. huã boa Letra.

Index, (✎) he Dedo diẽteiro a-pontando, e significa ser aquella Passagem ou relação notavel para aqual está pontando.

Obelisk, + se uza tambem como o Asterism *, e he para que o Leitor se refira a Margem. Em Dictionarios communmente, denota ser a Palavra Antigua, e de pouco uzo.

Paragraph, (¶) Paragrafo, ou Divizaõ contem varias Sentenças debaixo de hum Artigo, ou Discurso.

Paren-

Parentheses, [] ou Brackets, incluem Palavras, ou Sentenças do mesmo valor ou Significação com aquellas a quem se junctão, as quaes se podem uzar em su lugar.

Quotation, (") ou duas Virgolas a o reves, em o Principio de huã Regra, mostraõ a Passagem, ou Relação do Author que está Quotada, ou alegada em suas proprias Palavras.

Section, (§) ou divizaõ, se uza em o repartimento de hum Capitulo, ou Livro, em menos Partes, ou Porçoens.

Profodia, ou Accento das Palavras.

As Monosyllabas que terminaõ cum huã Consoante saõ breves, Ex. *Bar, bit, Car, fat, Fin, Hat, mad, Sbin, win, &c. lease, bér, bít, quer, fet Fín hét, méd, Xín, úin, &c.*

Aquellas que terminaõ com a Vogal e Saõ longas, Ex. *bare, bite, care, fare, fine, bate, made, sbine, Wine, lease, bér, baít, quér, fér, fain, ét méd, Xáin, úain, &c.*

As de duas Syllabas, tem o Accento ou na primeira, Ex. *ángel, Bánquet, cértain, Dánger, éarly, férvent, Gárment, búman, Jewel, Kíngdom, Lícence, Mémber, Náture, óintment, párdon, quárrrel, Ráiment, Sérmon, Témple, wánton, &c.* ou na ultima, Ex. *Abbór, begán, commánd, descénd, encámp, fomént, genteél, implóre, lámént, matúre, negléét, obscúre, permit, refórm, sincére, transfórm, vouchsáse.*

As de 3 Syllabas tem o Accento na primeira, Ex. *árgument, Báttlement, cáptivate, Decency. Excelence, Férvençy, Gárrison, Hármony, íntimate, Kíns-woman, Lénity, mágnify, négligent.*

Na Syllaba do meyo, Ex. *Advénture, cobérent, detérmine, encóunter, forbídden, immórtal, incéntive, inbérít, matérnal, noctúrnal, observance, presump-*

tive, ou na ultima, Ex. *Apprehénd, circumvênt, disappóint, entertain, importúne, intercêpt, overcharge, persêvere, reconcíle, thereupón.*

As de 4 Syllabas tem o Accento vario, por que huás vezes o tem na primeira, Ex. *âmiabíle, cômfortabíle, diligéntly, êfficacy, fôrmidabíle, glóriously, innocency, mércenary, náturally, óratory, pátrimony, sântuary*; outras vezes na segunda, Ex. *abúndantly, beháviour, commúnicáte, detérminate*, outras vezes na terceira, Ex. *Apprehénsion, Arbitrátor, comprehénsíve, disínbérít, howsoéver, ornámental*; outra vezes na quatra, Ex. *Legerdemáin, nevertheless, &c.*

As de 5 Syllabas sempre tem o Accento ou na segunda, Ex. *abóminabíle, commúnicabíle, extrávagantly, immédiateíy, notóriously, origináíly, perpétually, unnécessary*; ou nas do meyo, Ex. *Abdicá-tion, Admonítion, Benedíctíon, Ceremoníal, &c.*

As de 6 Syllabas tem quazi sempre o Accento na quarta, Ex. *Abominátion, Commémorátion, Disadvántágious, Ecclesiástical, Familiárity, Irregulá- rity, Mathematician, Qualificátion, &c.*

Das partes da Oraçam.

As partes de Oraçãõ são oyto, a saber Nome, Pronome, Verbo, Participio, Adverbio, Prepo- ziçãõ, Conjuncçãõ, Interjeiçãõ.

Nome.

Os Nomes são as Vozes, ou palavras, q' Sig- nificaõ alguma Couza, q' se vé, ouve, ou palpa; e fedividem, em duas Claces; a Saber em substantivos, e em adjectivos.

Os Substantivos significaõ a mesma Effencia, e entidade da Couza; Como, *Earth*, terra; *Stone*, pedra;

pedra; e podem estar na oração por Sy so sem ajuda de adjectivo.

Os adjectivos são Aquelles, q' significão a qualidade, ou Accidente da couza, Como, *good*, bom; *white*, branco; e não podem estar na oração sem ajuda de Substantivo, claro, ou es-condido;

Os Nomes Substantivos se dividem em proprios, e appellativos.

O nome proprio he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas proprias, e Certas, Como, *Romulus*, Romulo; *Rome*, Roma.

O nome appellativo he aquelle, q' Significa as Couzas Commuas, e incertas, Como, *King*, Rey; *Town*, Lugar.

Genero.

Todo o nome Substantivo, ou he de Genero Masculino, ou Feminino, ou Commum, ou Neutro.

Os nomes de Anjos, Homens, e animais Machos são do Genero Masculino.

Os nomes de femeas tanto de pessoas, Como de Animais são de Genero feminino.

Os nomes q' Significão hum, e outro Sexo São do Genero Commum, Como, *Cousin*, q' Significa, primo, ou prima; *Neighbour*, q' significa, vizinho, ou vizinha; *Servant*, Criado, ou Criada; *Thief*, Ladrao, ou Ladra,

Os nomes, em os quais se não pode discernir, nem conhecer o sexo, Como são, *the creeping Things*, As Couzas Reptis, q' Andão de Rasto, *the Fishes*, os peixes, são do Genero neutro.

Da Derivaçam dos Nomes.

O Nome, ou he primitivo, ou derivativo; o primitivo he aquelle, q' nao se deriva de outro, Como,

Como, *Love*, Amor; e derivativo he aquelle, q' se deriva de permitivo, Como, *Lover*, Amante, q' se deriva de *Love*.

A *Lingua Ingleza* Contem em si grande variedade de outras *Linguas*; por Cujá Razaó muyta parte de seus nomes tem sua derivação Nellas; o Curiozo, q' a quizer Saber, o podera conseguir recorrendo a *Bailey*, e a outras Diccionarios, q' a pequenés deste Volume, não permite mayor extensão.

Há Certos Substantivos materiais, a os quais ajuntandolhe huã destas Syllabas, er, yer, ou ster, formão outros substantivos, q' significão, o agente empregado nas Cōuzas. Ex.

<i>An Hat</i> , hum Chapeo.	<i>An Hatter</i> , Chapeleiro.
<i>Pot</i> , Panella.	<i>Potter</i> , o Leyro.
<i>Fish</i> , Peyxe.	<i>Fisher</i> , Pescador.
<i>Glove</i> , Luva.	<i>Glover</i> , Luveyro.
<i>Garden</i> , Jardim.	<i>Gardiner</i> , Jardineyro.
<i>Gun</i> , Canhaõ.	<i>Gunner</i> , Canhoneyro.
<i>Law</i> , Ley.	<i>Lawyer</i> , Jurista.
<i>Game</i> , Jogo.	<i>Gamester</i> , Jugador.
<i>Seam</i> , Cultura.	<i>Seamster</i> , Cultureyra.

Tambem ha certos Substantivos pessãoais, dos quais se formão outros Substantivos de dignidade, ajuntandolhe esta Syllaba, *Skip*, Ex.

<i>Apostle</i> , Apostolo.	<i>Apostleship</i> , Apostolado.
<i>Admiral</i> , Almirante.	<i>Admiralship</i> , Almirantafgo.
<i>Master</i> , Mestre.	<i>Master ship</i> , Magisterio.
<i>Lord</i> , Senhor.	<i>Lordship</i> , Senhoria.

Da mesma sorte a Syllaba, *Hood*, junta aos Substantivos tem a mesma força. Ex.

<i>Father</i> , Pay.	<i>Fatherhood</i> , Parternidade
<i>Child</i> , Criança.	<i>Childhood</i> , Mininice.
<i>Brother</i> , Irmão.	<i>Brotherhood</i> , Irmandade.
	<i>Man</i>

<i>Man</i> , Homem.	<i>Manhood</i> , Virilidade,
<i>False</i> , Falso.	<i>Falshood</i> , Falsidade.
<i>Priest</i> , Sacerdote.	<i>Priesthood</i> , Sacerdocio,

Tambem de mayor Parte dos Adjectivos terminados em, *full*, *less*, *ous*, *y*, *ish*, se formaõ Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ness*. Ex.

<i>Powerful</i> , podorefo.	<i>Powerfulness</i> , Poder.
<i>Wilful</i> , opinativo.	<i>Wilfulness</i> , Opinião.
<i>Careless</i> , sem cuydado.	<i>Carelessness</i> , Descuydo.
<i>Godly</i> , piadozo.	<i>Godliness</i> , Piedade.
<i>Crafty</i> , engenhozo.	<i>Craftiness</i> , Engenho.
<i>Foolish</i> , loco.	<i>Foolishness</i> , Locura.
<i>Righteous</i> , justo.	<i>Righteousness</i> , Justidade.
<i>Worthy</i> , digno.	<i>Worthiness</i> , Estimação.
<i>Devilish</i> , diabolico.	<i>Devilishness</i> , Diabrura.
<i>Brutish</i> , brutal.	<i>Brutishness</i> , Brutalidade.

Tambem há muytos Substantivos derivados do Latim, terminados variamente, porque hums terminaõ em, *ion*; derivados dos Latinos Acabados em, *io*, como, *Opinion*, Opinião, de *Opinio*; *Religion*, Religião, de *Religio*; *Question*, Pergunta, de *Questio*. Outros terminaõ em, *our*, derivados dos Latinos em, *or*, como, *Labour*, trabalho, de *Labor*, *Honour*, Honra, de *Honor*; *Favour*, Favor, de *Favor*; outros terminaõ em, *ty*, e se derivaõ dos Latinos em, *tas*, como, *Piety*, Piedade de *Pietas*; *Charity*, Caridade, de *Charitas*; *Liberality*, Liberalidade, de *Liberalitas*; *Purity*, Puridade, de *Puritas*; e outros muytos.

Dos Numeros dos Nomes.

Os Nomes tem Numero singular, e Numero plural; o singular he quando se fala de hum; como, *a King*, hum Rey; o plural, quando se fala de muytos, como, *Men*, Homens; *Kings*, Reys.

O numero plural se forma ordinariamente por ajuntamento de hum, & ao singular. Ex.

<i>The King,</i> o Rey.	<i>The Queen,</i> a Rainha.
<i>The Kings,</i> os Reys.	<i>The Queens,</i> as Rainhas.
<i>The Lord,</i> o Senhor.	<i>Book,</i> Livro.
<i>The Lords,</i> os Senhores.	<i>Books,</i> Livros.
<i>My Brother,</i>	Meu, Irmão.
<i>My Brothers,</i>	Meus, Irmãos.
<i>My Horse,</i>	Meu Cavallo.
<i>My Horses,</i>	Meus Cavallos.
<i>My House,</i>	Minha Caza.
<i>My Houses,</i>	Minhas Cazes.
<i>Tree,</i>	Arvore.
<i>Trees.</i>	Arvores.

Tres Excepções tem esta regra.

A primeyra he nos nomes, q' terminão o singular em, *ch, dg, se, sh, ss, x,* q' nestes se forma o plural ajuntandolhe, *es, ex.*

<i>Church,</i>	<i>Churches,</i>	Igrejas.
<i>Match,</i>	<i>Matches,</i>	Mechas.
<i>Hedge,</i>	<i>Hedges,</i>	Cercos.
<i>Horse,</i>	<i>Horses,</i>	Cavallos.
<i>Fish,</i>	<i>Fishes,</i>	Peyxes.
<i>Cross,</i>	<i>Crosses,</i>	Cruzes.
<i>Witness,</i>	<i>Witnesses,</i>	Testemunhas.
<i>Box,</i>	<i>Boxes,</i>	Caixas.

A segunda he nos nomes acabados em, *f,* ou, *fe,* q' estes formaõ o plural, mudando, *o, f,* ou *fe, em, ves.* Ex.

<i>Self,</i>	<i>Selves,</i>	mesmos.
<i>Knife,</i>	<i>Knives,</i>	Facas.
<i>Life,</i>	<i>Lives,</i>	Vidas.
<i>Calf,</i>	<i>Calves,</i>	Vitellas.
<i>Staff,</i>	<i>Staves,</i>	Bordõis, Baculos.
<i>Thief,</i>	<i>Thieves,</i>	Ladrois.
<i>Wife,</i>	<i>Wives,</i>	Mulheres cazadas.
<i>Loaf,</i>	<i>Loaves,</i>	Paens.

Ater-

Aterceyra he nos irregulares seguintes.

Man,	Men,	Homens.
Woman,	Women,	Mulheres.
Child,	Children,	Rapazes, crianças.
Ox,	Oxen,	Boys.
Mouse,	Mice,	Ratos.
Louse,	Lice,	Piolhos.
Die,	Dice,	Dados.
Foot,	Feet,	Pes.
Goose,	Geese,	Gansos.
Penny,	Pence,	Peniques.
Sow,	Swine,	Porcos.
Tooth,	Teeth,	Dentes.

Notese, q' ha Substantivos, q' não tem plural como, Gold, Ouro; Silver, Prata; Copper, Cobre; Lead, Chumbo, &c.

Das Declinações dos Nomes.

Os nomes em Inglez, se declinão por meyo de Artigos, e não por Mudança de terminações, como os Latinos e tem seis Casos, a saber, Nominativo, Genitivo, Dativo, Acuzativo, Vocativo, Ablativo.

Os artigos são *the*, *of*, *to*, *the*, *o*, *from*; o Artigo, *the*, corresponde ao artigo, o, a, os, as do Portuguez; e se applica ao Nominativo, e Acuzativo; o Artigo *of*, corresponde ao Artigo, de, da, des, das, e serve para o Genitivo; o Artigo, *to*, corresponde, ao Artigo, a, ao, para o, e serve, para o Dativo; o Artigo, *o*, he o mesmo q' em Portuguez, e se applica ao Vocativo; o Artigo, *from*, corresponde ao Artigo, de, do Portuguez, e serve para o Ablativo.

Notese q' supposto, *of*, e *from*, signifiquem, de, em Portuguez; com tudo, no Inglez se uza de, *of*, quando dois nomes substantivos, pertencentes a Couzas diversas, se encontraõ na oração; Como, *the Riches of England are great*. As Riquezas de Inglaterra são Grandes.

Ede;

É de, *from* se uza quando aquestaõ he feita, pella pergunta, unde, (de donde) dos Latinos; como, *from whence come you?* de donde vens? *I come from London*; eu venho de *Londres*; tudo o sobredito ficará manifesto, á vista da declinaçãõ que he na forma seguinte.

Singular.

N. *the King*, o Rey.

G. *of the King*, do Rey.

D. *to the King*, ao Rey.

Ac. *the King*, o Rey.

V. *o King*, o' Rey.

A. *from the King*, do Rey.

Tambem se pode declinar por meyo desta particula, *a, q*, em *Portuguez*, significa hum;

Singular.

N. *a King*, hum Rey.

G. *of a King*, de hum Rey.

D. *to a King*, á hum Rey.

Ac. *a King*, hum Rey.

V. *Caret*.

A. *from a King*, de hum Rey.

Advertindo q' se o nome Começa por hua vogal, he necessario uzár de *an*, em Lugar de, *a*. Ex.

N. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.

G. *of an Angel*, de hum Anjo.

D. *to an Angel*, a hum Anjo.

Ac. *an Angel*, hum Anjo.

A. *from an Angel*, de hum Anjo.

Para de-clinar e plural, não he necessario mais, q' juntar hum, *s*, ao singular, observando a mesma ordem.

No-

Notese q' os Artigos tanto servem par o masculino como para o feminino, e tanto, para o singular, como para o plural. Ex.

<i>A Man, and a Woman,</i>	Hum Homem, e huá mulher.
<i>A Brother, and a Sister,</i>	Hum Irmaão, o huá Irmã.
<i>The Father, and the Mother,</i>	O Pay, e a May.
<i>The Son, and the Daughter,</i>	O Filho, e a Filha.
<i>The Children,</i>	As Crianças.
<i>The Sun,</i>	O Sol.
<i>The Moon,</i>	A Lua.
<i>The Stars,</i>	As Estrellas.

Dos Adjectivos.

Os Nomes Adjectivos tem só huã Forma, como, *bitter*, amargo ; *sour*, azedo ; *sharp*, agudo ; *even*, igual ; *crafty*, astuto ; *greedy*, sófrego ; *warlike*, guerreyro, billicozo ; *large*, cumprido ; *fit*, capas, proporcionado ; *narrow*, estreito.

No Inglez servem para todo o genero, e para todo o numero ; idest, que o mesmo Adjectivo serve com o Substantivo ; seja este de qualquer genero, que for ; esteja no, singular, ou no plural, Ex.

<i>Good Boy,</i>	Bom Rapaz.
<i>Good Boys,</i>	Bons Rapazes.
<i>Good Girl,</i>	Boa Rapariga.
<i>Good Girls,</i>	Boas Raparigas.
<i>Wise Man,</i>	Sabio Homem.
<i>Wise Men,</i>	Sabios Homems.
<i>Wise Woman,</i>	Sabia Mulher.
<i>Wise Women,</i>	Sabias Mulheres.

Do

Do Modo, como muytos Adjectivos se formam.

Muytos Adjectivos se formaõ de Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *ful*, que importa huma Quantidade, da Qualidade, que o Substantivo significa, Ex.

<i>Joy</i> , Alegria,	<i>joyful</i> , alegre.
<i>Fruit</i> , Fruta,	<i>fruitful</i> , frutifero.
<i>Youth</i> , Mocidade,	<i>youthful</i> , juvenil.
<i>Care</i> , Cuydado,	<i>careful</i> , cuydadozo.
<i>Use</i> , Uzo,	<i>useful</i> , uzual.
<i>Deceit</i> , Dolo,	<i>deceitful</i> , dolozo.
<i>Disdain</i> , Desdém,	<i>disdainful</i> , desdémhozo.
<i>Grace</i> , Graça,	<i>graceful</i> , gracioso.
<i>Faith</i> , Fé,	<i>faithful</i> , fiel.
<i>Forget</i> , Esquécimento,	<i>forgetful</i> , esquecido.
<i>Beauty</i> , Fermoza,	<i>beautiful</i> , fermoza.
<i>Bounty</i> , Benignidade,	<i>bountiful</i> , benigno.
<i>Cheer</i> , Alegria,	<i>cheerful</i> , alegre.
<i>Skill</i> , Pericia,	<i>skillful</i> , perito.
<i>Powder</i> , Poder,	<i>powerful</i> , poderoso.
<i>Delight</i> , Delicia,	<i>delightful</i> , delicioso.
<i>Distrust</i> , Desconfiança,	<i>distrustful</i> , desconfiado.
<i>Dread</i> , Medo,	<i>dreadful</i> , medroso.
<i>Will</i> , Vontade,	<i>wilful</i> , voluntario.
<i>Hurt</i> , Danno,	<i>hurtful</i> , danoso.
<i>Pain</i> , Dôr,	<i>painful</i> , doloroso.
<i>Watch</i> , Vigia,	<i>watchful</i> , vigilante.
<i>Plenty</i> , Abundancia,	<i>plentiful</i> , abundante.

Outros se formaõ de Substantivos, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *less*, que importa huma privação daquillo, que o Substantivo significa. Ex.

<i>Beard</i> , Barba.	<i>beardless</i> , desbarbado.
<i>Blame</i> , Culpa.	<i>blameless</i> , sem culpa.

Fa-

<i>Father</i> , Pay,	<i>fatherless</i> , orphaõ.
<i>Friend</i> , Amigo,	<i>friendless</i> , sem amigo.
<i>God</i> , Deus,	<i>godless</i> , sem deus.
<i>End</i> , Fim,	<i>endless</i> , sem fim.
<i>Name</i> , Nome,	<i>nameless</i> , sem nome.
<i>Question</i> , Questão,	<i>questionless</i> , sem questão.
<i>Sense</i> , Sentido,	<i>senseless</i> , sem sentido.
Outros se formaõ, ajuntandolhe hum, <i>ous</i> , Ex.	
<i>Danger</i> , Perigo,	<i>dangerous</i> , perigozo.
<i>Courage</i> , Animo.	<i>courageous</i> , animozo.
<i>Malice</i> , Malicia,	<i>malicious</i> , maliciozo.
<i>Harmony</i> , Armonia,	<i>harmonious</i> , armoniozo.
<i>Valour</i> , Valor,	<i>valourous</i> , valerozo.
<i>Zeal</i> , Zello,	<i>zealous</i> , zellozo.
<i>Monster</i> , Monstro,	<i>monstrous</i> , monstuozo.
<i>Outrage</i> , Contumelia,	<i>outrageous</i> , contumeliozo.
<i>Marvel</i> , Maravilha,	<i>marvellous</i> , maravilhozo.
<i>Rigour</i> , Rigor,	<i>rigorous</i> , rigorozo.
<i>Virtue</i> , Virtude,	<i>virtuous</i> , virtuozo.
Outros se formaõ ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, <i>ly</i> , Ex.	
<i>God</i> , Deus,	<i>godly</i> , piadozo.
<i>Brother</i> , Irmaõ,	<i>brotherly</i> , irmandade.
<i>Earth</i> , Terra,	<i>earthly</i> , terrestre.
<i>Heaven</i> , Ceo,	<i>heavenly</i> , celeste.
<i>Love</i> , Amor,	<i>lovely</i> , amavel.
<i>Order</i> , Ordem,	<i>orderly</i> , ordenado.
Outros se formaõ ajuntandolhe hum, <i>y</i> , Ex.	
<i>Blood</i> , Sangue,	<i>bloody</i> , sanguinho.
<i>Dirt</i> , Lama,	<i>dirty</i> , lamacento.
<i>Guilt</i> , Culpa,	<i>guilty</i> , culpado.
<i>Hair</i> , Cabello,	<i>hairy</i> , cabelludo.
<i>Hunger</i> , Fome,	<i>hungry</i> , faminto.
<i>Mud</i> , Limo,	<i>muddy</i> , limozo.
<i>Need</i> , Necessidade,	<i>needy</i> , necessitado.
<i>Sand</i> , Areia,	<i>sandy</i> , areozo.
<i>Stone</i> , Pedra,	<i>stony</i> , pedragozo.
<i>Wind</i> , Vento,	<i>windy</i> , ventozo.

T

Outros

Outros se formam ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, ish Ex.

<i>Brute</i> , Bruto,	<i>brutish</i> , brutal.
<i>Devil</i> , Diabo,	<i>devilish</i> , diabolico.
<i>Fool</i> , Estulto,	<i>foolish</i> , fatuo.
<i>Sot</i> , Tonto, Bebado,	<i>sottish</i> , atontado, embebedado.
<i>Water</i> , Agua,	<i>waterish</i> , aguado.
<i>Whore</i> , Puta,	<i>whorish</i> , putanheiro.
<i>Child</i> , Criança,	<i>childish</i> , pueril.

Porem se esta Syllaba, ish, se junta a Adjectivos, diminue sua significam. Ex.

<i>White</i> , branco,	<i>whitish</i> , branquinho.
<i>Red</i> , vermelho,	<i>reddish</i> , vermelhinho.
<i>Black</i> , negro,	<i>blackish</i> , negrinho.
<i>Cold</i> , frio,	<i>coldish</i> , friozinho.
<i>Sweet</i> , doce,	<i>sweetish</i> , docezinho.

Outros se formam ajuntandolhe a particula, able, Ex.

<i>Season</i> , Oportunidade,	<i>seasonable</i> , oportuno.
<i>Blame</i> , Culpa,	<i>blameable</i> , culpavel.
<i>Answer</i> , Reposta,	<i>answerable</i> , responsavel.
<i>Change</i> , Troco,	<i>changeable</i> , comutavel.
<i>Cure</i> , Cura,	<i>curable</i> , curavel.
<i>Favour</i> , Favor,	<i>favourable</i> , favoravel.
<i>Marriage</i> , Cazamento,	<i>marriageable</i> , cazadeira.
<i>Note</i> , Nota,	<i>notable</i> , notavel.
<i>Pardon</i> , perdão,	<i>pardonable</i> , perdoavel.
<i>Profit</i> , proveito,	<i>profitable</i> , proveytozo.

Outros se formam ajuntandolhes as Syllabas, cal, al, ical, Ex.

<i>Rhetorick</i> , Rhetorica,	<i>Rhetorical</i> , Rhetorico.
<i>Angel</i> , Anjo,	<i>Angelical</i> , Angelico.

Can-

<i>Canon</i> , o Canon,	<i>canonical</i> , canonico.
<i>Logic</i> , Logica,	<i>logical</i> , logico.
<i>Musick</i> , Muzica,	<i>musical</i> , muzico.
<i>Allegorick</i> , Allegoria,	<i>allegorical</i> , allegorico.
<i>Accident</i> , Accidente,	<i>accidental</i> , accidental.
<i>History</i> , Historia,	<i>historical</i> , historico.
<i>Method</i> , Methodo,	<i>methodical</i> , methodico.
<i>Person</i> , Pessoa,	<i>personal</i> , pessoal.

Dos Graos de Comparação.

Em os Nomes Adjectivos, tem só Lugar a comparação; em aqual se admitem três graos; a saber positivo, que significa a simples qualidade, ou quantidade da Couza; como *big*, grande; *white*, branco; comparativo, que eleva a couza a mais alto Lugar; como, *bigger*, mais grande; *whiter*, mais branco; e superlativo, que a exalta ao mais alto Lugar; como, *biggest*, o mais grande; *whitest*, o mais branco.

O Comparativo formase do positivo, ajuntando-lhe a Syllaba, *er*, regularmente; e o superlativo, ajuntandolhe a Syllaba, *est*, Ex.

Low, baixo; *lower*, mais baixo; *lowest*, o mais baixo.

Great, grande; *greater*, mayor; *greatest*, o mayor.

High, alto, *higher*, mais alto, *highest*, o mais alto.

Tambem se pode formar com as dicções, *more*, e *most*, a primeira para expressar o comparativo, e segunda, o superlativo, o que communmente tem Lugar nos Adjectivos, que terminaõ, em, *ous*, Ex.

Charles is ingenious,	Carlos he engenhozo.
William is more ingenious,	Guilherme, he mais engenhozo.

276 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

George is the most ingenious in the World,

Glorious, gloriozo.

More glorious,

The most glorious.

Jealous, zelozo.

More jealous,

The most jealous,

George he o mais engenhozo no Mundo.

mais gloriozo.

o mais gloriozo.

mais zelozo.

o mais zelozo.

Das comparaçoens irregulares.

Good, better, the best, bom, melhor, o melhor.

Ill, bad, naught, mao, worse, peyor, the worst, o mais peyor.

Much, muyto, more, mais, most, o mais.

Little, pouco, less, menos, the least, o minimo.

Dos Pronomes.

O Pronome he aquelle, que se poem em Lugar do nome; declinasse tambem por Cazos, tendo Numero singular, e plural.

Ha quatro especies de Pronomes; pessoais, possessivos, demonstrativos, e relativos.

Os pessoays são, *I, eu, thou, tu, he, elle* no Numero singular; e *we nos, ye ou you, they, elles*, no plural. Se declinao na Forma seguinte.

Singular.

N. I ou me, eu.

G. of me, de mi.

D. to me, a mi.

A. me, a mi.

Ab. from me, de mi.

Plural.

N. We, nos.

G. of us, de nos.

D. to us, à nos.

A. us, a nos.

Ab. from us, de nos.

Sin-

Singular.

N. <i>thou,</i>	tu.
G. <i>of thee,</i>	de ti.
D. <i>to thee,</i>	a ti.
Ac. <i>thee,</i>	a ti.
V. <i>o thou,</i>	ó tu.
A. <i>from thee,</i>	de ti.

Plural.

N. <i>ye,</i>	vos.
G. <i>of you,</i>	de vos.
D. <i>to you,</i>	a vos.
Ac. <i>you,</i>	á vos.
V. <i>o ye,</i>	ó vos.
A. <i>from you,</i>	de vos.

Sing.

N. <i>he, elle.</i>
G. <i>of him, delle.</i>
D. <i>to him, a elle.</i>
Ac. <i>him, a elle.</i>
A. <i>from him, delle.</i>

Plur.

N. <i>they, elles.</i>
G. <i>of them, delles.</i>
D. <i>to them, a elles.</i>
Ac. <i>them, a elles.</i>
A. <i>from them, delles.</i>

Sing.

N. <i>she, ella.</i>
G. <i>of her, della.</i>
D. <i>to her, a ella.</i>
Ac. <i>her, a ella.</i>
A. <i>from her, della.</i>

Plur.

o plural de, *she, he* o mesmo q' o de, *he, a* fima.

Os Pronomes possessivos são aquelles, qu' mostraõ a posse das Couzas ; estes são de duas maneyras, ou Conjunctivos, ou absolutos.

Os Conjunctivos são aquelles, q' se juntaõ aos Substantivos, q' significão as entidades possuidas, Ex.

<i>My Father,</i>	meu Pay.
<i>My Mother,</i>	minha Mãe.

278 Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.

<i>My Sister,</i>	minha Irmã.
<i>My Brother,</i>	meu Irmaõ.
<i>My Friends,</i>	meus Amigos.
<i>Tby Horse,</i>	teu Cavallo.
<i>Tby Mare,</i>	tua Egua.
<i>Tby Dogs,</i>	teus Cães.
<i>Tby Bitches,</i>	tuas Cadellas.
<i>His Ox,</i>	seu Boy.
<i>His Cow,</i>	sua Vaca.
<i>His Cocks,</i>	seus Gallos.
<i>His Hens,</i>	suas Gallinhas.
<i>Our Houses,</i>	Nossas Cazas.
<i>Your Book,</i>	Vosso Livro.
<i>Your Books,</i>	Vossos Livros.
<i>Their Country,</i>	seu Pays.
<i>Their Cities,</i>	suas Cidades.

Notese, que quando a Couza possuida pretenceo a macho, se uza do possessivo, *his*, e pertencendo a femea, se uza do possessivo, *her*, declinaõse os se- breditos possessivos na forma seguinte.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
N. <i>my</i> , meu minha	meus, minhas.
G. <i>of my</i> , de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.
D. <i>to my</i> , a meu, a minha,	a meus, a minhas.
A. <i>my</i> , meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
V. <i>o my</i> , ó meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
A. <i>from my</i> , de meu, de minha,	de meus, de minhas.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plural.</i>
N. <i>tby</i> , teu tua,	teus, tuas.
G. <i>of tby</i> , de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.
D. <i>to tby</i> , a teu, a tua,	a teus, a tuas.
A. <i>tby</i> , teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
V. <i>o tby</i> , o teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
A. <i>from tby</i> , de teu, de tua,	de teus, de tuas.

Sing.

Sing.

Plur.

- N. *bis*, seu, sua, seus, suas.
 G. *of bis*, de seu, de sua. de seus, de suas.
 D. *to bis*, a seu, a sua, a seus, a suas.
 A. *bis*, seu, sua, seus, suas.
 Ab. *from bis*, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.

Sing.

Plur.

- N. *her*, seu, sua, seus, suas.
 G. *of her*, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.
 D. *to her*, a seu, a sua, a seus, a suas.
 A. *her*, seu, sua, seus, suas.
 Ab. *from her*, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.

Sing.

- N. *our*, nosso, nossa.
 G. *of our*, de nosso, de nossa.
 D. *to our*, a nosso, a nossa.
 A. *our*, nosso, nossa.
 V. *o our*, 'o nosso, a nossa.
 Ab. *from our*, de nosso, de nossa.

Plur.

- N. *ours*, nossos, nossas.
 G. *of ours*, de nossos, de nossas.
 D. *to ours*, a nossos, a nossas.
 A. *ours*, nossos, nossas.
 V. *o ours*, o nossos, o nossas.
 Ab. *from ours*, de nossos, de nossas.

Sing.

- N. *your*, vosso, vossa.
 G. *of your*, de vosso, de vossa.
 D. *to your*, a vosso, a vossa.
 A. *your*, vosso, vossa.
 V. *o your*, o vosso, o vossa.
 Ab. *from your*, de vosso, de vossa.

T 4

Plural.

Plural.

N. *yours*, vossos, vossas.
 G. *of yours*, de vossos, de vossas.
 D. *to yours*, a vossos, a vossas.
 A. *yours*, vossos, vossas.
 V. *o yours*, o vossos! o vossas!
 Ab. *from yours*, de vossos, de vossas.

Sing.

N. *their*, seu, sua,
 G. *of their* de seu, de sua.
 D. *to their*, a seu, a sua.
 A. *the*, seu, sua.
 V. *o their*, o seu! o sua!
 Ab. *from their*, de seu, de sua.

Plural.

N. *theirs*, seus, suas.
 G. *of theirs*, de seus, de suas.
 D. *to theirs*, a seus, a suas.
 A. *theirs*, seus, suas.
 V. *o theirs*, o seus! o suas!
 Ab: *from theirs*, de seus, de suas.

Notese, q', *their*, se pode aplicar no plural; como tambem, *yours*, se pode uzar no singular, e, *your*, no plural.

Os Absolutos são aquelles, q' senão juntaõ immediatamente aos Substantivos; se não por via de conjuncção; os quais são os seguintes.

<i>mine</i> , meu, minha,	meus, minhas.
<i>thine</i> , teu, tua,	teus, tuas.
<i>his</i> , seu, sua,	seus, suas.
<i>her</i> , seu, sua,	seus, suas.
<i>ours</i> ,	nossos, nossas.

their,

their, sua, seus, suas,
your, voffo, voffa, vossos, voffas,
yours, voffo, voffa, vossos, voffas.

Ex.

<i>Your Father and mine,</i>	voffo Pay, e meu.
<i>Your House and mine,</i>	voffa Caza, e minha.
<i>Your Friends and mine,</i>	vossos Amigos, e meus.
<i>Your Daughter and mine,</i>	voffa Filha, e minha.
<i>My Country and yours,</i>	meu Pays e voffo.
<i>My Friend and yours,</i>	meus Amigos, e vossos.
<i>Our Servants and theirs,</i>	nossos Moços, e seus.
<i>Their Opinion and ours,</i>	sua Opinião e nossa.
<i>My Horse runs better than yours,</i>	meu Cavallo corre mel- hor, q' o voffo.
<i>I am at your service,</i>	eu estou a voffo Serviço.
<i>I am at yours,</i>	eu estou ao voffo.

Notese, q' os mais dos Sobreditos possessivos, sendo de sua natureza Conjunctivos, como fica a-
 tras ditto, se fazem accidentalmente absolutos,
 por se juntar por Cazualidade por via de Conjun-
 ção aos Substantivos; e q' entre elles so, *mine*, e
thine, são propria, e realmente absolutos, porque
 estes nunca se juntaõ aos Substantivos immediata-
 mente se naõ por via de Conjuncção, e commu-
 nemente se applicaõ em Repostas. Como, *whose*
Book is this? de quem he este Livro? *is mine*, he
 meu; *is thine*, he teu: Sua declinação he na for-
 ma seguinte.

- N. *mine*, meu, minha, meus minhas.
- G. *of mine*, de meu, de minha, de meus de minhas.
- D. *to mine*, a meu, a minha, a meus a minhas.
- A. *mine*, meu, minha, meus, minhas.
- V. *o mine*, ó meu, ó minha, ó meus, ó minhas.
- A. *from mine*, de meu, de minha, de meus, de minhas.

N.

282 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

- N. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.
 G. *of thine*, de teu, de tua, de teus, de tuas.
 D. *to thine*, a teu, a tua, a teus, a tuas.
 A. *thine*, teu, tua, teus, tuas.
 V. *o thine*, ó teu, ó tua, ó teus, ó tuas.
 A. *from thine*, de teu, de tua, de teus, de tuas.

Os Pronomes demonstrativos, são aquelles q' fazem demonstração das pessoas ou Cozas. Ex.

<i>this Man,</i>	este Homem.
<i>these Men,</i>	estes Homens.
<i>that Man,</i>	aquelle Homem.
<i>those Men,</i>	aquelles Homens.
<i>this Woman,</i>	esta Mulher.
<i>these Women,</i>	estas Mulheres.
<i>that Woman,</i>	aquella Mulher.
<i>those Women,</i>	aquellas Mulheres.
<i>that same,</i>	aquillo mesmo.
<i>that vexes me,</i>	aquillo me emraivece.

Sua declinação he na Forma seguinte.

Singular.

Plural.

N. <i>this</i> , este, esta.	N. <i>these</i> , estes, estas.
G. <i>of this</i> , deste desta.	G. <i>of these</i> , destes, destas.
D. <i>to this</i> , a este, a esta.	D. <i>to these</i> , a estes, a estas.
Ac. <i>this</i> , este, esta.	Ac. <i>these</i> , estes, estas.
Ab. <i>from this</i> , deste, desta.	Ab. <i>from these</i> , destes, destas.

Singular.

- N. *that*, aquelle, aquella.
 G. *of that*, daquelle, daquella.
 D. *to that*, a aquelle, a aquella.
 Ac. *that*, aquelle, aquella.
 Ab. *from that*, daquelle, daquella.

Plu-

Plural.

- N. *those*, aquellas, aquellas.
 G. of *those*, daquelles, daquellas.
 D. to *those*, á aquellas, á aquellas.
 Ac. *those*, aquellas, aquellas.
 Ab. from *those*, daquelles, daquellas.

Quando, *that*, he Relativo se usa dos Pronomes pessoais, e não dos demonstrativos. Ex.

He that is content is rich aquella q' está contente
 enough. he bastante rico.
She that you know, aquella, q' tu conheces,
They, that you spoke to aquelles de quem vos me
 me of. falasteis.

Tambem se usa destes Pronomes, *this*, e *that*, por evitar a repetição de hum nome. Ex.

This Knife doth not cut so esta faca não corta tão
 well as *that* which I bem como aquella, q'
 lost. eu perdi.
That Cloth is not so fine, este pano não tão fino,
 as *that* you bought yes- como aquella q' tu
 terday. compraste hontem.
My Book is better than meu Livro he melhor q'
 that. aquella.
Your Horse runs better vosso Cavallo corre mel-
 than *this*. hor, q' este.
Our House is bigger than nossa Caza he mayor q'
this. esta.
Our Bells ring better than nossos Sinos tangem mel-
those. hor q' aquelles.

Das Pronomes Relativos.

Os Pronomes Relativos são aquelles, q' se refe-
 rem aos Substantivos, q' lhe ficam atrás; e são tres,
 a sa-

284 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

afaber, *who*, *which*, e, *that*, o, se declinaõ na forma seguinte, sendo de todo o gênero e de todo o numero.

Singular.

N. *Who*, quem ou que.

G. *of whom*, de quem.

D. *to whom*, a quem.

Ac. *whom*, quem.

Ab. *from whom*, de quem.

Plural.

N. *Who*, que ou quem.

G. *of whom*, dos que, ou de quem.

D. *to whom*, aos que, ou a quem.

Ac. *whom*, que.

Ab. *from whom*, dos que, ou de quem.

Singular.

Plural.

N. *which*, o que, o qual, a qual, os q', os quais.

G. *of which*, de q', do qual, da q', dos q', das quais.

D. *to which*, ao q', á qual, aos q', aos quais.

Ac. *which*, oq', o qual, a qual, os q', as quais.

Ab. *from which*, do q', da qual, dos q', das quais.

That se declina na mesma Forma; mas nesta natureza de Relativo, he de todo, o genero, e de todo, o numero, e emtam significa, que, ou o qual;

Notese, q' o Pronome, *who*, se refere só a pessoas. Ex.

Alexander, *who found the Earth too little, of whom you speak.* Alexandre, que achou o Mundo muito piqueno de quem falais vos.

He is a Man *of whom I have received many favours.* Este he hum homem de quem eu tenho recebido muitos favores.

To

<i>To whom I am much obliged.</i>	A quem eu estou muito Obrigado.
<i>There are the Gentlemen of whom we have spoken so much.</i>	La estão os Gentis Homens, de quem nos havemos falado tanto.
<i>These are the Gentlewomen of whom we have bought.</i>	Estas são as Gentis mulheres de quem nos havemos comprado.

Which, e that, se referem a pessoas, e a Couzas indiferentemente.

<i>The Man, that lives well.</i>	O Homem q' vive bem.
<i>The Woman, which works.</i>	A Mulher, q' trabalha.
<i>The Birds that fly.</i>	As Aves q' voão.
<i>There are Predictions, which advertise us of our Misfortunes.</i>	Ellas são predicções, q' nos Avizaõ de nossas Desgrças.
<i>Gold is a Metal, which do's help us in all our Wants.</i>	O ouro he hum Metal, q' nos ajuda em todas nossas Faltas:
<i>Which makes the Execution of our Designs easy; and which makes us to triumph over all Difficulties.</i>	Q. faz a Execução de nossos Dizignos facil; eq', nos faz triumphar sobra todas as Difficuldades.

Estes Pronomes Relativos sam tambem Interrogativos. Ex.

<i>Who is there?</i>	Quem está lá?
<i>Who comes here?</i>	Quem vem aqui?
<i>Who is that Man?</i>	Quem he aquelle Homem?
<i>Who is that Woman?</i>	Quem he aquella Mulher?
<i>Who are those Men?</i>	Quem são aquelles Homens?

Which

<i>Which will you have?</i>	Qual quereis vos?
<i>Which of these two Horses do you like best?</i>	Qual destes dois Cavallos, te agrada melhor?
<i>From whom have you this News?</i>	De quem tendes vof estas novas?
<i>Which is it?</i>	Qual he elle?
<i>Which is the way?</i>	Qual he o Caminho?
<i>Which of the two?</i>	Qual dos dois?

Uzaſſe deſte Pronome, *what*, quando no Portu-
guez ſe uza, o que, no Principio de hum Periodo,
como tambem diante das peſſoas, couzas, e Verbos,
quando ſe faz alguã interrogacão, Ex.

<i>What you ſay is true?</i>	O q' tudizes he verdade.
<i>What he doth is worth nothing.</i>	O q' faz elle, não val nada.
<i>What the Heart thinketh, the Tongue ſpeaketh.</i>	O q' o Coraçã cuyda, diz a Lingua.
<i>What one wins, the other ſpends.</i>	O q' Ganha hum, o outro diſpende.
<i>Give what you can.</i>	Da o que tu Podes.
<i>Say what you know.</i>	Dize o q' tu ſabes.
<i>What Man is that?</i>	Q' Homem he aquelle?
<i>What Book is that?</i>	Q' Livro he aquelle?
<i>What trade are you of?</i>	De q' Officio ſois?
<i>What ſay you?</i>	Q' dizes tu?
<i>What do you aſk?</i>	Q' procuras tu?
<i>What will you drink?</i>	Q' queres tu beber?
<i>What do you want?</i>	Q' neceſſitas tu?

Eſta palavra, *where*, acompanhada das Prepoz-
içõis, *about*, *at*, *in*, *of*, *unto*, *with*, he uzada em
Lugar de, *which*, Ex.

<i>Where about,</i>	Arredor, do qual, ou da qual.
<i>Where at,</i>	Ao qual, ou á qual.
	<i>Wherein</i>

Wherein, Em o qual, ou em a qual.
Wherewith, Com o qual, ou com a qual.
Whereunto, Ao qual, ou á qual.

Notese, qu' o Inglez expressa o Relativo, *o*, do Portuguez, pella Syllaba *it*, q' quando se refere a Couzas antecedentes, tem força de Relativo, *Ex.*

I have not seen it, Eu não o vi.
Do you see the King's Coach? I see it. Ves tu o Coche do Rey? eu o vejo.
It shall be of fine Flour, Sera de fina Farinha.
It is a thing the most holy, He a Couza a mais sagrada.

Declinasse na maneyra seguinte.

N. it, elle, ou ella.
G. of it, de elle ou de ella.
D. to it, a elle, ou a ella.
Ac. it, elle ou ella.
Ab. from it, de elle, ou de ella.

Notese, que a Syllaba, *its*, tem força de possessivo, significando, seu, sua, seus, suas, e se declina na Forma seguinte.

N. its, seu, sua, seus, suas.
G. of its, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.
D. to its, a seu, a sua, a seus, a suas.
Ac. its, seu, sua, seus, suas.
Ab. from its, de seu, de sua, de seus, de suas.

Dos Verbos.

O Verbo he hua Parte da Oraçaõ, que tem modos, e tempos, e não se declina por Cazos.

O Verbo he pessoal, ou impessoal; o impessoal se conjuga só pellas terceyras pessoas do singular; como, *it raineth*, chove; *it bloweth*, aventa.

O Verbo pessoal se conjuga por todas as seis pessoas; a saber tres no singular; *I love*, eu amo; *thou lovest*, tu amas; *he loveth*, elle ama e tres no plural a saber; *we love*, nos amamos; *ye* ou *you love*, vos amais; *they love*, elles amaõ.

O Verbo pessoal se divide em activo, passivo, e neutro.

O Verbo Activo he aquelle q' exercita a acção com relação a algũa Couza, como, *I read*, eu Leo; *I love*, eu amo; *I write*, eu escrevo; os quais verbos dizem relação ao que se lê ao que se ama, e ao que se escreve.

O Passivo he aquelle em que se padece algũa acção; como, *I am loved*, eu feu amado.

O Neutro he aquelle q' produz e exercita a acção em sy mesmo; como, *I am*, eu sou; *I exist*, eu existo.

O Verbo tem seis Modos, a saber, modo Indicativo, que demonstra; como, *I speak*, eu falo.

Modo Imperativo, que manda; como, *do thou that*, faze aquillo; *let him do that*, faça elle aquillo.

Modo Optativo, q' dezeja conhecido pellos signais, *God grant*, *please God*, *wish God*, *would to God*; como, *O that, God grant I may do that*, oxala faça eu aquillo.

Modo Potencial, conhecido pellos signais, *may*, *can*, *might*, *should*, *could*, *would*, *ought*, v. g. *I may*, ou *can love*, *I might*, ou *I should*, &c. *love*, amaria ou poderia eu amar, &c.

Modo Conjunctivo que ajunta a acção a algum Tempo, ou pessoa, conhecido pellos signais, *how*, *as*, *when*, *if*, *although*, v. g. *as I love*, como, eu amo, &c.

O Modo Infinito, que poem o Verbo sem definir Tempo, pessoa, e Numero, v. g. *to speak*, fallar.

O

O Modo Indicativo tem cinco Tempos, a saber, Tempo presente, que significa o que actualmente, se está fazendo, v. g. *I love*, eu amo.

Preterito Imperfeito, que significa a acção passada mais ainda não totalmente acabada; v. g. *I loved*, eu amava.

Preterito Perfeito, que significa a acção já passada, e finida, v. g. *I loved*, ou *have loved*, eu amey, ou tenho amado.

Preterito Plusquam Perfeito, que vem a ser mais que perfeito, e significa a acção de tal sorte passada, que já não pode ser interrompida, v. g. *I had loved*, eu tinha amado.

Futuro, que significa a acção, que ha de ser, ou vir v. g. *I shall*, ou *will love*, eu amarey.

Os tempos dos Mais modos se veraõ pella conjugação dos Verbos.

Alem do referido se ha de notar que ha dois Verbos auxiliares, a saber, o Verbo, *to have*, e o Verbo *to be*.

O verbo, *to have*, serve para ajudar a Formar os perfeitos compostos, e os plusquam perfeitos dos Verbos Activos; v. g. *I have loved*, *I had loved*.

O Verbo, *to be*, serve para formar os Verbos Passivos, ajuntandolhe os Participios do Preterito dos Verbos que se Necessitaõ aos Tempos do dito Verbo, *to be*, v. g. *I am loved*, eu sou amado, seguindo da mesma Sorte pellos mais Tempos, e Modos.

E porque para a formação dos Tempos assima referidos são necessarios estes dois Verbos auxiliares por elles se da Principio ás Conjugações, *to have*, ter, ou haver.

Modo Indicativo, Tempo presente.

Singular.

I have, eu tenho, ou hey.
Thou hast, tu tens, ou has.
He hath, ou has, elle tem, ou ha.

Plural.

We have, &c. ye, ou you have, &c. they have, &c.

Preter Imperf.

Singular.

I had, eu tinha, ou havia.
Thou badst, he bad, &c.

Plural.

We bad, &c. ye, ou you bad, &c. they bad, &c.

Preter Perf.

Singular.

I have had, eu tive, ou houve tido.
Thou badst had, &c. he hath had, &c.

Plural.

We have had, &c. ye, ou you have had, &c.
They have had, &c.

Preter Plusquam Perfeito.

Singular.

I bad bad, ou tinha, ou havia tido.
Thou badst bad, &c. he bad bad, &c.

Plural.

Plural.

We bad bad, &c. ye ou you bad bad, &c.

They bad bad, &c.

Futuro.

Singular.

I shall ou will have, eu terey, ou haverey.

Thou shalt, ou wilt have, be shall, ou will have.

Plural.

We shall, ou will have, ye, ou you shall, ou will have, they shall, ou will have.

Imperative.

Singular.

Have thou, tem, tu, ou, há tu.

Let him have, tenha, ou haja elle.

Plural.

Let us have, have ye, ou have you, let them have.

Modo Potencial.

Singular.

I may ou can have, tenha ou haja ou possa ter eu.

Thou mayst, ou canst have, ou you may, ou can have, be may, ou can have.

Plural.

We may, ou can have, ye, ou you may, ou can have, they may, ou can have.

Preter Imperf.

Singular.

I might have, teria, ou haveria ou poderia eu ter.

Singular.

Thou mightest have, ou you might have, he might have.

Plural.

We might have, ye, ou you might have, they might have.

Preter Perfect.

Singular.

I might have had, pude eu ter, ou haver, thou mightest have had, he might have had.

Plural.

We might have had, ye, ou you might have had, they might have had.

Preter Plusquam.

Singular.

*I might have had * had, pudera eu ter, ou haver, thou mightest, ou you might have had * had, he might have had * had.*

Plural.

*We might have had * had, ye, ou you might have had * had, they might have had * had.*

Nota-se que neste Tempo, e no Preterito imperfecto, do perfeito acima se podem fazer as mesmas formações com o signais, could, would, ought, should; formandoos, como com o signal, might.

*Nota-se, tambem que o * had que vai com estrela communmente se supprime, e não se expressa; distinguindo-se então o perfeito do plusquam perfeito, pello sentido da oração: e estas anotações servirão para todas as conjugações, e formações dos mais Verbos.*

Futuro.

Futuro.

Singular.

I may, ou can have hereafter, poderey eu ter ou haver, thou mayst, ou canst, ou you may, ou can have hereafter, he may, ou can have hereafter.

Plural.

We may, ou can have hereafter, ye, ou you may, ou can have hereafter, they may, ou can have hereafter.

Modo Optativo.

Os Tempos deste modo se formão ajuntando ao Verbo hum dos Adverbos, ou signais de dezejo como, *please God, grant God, o' that, &c.* v. g. *o' that I may have*, oxala tenha, ou haja eu, *o' that thou mayst*, ou *you may have*, oxala tenhas ou hajas tu, &c. e assim nos mais Tempos. Notando que os signais dos Tempos são só os que se mudaõ, conservando sempre o Verbo da mesma sorte; o que se observará para todas as Conjugações.

Modo Conjunctivo.

Os Tempos deste modo se formão como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da mesma sorte ao Modo Potencial, huã das Conjugções, *as, if, when, how, although*, v. g. *as I may have*, como eu tenho, ou hey; seguindo da mesma Sorte nos mais Tempos; e guardando, e observando o que se advertio no Potencial do **bad* com estrela.

Infinit.

Present.

To have, ter ou haver.

U 3

Preter.

Preter. Perf.

To have had, ter ou haver tido.

Gerundio.

Of having, de ter ou de haver, in having, for having.

Supino.

To have, para ter, ou haver.

To be had, para ser tido ou havido.

Participio Present.

Having, tendo, ou havendo.

Particip. Preter.

Had, tido, ou havido.

Participio Futuro.

To be about to have, o que hade ter ou haver.

Do Verbo.

To be, ser, ou estar.

Indicat. Present.

Sing.

I am, eu sou, ou estou, thou art, he is.

Plural.

We are, ye ou you are, they are.

Imperf.

Sing.

I was, eu era, ou estava, thou wast, ou you was, be was.

Plural.

We were, ye ou you were, they were.

Perf.

Perf.

Sing.

I have been, eu fuy ou estive.

Thou hast been, he hath ou has been.

Plural.

We have been, ye ou you have been, they have been.

Plusquamperfect.

Sing.

I had been, eu fora ou estivera, ou eu tinha sido, ou estado, thou hadst been, he had been.

Plural.

We had been, ye ou you had been, they had been.

Futuro.

Sing.

I shall ou will be, eu ferey eu estarey, thou shalt, ou wilt be, ou you shall be, he shall ou will be.

Plural.

We shall ou will be, ye ou you shall, ou will be, they shall, ou will be.

Modo Imperativo.

Sing.

Be thou, se tu, ou está, let him be.

Plural.

Let us be, be ye ou you, let them be.

Modo Potencial.

Sing.

I may ou can be, seja, ou esteja eu ou possa ser ou estar eu, thou mayst, ou canst be, ou you may, ou can be, he may, ou can be.

Plural.

We may ou can be, ye ou you may, ou can be, they may, ou can be.

Imperf.

Sing.

I might be, seria ou estaria ou poderia ser ou estar eu, thou mightest be, ou you might be, he might be.

Plural.

We might be, ye ou you might be, they might be.

Perfeit.

Sing.

I might have been, pude eu ser ou estar, thou mightest have been, ou you might have been, he might have been.

Plural.

We might have been, ye ou you might have been, they might have been.

Plusquamperf.

Sing.

I might have had been, pudera ser ou estar eu, thou mightest have had been, ou you might have had been, he might have had been.

Plural.

We might have had been, ye ou you might have had been, they might have had been.

Futuro.

Sing.

I may ou can be hereafter, poderey ser ou estar eu, ou ser ey eu ou estarey, thou mayst ou canst be here-

hereafter, ou you may ou can be hereafter, be may ou can be hereafter.

Plural.

We may ou can be hereafter, ye ou you may ou can be hereafter, they may ou can be hereafter.

Modo Optativo.

Este Modo se forma, como dissemos acima no Verbo, *have*, v. g. *God grant I might be*, oxala fora, ou estivera eu, e assim nos mais Tempos.

Modo Conjunctivo.

O mesmo se observa neste modo, com as conjuncções apropriadas á elle v. g. *as I may ou can be*, como eu sou ou estou, veja-se o que se disse no Verbo, *have*, neste modo, e no Optativo.

Infinitivo.

To be, ser ou estar.

Preter.

To have been, ter sido, ou estado.

Gerund.

Of being, de ser ou estar, *in being*, *for being*.

Supin.

To be, para ser ou estar.

To be been, para ser sido, ou estado.

Particip. present.

Being, sendo, ou estando.

Particip. preter.

Been, sido, ou estado.

Par-

Particip. Futuro.

*To be about to be, ou to be hereafter, o que hade
fer ou estar.*

Dos Verbos Activos.

Os Verbos activos ou são regulares, ou irregulares, os regulares são aquelles, cujos Participios do preterito, acabão em, *ed*, como *love, loved*, advertindo que alguã vezes se supprime o, *e*, por Sincope, interpondo selhe hum apostrofe, que he hum acento entremeyo, como, *loved, lov'd*.

Na Lingua Ingleza os Verbos não tem mais que huã conjugação aqual he geral para todos os Verbos, assim regulares com irregulares, não havendo mais differença entre huns, e outros, que os regulares terminar seus Participios do preterito em, *ed*, como se faz menção acima, e os irregulares terminados com variedade de terminaões, guardando em tudo o mais a mesma conjugação, e os mesmos sinais nos mais Tempos, e Modos.

Da Formação dos Tempos, e Modos.

O Infinito se forma antepondo lhe *to*, a qualquer Verbo, v. g. *to love, to kill*.

O Presente formasse do Infinito, tirandolhe o, *to*, e ajuntandolhe a pessoa, v. g. *to love, I love*.

O Preterito Imperfeito se forma, ou valendosse do Participio do Preterito, e ajuntandolhe a pessoa sem mudança de ditto Participio, ou por meyo do signal, *did*, v. g. *I loved, thou lovedst, &c. I did love, thou didst love, &c.*

Advertindo que o signal, *do*, e signal *did*, o primeyro he presente, e o segundo preterito imperfeito do Verbo, *do*, o qual significando fazer, quando se junta a os Verbos por sinais, nada significa, nem tem

tem outro efeito, mas que mostrar os Tempos em que está o Verbo, a que se junta, notando também, que quando a oração he interrogativa, o, do, se antepoem ao Nominativo, v. g. *do you speak French?* porem sendo affirmativa se poem depois do Nominativo, v. g. *he doth speak French.*

O Preterito Perfeito, a que chamaõ diffinido, historico, ou simples, se forma uzando da mesma Sorte do Participio do preterito, v. g. *I loved, thou lovedst, &c.*

O Preterito Perfeito composto se forma, juntando ao Verbo auxiliar, *to have*, o participio do Preterito do Verbo que se necessita uzar, v. g. *I have loved, &c.*

O Plusquam Perfeito se forma também por meyo do Preterito Imperfeito de ditto Verbo, *to have*, juntandolhe da mesma Sorte o Participio do Preterito, v. g. *I had loved, &c.*

O Futuro se forma por meyo dos signais, *shall* ou *will*, v. g. *I shall, ou will love, &c.*

O Imperativo forma suas segundas pessoas do singular, e do plural, tomando o presente do Indicativo, e pondolhe a pessoa depois, v. g. *love thou, love ye* ou *you*, e a primeyra pessoa do plural e as terceiras de ambos Numeros, se formaõ por meyo do signal, *let*, v. g. *let him love, let us love, let them love.*

A formação dos Modos Optativo, e Conjunctivo, e de seus Tempos se conhecerá pella Conjugação ad extensum advertindo como asima se disse ja, que na conjugação de hum Verbo toda a variedade está, quasi em os signais, que o Verbo sempre he o mesmo sem nelle haver outra mudança mais que ajuntarlhe na segunda pessoa do Indicativo hum *st*, e na terceira hum, *th*, o qual muitas vezes se resolve em hum, *s*, v. g. *thou lovest, tu amas; he loveth, ou loves, ella ama.*

Da Conjugação de Verbo activo

O Verbo.

To love, amar.

Modo Indicativo.

Prezente.

Sing.

I love, ou I do love, eu amo thou lovest, ou dost love, ou, you love, he loveth, ou loves, ou doth, ou does love, &c.

Plur.

We love, ou do love, ye, ou you love, ou do love, they love, ou do love.

Preter Imperf.

Sing.

I loved ou did love, eu amava, thou lovedst, ou didst love, ou you loved, he loved, ou did love, &c.

Plur.

We love, ou did love, ye ou you loved, ou did love, they loved ou did love, &c.

Preter Perfeito.

Sing.

I have loved, eu amey ou tenho amado. Thou hast, ou have loved, he has, ou hath loved.

Plur.

We have loved, ye, ou you have loved, they have loved, &c.

Plus.

Plusquam Perfect.

Sing.

*I had loved, eu tinha amado ou eu amára.
Thou hadst, ou you had loved, he had loved, &c.*

Plur.

*We had loved, ye ou you had loved, they had loved,
&c.*

Futur.

Sing.

*I shall ou will love, eu amarey, thou shalt ou
wilt, ou you shall ou will love, they shall ou will
love, &c.*

Plur.

*We shall ou will love, ye ou you shall, ou will love,
they shall ou will love, &c.*

Imperativo.

Sing.

*Love thou, ama tu.
Let him love.*

Plur.

Let us love, love ye, let them love, &c.

Modo Potencial.

Prez.

Sing.

*I may ou can love, ame ou possa eu amar.
Thou may'st, ou canst, ou you may ou can love, he
may ou can love.*

Plur.

Plur.

We may ou can love, ye ou you may ou can love,
they may ou can love.

Preter. Imperf.

Sing.

I might love, amaria, ou poderia eu amar: thou
mightest love, ou you might love, he might love.

Plur.

We might love, ye ou you might love, they might
love.

Preter. Perf.

Sing.

I might have loved, pude eu amar: thou mightest
have loved, ou you might have loved: he might have
loved, &c.

Plur.

We might have loved: ye, ou you might have
loved: they might have loved.

Plusquam Perf.

Sing.

I might have * bad loved, pudera eu ter ou ha-
ver amado: thou mightest, ou you might have * bad
loved, he might have * bad loved.

Plur.

We might have * bad loved, ye, ou you might
have * bad loved, they might have * bad loved.

Notese que tirado fora o *bad* coma estrela, como
Communmente se Costuma, ainda que o perfeito
se

se equivoque com o plusquam perfeito ; pello sentido da sentença se farão distinctos.

Futuro.

I may ou *can have hereafter*, poderey eu amar, ou amarey eu : *thou may'st*, ou *canst*, ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, be may, ou *can love hereafter*.

We may ou *can love hereafter*, ye ou *you may* ou *can love hereafter*, they may ou *can love hereafter*.

Modo Optativo.

Os tempos deste Modo se formão ajuntandolhe hum dos adverbios de dezejo, Como,

O that I may love, Oxala ame eu.

O that I might love, Oxala amára eu ou amásse.

Modo Conjunctivo.

Os tempos deste Modo se formão Como os do Optativo, ajuntandolhe da mesma Sorte ao modo potencial hũa das Conjuncções, *as*, *if*, *when*, *how*, *although*, &c. a fim Como, *as I may love*, Como eu amo : *as I might love*, Como eu amára, seguindo da mesma Sorte nos mais tempos ; guardando o que se advertio no verbo, *have*.

Infinitivo.

to love, amar.

Preter Perf.

to have loved, ter amado.

Gerundio.

of loving, de amar.

in loving, em amar.

for loving, para amar.

*Supino.**to loving*, para amar.*to be loved*, para ser amado.*Partic. Presente.**loving*, amando, ou o que ama, e amava.*Partic. Preter.**loved*, amado.*Partic. Futur.**to be about to love*, o que ha de amar.*Do Verbo Passivo.*

O verbo passivo não he outra Couza mais, que o verbo auxiliar, *to be* com o participio do preterito dos verbos, que se necessitaõ uzar. ex.

*Presente.**I am loved*, eu sou amado.*Preterit Imperf.**I was loved*, eu era amado.*Preter Perf.**I have been loved*, eu fui amado.*Preter Plusquam.**I had been loved*, eu tinha sido amado.*Futur.**I shall*, ou *will be loved*, eu ferey amado.*Im-*

*Imperat.**Be thou loved*, se tu amado.*Let him be loved*, seja elle amado.*Let us be loved*, sejamos nos amados.*Be ye, ou you loved*, sede vós amados.*Let them be loved*, sejaõ elles amados.

E por esta Sorte se hiraõ formando as mais pessoas, Modos, e seus Tempos.

Dos Verbos Reciprocos.

Os Verbos recipricos se formaõ pella particula, *self*, expomse a formaçaõ do Presente do Indicativo, e por ella sera facil saberse dos mais Modos.

*Presente.**I love myself*, eu me amo, *thou lovest thyself*, &c.*He loveth*, ou *loves himself*.*Plural.**We love ourselves*, *you* ou *ye love yourselves*, *they love themselves*.*Dos Verbos Irregulares.*

Em que consista a irregularidade destes Verbos, e qual seja a Diferença entre elles, e os regulares; se pode ver no Paragrafo segundo, no Titulo dos Verbos activos. E porque em tudo o mais se formaõ como os regulares, observando as formaçois destes, fica conhecida, e sabida a daquelles.

Mas porque a formaçaõ dos seus preteritos simples naõ he sempre a mesma; porque hums os formaõ valendose dos seus Participios do preterito, e outros naõ; se poem as listas seguintes de hums, e outros para menos confuzaõ dos que dezejarem saber esta Lingua,

Dos que não se valem dos Participios do preterito.

to see, ver, *I saw*, eu vi, *I have seen*, eu tenho visto.

to take, tomar, *I took*, eu tomei, *I have taken*, eu tenho tomado.

to undertake, emprender, *I undertook*, eu emprendi, *I have undertaken*, eu tenho emprendido.

to give, dar, *I gave*, eu dei, *I have given*, eu tenho dado.

to write, escrever, *I wrote*, eu escrevi, *I have written*, eu tenho escrito.

to do, fazer, *I did*, eu fiz, *I have done*, eu tenho feito.

to forgive, perdoar, *I forgave*, eu perdoei, *I have forgiven*, eu tenho perdoado.

to go, hir, *I went*, eu fui, *I am gone*, eu sou hido.

to forsake, abandonar, *I forsook*, eu abandonei, *I have forsaken*, eu tenho abandonado.

to come, vir, *I came*, eu vim, *I am come*.

to break, quebrar, *I broke*, eu quebrei, *I have broken*.

to become, vir a ser, *I became*, eu tornei-me, *I have become*.

to rise, levantar-se, *I rose*, eu levantei-me, *I am risen*.

to grow, crescer, *I grew*, eu cresci, *I am grown*.

to know, saber, *I knew*, eu sabia, *I have known*.

to throw, tirar, *I threw*, eu tirei, *I have thrown*.

to fall, cair, *I fell*, eu caí, *I am fallen*.

to shew, mostrar, *I shew*, eu mostrei, *I have shewn*.

to beat, bater, *I did beat*, eu bati, *I have beaten*.

to eat, comer, *I did eat*, eu comi, *I have eaten*.

to owe, dever, *I did owe*, eu devia, *I have owed*.

to draw, tirar, *I drew*, eu tirei, *I have drawn*.

to sow, cozer, *I did sow*, eu semente, *I have sown*.

to abide, ficar, *I abode*, eu fiquei, *I have abode*.

to bear, levar, *I bore*, eu levei, *I have borne*.

to bite, morder, *I bit*, eu mordei, *I have bitten*.

- to blow*, soprar, *I blew*, *I have blown*.
to bid, mandar, *I bade*, *I have bidden*.
to beget, gerar, *I begot*, *I have begotten*.
to chuse, escolher, *I chose*, *I have chosen*.
to chide, reprehender, *I chid*, *I have chidden*.
to cleave, fender, *I clove*, *I cleft*, *I have cloven*, *I cleft*.
to catch, apanhar, *I catcht*, *I have caught*.
to crow, cantar o gallo, *I crew*, *I have crown*.
to drive, guiar, *I drove*, *I have driven*.
to dare, ousar, atreverse, *I durst*, *I have dared*.
to fly, fugir, *I fled*, *I have flown*.
to forget, esquecerse, *I forgot*, *I have forgotten*.
to flee, voar, *I flew*, *I have flown*.
to get, ganhar, *I got*, *I have gotten*, ou *got*.
to gird, cingir, *I girded*, *I have girt*.
to bide, esconder, *I bid*, *I have bidden*.
to bold, ter, *I held*, *I have bolden*, ou *held*.
to lie, jazer, *I lay*, *I have lain*.
to lean, pouzar, *I did lean*, *I have leaned*.
to run, correr, *I ran*, *I have run*.
to ride, cavalgar, montar a cavallo, *I rod*, *rode*, *I have ridden*, ou *rid*.
to read, ler, *I read*, *I have read*.
to stink, fedor, *I stank*, ou *stunk*.
to spread, espalhar, *I spread*, *I have spread*.
to strike, ferir, *I struck*, *I have struck*, ou *strucken*.
to spell, soletrear, *I spelt*, *I have spelled*.
to swear, jurar, *I swore*, *I have sworn*.
to smite, dar, *I smote*, *I have smitten*.
to shoe, ferrar, *I shod*, *I have shodden*,
to shed, derramar, *I shed*, *I have shedden*.
to shake, vibrar, brandir, mexer, *I shook*, *I have shaken*.
to spit, cuspir, *I spat*, *I have spitten*.
to steal, furtar, *I stole*, *I have stolen*.
to swim, nadar, *I swam*, *I have swam*.
to shine, resplandecer, *I shone*, *I have shone*, ou *shined*.

to slay, matar, I slew, I have slain.
to seeth, cozer, I sod, I have sodden.
to split, raxar, I splitted, I have split, ou splitten.
to stick, pegar, I stuck, I have stuck, ou stucken.
to strip, despir, I stript, I have stript, ou strippen.
to strive, contender, I strove, I have striven.
to tear, despedaçar, I tore, I have torne.
to thrive, medrar, I throve, I have thriven.
to tread, pizar, I have trodden.
to be willing, querer, I was willing, I have been willing.
to wring, torcer, I wrung, I have wrung.
to wear, trazer, I wore, I have worn.
to work, trabalhar, I workt, I have workt.
to weave, tecer, I wove, I have woven.
to will, querer, I would, I have willed.
to awake, despertar, I awake, I have awoke, a-waked.
to cut, cortar, I did cut, I have cut.

Das que se servem do Participio preterito.

to ask, preguntar, I askt, I have askt.
to buy, comprar, I bought, I have bought.
to begin, começar, I begun, I have begun.
to bring, trazer, I brought, I have brought.
to bleed, sangrar, I bled, I have bled.
to breed, gerar, I bred, I have bred.
to bend, dobrar, I bent, I have bent.
to beseech, suplicar, I besought, I have besought.
to bind, encadernar, I bound, I have bound.
to bereave, privar, despojar, I bereaved, ou bereft, I have bereft, ou bereaved.
to burn, queimar, I burnt, I have burnt.
to creep, engatinhar, ou andar de rasto, I crept, I have crept.
to curse, amaldiçoar, I curst, I have curst.
to crack, estallar, I crackt, I have crackt.
to drink, beber, I drank, I have drank.

to deal, tratar, *I dealt*, *I have dealt*.
to dwell, morar, *I dwelt*, *I have dwelt*.
to dip, molhar, *I dipt*, *I have dipt*.
to feed, paltar, *I fed*, *I have fed*.
to sling, tirar com funda, *I slung*, *I have slung*.
to fetch, hir buscar, *I fetcht*, *I have fetcht*.
to feel, apalpar, *I felt*, *I have felt*.
to fight, pelejar, *I fought*, *I have fought*.
to find, achar, *I found*, *I have found*.
to fix, fixar, *I fixt*, *I have fixt*.
to geld, castrar, *I gelt*, *I have gelt*.
to hang, pendurar, *I hung*, *I have hung*.
to help, ajudar, *I helpt*, *I have helpt*.
to hit, dar golpes, *I hit*, *I have hit*.
to keep, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept*.
to kiss, beijar, *I kist*, *I have kist*.
to leave, deichar, *I left*, *I have left*.
to laugh, rir, *I laught*, *I have laught*.
to let, deixar, *I let*, ou *did let*, *I have let*.
to lose, perder, *I lost*, *I have lost*.
to learn, aprender, *I learnt*, *I have learnt*.
to lead, guiar, *I led*, *I have led*.
to make, fazer, *I made*, *I have made*.
to meet, encontrar, *I met*, *I have met*.
to mix, misturar, *I mixt*, *I have mixt*.
to put, por, *I put*, ou *did put*, *I have put*.
to pitch, brear, pegar, untar com pez, *I pitcht*,
I have pitcht.
to quake, tremer, *I quaked*, *I have quaked*.
to ring, soar, *I rung*, *I have rung*.
to rend, despedaçar, *I rent*, *I have rent*.
to sell, vender, *I sold*, *I have sold*.
to sleep, dormir, *I slept*, *I have slept*.
to sing, cantar, *I sung*, *I have sung*.
to send, enviar, *I sent*, *I have sent*.
to stand upright, estar direito, *I stood upright*, *I*
have stood upright.
to snatch, arrebatat, *I snatcht*, *I have snatcht*.

310 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

- to smell, cheirar, I smelt, I have smelt.*
to shoot, tirar, I shot, I have shot.
to spend, dispende, I spent, I have spent.
to spring, brotar, I sprung, I have sprung.
to stand, estar, I stood, I have stood.
to sting, picar, I stung, I have stung.
to string, encordoar, I strung, I have strung.
to spill, derramar, I spilt, I have spilt.
to sweat, suar, I sweat, I have sweat.
to seek, buscar, I sought, I have sought.
to set, asentarse, I sat, I have sat.
to slide, escorregar, I slid, I have slid.
to spin, fiar, I spun, I have spun.
to say, dizer, I said, I have said.
to speed, expedir, I sped, I have sped.
to sweep, varrer, I swept, I have swept.
to stride, abrir as pernas, I stride, I have strode.
to slip, resvalar, I slept, I have slept.
to sink, fundirse, I sunk, I have sunk.
to think, imaginar, I thought, I have thought.
*to understand, entender, I understood, I have under-
stood.*
to tell, dizer, I told, I have told.
to teach, ensinar, I taught, I have taught.
to weep, chorar, I wept, I have wept.
to whip, açoitar, I whipt, I have whipt.
to win, ganhar, I won, I have won.
*to behold, reparar, olhar com atenção, I beheld, I
have beheld.*
to shut, fechar, I shut, I have shut.
to sling, tirar com funda, I slung, I have slung.
 Tambem o Preterito, e o Participio do Preterito
 de alguns Verbos irregulares, se podem formar,
 con facilidade observando as regras seguintes.
 Os Verbos terminados em, *eed*, tem os seus pre-
 teritos e Participios em, *ed*, Ex.
to bleed, sangrar, I bled, I have bled.

to breed, gerar, *I bred*, *I have bred*.
to feed, pastar, ou apascentar, *I fed*, *I have fed*.
to speed, accelerar, *I sped*, *I have sped*.

Os Verbos que terminão em, *eep*, fazem em, *ept*, Ex.

to keep, guardar, *I kept*, *I have kept*.
to creep, engatinhar, *I crept*, *I have crept*.
to weep, chorar, *I wept*, *I have wept*.
to sleep, dormir, *I slept*, *I have slept*.
to sweep, varrer, *I swept*, *I have swept*.

Os que terminão em, *end*, os fazem em, *ent*, Ex.

to bend, dobrar, *I bent*, *I have bent*.
to lend, emprestar, *I lent*, *I have lent*.
to send, enviar, *I sent*, *I have sent*.
to spend, dispende, *I spent*, *I have spent*.

Os que terminão em, *ind*, os fazem em, *ound*, Ex.

to bind, liar, encadernar, *I bound*, *I have bound*.
to find, achar, *I found*, *I have found*.
to grind, moer, *I ground*, *I have ground*.
to wind, dobar, *I wound*, *I have wound*.

Os que terminão em, *ing*, fazem em, *ung*, Ex.

to sting, picar, *stung*, *have stung*.
to string, encordoar, *strung*, *have strung*.
to wring, torcer, *wrung*, *have wrung*.
to ring, soar, *rung*, *have rung*.
to sing, cantar, *sung*, *have sung*.
to sling, tirar a funda, *slung*, *have slung*.
to fling, tirar, *flung*, *have flung*.
to spring, brotar, *sprung*, *have sprung*.

Os que terminão em, *ear*, fazem o preterito em, *are*, ou em, *ore*, e o participio em, *orn*, Ex.

to wear, trazer, *wore*, *have worn*.
to swear, jurar, *swore*, *have sworn*,
to bear, levar, *bore*, *have borne*.
to tear, despedaçar, *tare*, *tore*, *have torne*.

Os que terminão em *ow*, ou *aw*, fazem o preterito em, *ew*, e o participio em, *awn*, ou, *own*, Ex.

to draw, tirar, *drew*, *have drawn*.
to blow, soprar, *blew*, *have blown*.
to grow, crescer, *grew*, *have grown*.
to know, saber, *knew*, *have known*.
to throw, tirar, *threw*, *have thrown*.

Dos Adverbos.

O Adverbo he huã Parte da Oraçaõ, que junta às mais Partes acaba de declarar o seu significado.

Ha Adverbos de Tempo. v. g.

<i>to day</i> , hoje.	<i>shortly</i> , em breve.
<i>now</i> , agora.	<i>to morrow</i> , amanha.
<i>presently</i> , ja, logo.	<i>every day</i> , cada dia.
<i>immediately</i> , immediata- mente.	<i>continually</i> , continua- mente.
<i>already</i> , ja.	<i>eternally</i> , eternamente.
<i>betimes</i> , cedo.	<i>never</i> , jamais, nunca.
<i>early</i> , demadrugada.	<i>Day and Night</i> , de Dia, o de Noyte.
<i>lately</i> , ultimamente.	<i>by Day</i> , de Dia.
<i>yesterday</i> , hontem.	<i>by Night</i> , de Noyte.
<i>formerly</i> , antigamente.	<i>then</i> , emtaõ.
<i>before</i> , antes.	<i>whilst</i> , entre tanto.
<i>after</i> , despois.	<i>late</i> , tarde.
<i>hereafter</i> , daqui adiante.	

Há

Há Adverbos de lugar,

v. g.

here, aqui.

there, lá.

this way, por aqui.

hither, athequi.

thither, athelá.

below, abaixo.

above, acima.

high, alto.

low, baixo.

near, junto.

far, longe.

aside, de lado.

before, diante.

behind, atrás.

within, dentro.

in, dentro.

out, fora.

without, de fora.

upon, sobre.

under, debaixo.

about, ao redor.

amongst, entre.

between, entre.

beyond, além.

somewhere, em alguma parte.

no where, em nenhuma parte.

every where, em toda parte.

Há Adverbos de Interrogação.

where, onde?

from whence, de donde?

which, por onde?

how far, que longe?

how much, quanto?

how many, quantos?

how long, de que longura?

when, quando?

why, porque?

what, que?

how, como?

Há de quantidade.

as much, tanto.

but little, pouco.

few, pouco.

almost, quasi.

little, pouco.

much, muito.

enough, bastante.

abundantly, abundantemente.

more, mais.

wholly, inteiramente.

infinitely, infinitamente.

superfluously, superflua-mente.

all, todo.

nothing, nada.

at most, ao mais.

at least, ao menos.

intirely, inteiramente.

sufficiently, sufficiente-mente.

none, nada.

too much, muito.

Há de Numero.

once, huã vez.

thrice, tres vezes.

often

often, frequentemente.
twice, duas vezes.
sometimes, algumas vezes.

Hã de Qualidade.

wisely, sabiamente.
virtuously, virtuosamente.
prudently, prudentemente.
happily, felizmente.
boldly, atrevidamente.
wickedly, malvadamente.
passionately, apaixonadamente.
hotly, quentemente.
rudely, rudamente.
neatly, pura, propria, limpamente.
insolently, insolentemente.
readily, promptamente.
in fashion, á moda.
openly, abertamente.
standing, de pé.
backwards, para trás.
heartily, de coração.
in earnest, seriamente.
rashly, iradamente.
at random, inconsideradamente.
carelessly, descuidadamente.
pleasantly, agradavelmente.
reasonably, razoadamente, e razoavelmente.

coldly, friamente.
softly, suave, brandamente.
handsomely, fermozamente.
imprudently, imprudentemente.
quickly, apressadamente.
at ease, facilmente.
kneeling, de joelhos.
fasting, em jejum.
barefoot, a pé descalço.
secretly, em segredo.
on purpose, de proposito.
heedlessly, negligente-mente.
by oversight, por negligencia.
on a sudden, repentinamente.
desperately, desesperadamente.
in jest, de zombaria.
in pudding time, oportunamente.
on horseback, a cavallo.
in a boat, em barco.
by sea, por mar.
confusedly, confuzamente.
asunder, separadamente.
by stealth, a furtadelas.
in haste, apressadamente.
securely, seguramente.
conveniently, convenientemente.
a-foot, a pé.
in a Coach, em Coche.
by Water, por Agua.

by

by Land, por Terra.
jointly, juntamente.
by turns, por tornos,

Há de Affirmação.

yes, sim.
it is true, he verdade.
infallibly, infalivelmente.
truly, verdadeiramente.
assuredly, seguramente.
undoubtedly, indubitavel-
 mente ou sem duvida.
in truth, em verdade.

Há de Contradição.

no, não.
not at all, totalmente
 nada.
nor, nem.
none, nada.
by no means, de nemhuã
 maneyra.
neither, nem.

Há de Ordem.

first, primeiramente.
thirdly, terceiramente.
at first, primeiramente.
after, despois.
in a Crowd, em Caterva.
secondly, segundariamen-
 te.
next, despois.
afore, antecedentemente.
together, juntamente.

Há de Conclusão.

in fine, finalmente.
so that, com tanto que.
at last, ultimamente.

Das Conjuções.

A conjunção he huã
 Parte da oração, que fer-
 ve para ajuntar as mais
 Partes.

Há Adversativas.

but, mas.
though, ainda que.
notwithstanding, não ob-
 stante.
nevertheless, não obstan-
 te.
however, não obstante.
yet, com tudo, ainda.

Há concludentes.

in fine, em fim.
so that, de forte, se bem
 que.
to make an end, por aca-
 bar.

Há Copulativas.

and, e.
both, assim.
also, tambem.
both good and bad, assim
 bom, como mau.

Outras

Outras Disjuntivas.

or, ou.
or else, alias.
neither, nem.
either, ou.
nor, nem.

Outras Condicionais.

if, se.
if peradventure, se por
 acazo.
on condition that, com
 condiçãõ que.
so that, se com tudo.
if so be that, se for assim.
unless that, menos que.

Outras Cauzais.

for, por.
since that, depois que.
for as much as, por tan-
 to quanto.
to the end that, a fim que.
least that, para que não.
whereas, como quer que.
therefore, por tanto.
then, emtaõ.
seeing that á vista.
because, por cauza.

Das Propozicoes.

A Propozicãõ he huã
 Parte da Oraçãõ, que se
 poem antes das outras
 Partes.

near, junto.
against, contra, de fron-
 te.
before, diante.
about, ao redor.
through, por.
behind, atrás.
without, sem.
under, debaixo.
out, fora.
instead, em lugar.
at the Side, ao Lado.
with, com.
in, em, dentro.
into, dentro.
from, de.
towards, para tal parte.
beyond, alem.
above, sobre, acima.
far, longe.
after, depois.
till, athe que.
untill, athe que.
at, á.
since, depois.
between, entre.
for, para.

Das Interjecçoes.

A Interjecçãõ he huã
 Parte da Oraçãõ, que
 mostra os varios affectos
 do animo.

Há de Alegria.

ab, ab, ab, ha, ha, ha.
come, come, vamos, vamos.

let

let us be merry, alegre-
monos.

bang Sorrow, enforca a
Penna, a Tristeza.

De Socorro.

help, help, ajuda, ajuda.

fire, fire, fogo, fogo.

murder, murder, mata-

dor, matador, a qui

de l'Rey.

De Aversão.

hie, hie, fy, fo, fo.

De Chamar.

Ho there, ho there, holá, holá.

Ho beark, you, you, escuta.

De Impedir.

Not a Word, nem huã Palavra.

Hold your Tongue, callate.

Da Sintaxe.

Esta palavra (Sintaxe) derivada do Grego, he huã ordenada disposição das oito Partes da Oração entre si, e por esta razão todas as instrucções, ou regras, que conduzem para esta ajustada Ordem, estão de baixo deste título.

A Sintaxe se divide em Analogia, ou perfeyta, e he commua, e regular; e em Anomola, ou figurada, e he irregular; e se aparta das Regras.

Por duas vias se dis a Sintaxe Analogia ou perfeyta: huã pella Conveniencia, e Concordancia das palavras

De Animar.

well, well, bem, bem.

fó, fó, assim, assim.

that is well, vay vem.

well done, bem feito.

have a good Heart, Co-

rage, tem Animo, Va-

lor.

De Admiração.

bó, bó, hó, hó.

o strange, o' milagro.

o wonderful, o' maravil-

ha.

how fine that is, que

belloque está.

palavras entre Si, e outra pello Regimen, ou dependência que huã dicção tem da outra.

Pello que respeita á Concordância das palavras entre si, tres são as Concordâncias; a primeyra entre o Nominativo, e o Verbo.

A 2a entre o Adjectivo, e o Substantivo.

A 3a entre o Antecedente, e o Relativo.

Em quanto á primeyra, entre o Nominativo e o Verbo: Quando encontrares algum Verbo em huã sentença, deves preguntar; quem exercita a significação deste Verbo? e a palavra, ou Nome, que te responde a esta pergunta, ella terá por Nominativo do Verbo, e os concordaras em Numero, e pessoa, v. g.

I am your Servant, eu sou vosso Servidor.

He is very diligent, elle he muyto diligente.

we are all Friends, nos fomos todos Amigos.

you are very civil, vos sois muy civil.

they are very bold, elles são muy atrevidos.

Nos Exemplos referidos acharás, fazendo a pergunta de quem he o servidor, o diligente, os amigos, o civil, e os atrevidos; que eu, elle, nos, vos, e elles, são os que respondem á ditta pergunta, e que por Consequencia são os Nominativos do Verbo de cada huã das Sentenças; o que estão concordando em Numero, e pessoa, conforme a sua regra: Por que o verbo *am*, está comcordado com o Pronome *I*, em Numero, e pessoa no singular, e na primeyra pessoa; e a sua terceira pessoa, *is*, está concordando com o Pronome, *he*, terçeyra pessoa e do Numero singular, e *we* primeira pessoa de plural, e *you* segunda, e *they* terceira do mesmo Numero são os Nominativos, de, *are* do Verbo, *am* que sem mudança de terminação serve para todas dittas pessoas; e com ellas está concordando em numero, e pessoa.

Note-se

Notese que muytos Nominativos juntos Levaõ o Verbo ao plural, e que este Concorda com a pessoa mais nobre.

I and thou are in Safe-Guard.

Eu e tu estamos em Seguro.

Thou and thy Father are in Jeopardy.

Tu e teu pay estais em grande perigo.

Thy Father and thy Master send for you.

Teu Pay e teu Mestre mandaõ por ti.

O exemplo está em, *I and thou*, em *thou and thy Father*: E em *thy Father and thy Master*: Os quais Nominativos juntos levaõ o Verbo, *are*, e o Verbo, *send*, ao Plural.

Notese que alguãs Vezes o Infinitivo, ou a parte enteyra de huã sentença serve de Nominativo ao Verbo. Ex.

To rise betimes is a very wholesome Thing.

Levantarse cedo he a mais salutifera Couza.

To know much is a most pleasant Life.

Saber muyto he a mais agradavel Vida.

O exemplo está em, *to rise*, e em, *to know*, Infinitivos, os quais estão Servindo de Nominativo ao Verbo, *is*.

Notese Que alguãs Vezes se uza do presente, em lugar do preterito. Ex.

They go a hunting.

Elles forão á caça.

They take a stag.

Elles tomaraõ hum

Corço.

They divide it.

Elles o dividiraõ.

O exemplo está em, *they go*, *they take*, and *they divide*, presentes do Indicativo, em lugar de *went*, *took*, e *divided*, preteritos perfeytos.

Notese

Notese que tambem algumas Vezes se uza do presente em lugar do Futuro. Ex.

What Day is To-Morrow? Que Dia he Manhaã?

To-morrow is Sunday. A Manhaã he Domingo.

When do you go? Quando vas tu?

I go next Week. Eu vou a Semana que Vem.

Next Monday is a Holy-Day. Segunda, que vem he dia Santo.

O Exemplo está nas terceyras pessoas, *is*, do Verbo, *am*, e em, *I go*, presentes do Indicativo, que estão em lugar de *shall be*, e *shall go*, futuros.

Tambem se usa do tempo presente do Verbo, *I am*, com o Participio do presente do Verbo que se necessita para expressar o presente do ditto Verbo. Ex.

I am going to Church. Eu vou á Igreja.

He is going for France. Elle vay para França.

What is he doing? Que fas elle?

He is writing. Elle escreve.

He is reading. Elle lê.

What is she doing? Que fas ella?

She is dressing her Head. Ella compoem sua Cabeça.

O Exemplo está em, *am*, e, *is*, com os Participios do presente, *going*, *doing*, *writing*, *reading*, e *dressing*, dos Verbos necessarios, em lugar dos presentes, *goeth* ou *goes*, *doeth* ou *does*, &c.

Mas advirtasse, que he necessario, que o Verbo seja de movimento, e que a acção tenha duração; por que não sera bem ditto, *he is seeing*, elle ve.

Tambem se usa do presente com o Signal, *did*, ou do preterito perfeito, para exprimir o preterito imperfeito. Ex.

Alex.

Alexander *did take*, ou *took*, great Pleasure in drinking.

He *did take*, ou *took*, such Pleasure in drinking, that Drunkenness was reckoned amongst his Crimes.

The Pagans *did worship*, ou *worshipped*, the false Gods.

Alexandre tomava grande agrado na bebida.

Elle tomava tal prazer em a bebida, que a embriagues foy contada entre seus Crimes.

Os Paganos adoravaõ os falsos Deoses.

O exemplo está em, *did take*, ou *took*, e em *did worship*, ou *worshipped*, uzados em lugar do imperfeito.

O Preterito imperfeito nos Verbos de Movimento, se expressão bello imperfeito do Verbo, *am*, com o participio do presente do ditto Verbo de Movimento. Ex.

Whither were you going Yesterday when I met you?

I was going to the Exchange.

What was he doing?

He was writing.

Aonde hias tu hontem quando eu te contrey?

Eu hia á bolça.

Que fazia elle?

Elle escrevia.

O exemplo está em, *were*, com o participio *going*, e em, *was going*, *was doing*, *was writing*; expressando com elles o preterito imperfeito dos Verbos de movimento, *go*, *do*, e *write*.

Algũas Vezes o preterito imperfeito tem este signal, *would*. Ex.

He would take all the Men that came into the Wood.

Elle tomava todos os Homens que Vieraõ ao bosque.

He would lay an Ambush to slay them.

As soon as they had done they would run away.

He would throw Money into the Streets.

Elle fazia huã emboscada para matalos.

Tanto que elles tinhaõ feyto fugiaõ.

Elle lançava dinheyro pellas ruas!

O exemplo está em *take, lay, run, e throw*, todos expressando o preterito imperfeito com o signal, *would*.

O Preterito perfeito simples se exprime pello participio do preterito ajuntandolhe as pessoas. Ex.

I loved, eu amey; *I killed*, eu matey, o Exemplo está em, *loved*, e *killed*. Que com o Pronome, *I*, se exprime a primeyra pessoa do preterito dos Verbos *love*, e *kill*.

O Preterito perfeito Composto se exprime com o presente do Verbo *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que se quer uzar. Ex.

I have been there several Times.

He hath carried your Letter to the Post House.

We have drank together a great many Times.

Eu estive lá diversas Vezes.

Elle levou a Vossa ou tua Carta ao Correyo.

Nôs temos bebido juntos muytas Vezes.

O Exemplo está em, *have been, hath carried, have drank*, que com seus pronomes, *I, he, we*, estaõ Expressando o preterito perfeito composto.

Notese que quando se fas Menção de hum certo tempo he melhor servirse do preterito imperfeito que do perfeito. Ex.

I was there the last Week.

Eu estive lá a semana passada.

He

<i>He carried your Letter</i>	Elle levou a tua, ou
<i>to the Post-House the last</i>	Vossa Carta ao Correyo
<i>Night.</i>	a noite passada.

O exemplo está em *was*, e *carried*, preteritos imperfeitos, expressando por elles o preterito perfeito, pella certeza da tempo da *semana*, e noite passada.

O Preterito plusquam perfeito se exprime com o preterito imperfeito do Verbo, *have*, e o participio do preterito do Verbo, que se quer uzar; como se disse na formação dos tempos. Ex.

<i>As they had agreed.</i>	Como elles tinhaõ acordado.
----------------------------	-----------------------------

<i>I brought home all the</i>	Eu trouxe a caza todo
<i>Money that I had owing.</i>	o dinheyro, que me era devido.

<i>I gave to him a Shilling</i>	Eu lhe dey hum Shil-
<i>that I had found.</i>	lim, que eu tinha achado.

O exemplo está em, *had agreed*, *had owing*, *had found*, explicando o plusquam perfeito dos Verbos de cada sentença, com os seus participios, e o imperfeito, *had*, do Verbo, *have*.

O uzo do futuro com o Signais *shall* ou *will*, o do Imperativo com o signal, *let*, e o do Optativo, e Conjunctivo com os seus Signais, a qualquer Capacidade fica facil observando as Conjugações.

Do uzo do Infinito.

Serveffe do infinito depois de outro Verbo, quando os dois Verbos pretencem á mesma pessoa. Ex.

<i>I desire to learn Ma-</i>	Eu dezejo aprender
<i>thematics.</i>	a Mathematica.

324 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

Will you learn to write? Queres aprender a escrever?
Will you learn to write? Queres aprender a escrever?

O exemplo está em, *to learn*, e *to write*, que estão no infinitivo por Cauza dos Verbos *desire*, &c.

Do uso do Supino.

Serveffe tambem depois de outro Verbo. Ex.

I have something to do. Eu tenho algũa Couza que fazer.

He hath Letters to write. Elle tem Cartas que escrever.

I have a great mind to go to Paris. Eu tenho grande Vontade de hir a Paris.

O exemplo está em, *to do*, *to write*, postos no Supino depois do Verbo, *have*.

O Gerundio em, *di*, pende de Substantivos, e de Adjectivos, Ex.

Time of learning. Tempo de aprender.

Arts of learning. Arte de aprender.

Desirous of having. Dezejozo de ter.

O Gerundio em, *do*, depende de proposição. Ex.

He spendeth his Time in gaming and drinking. Elle gasta seu Tempo em jugar e beber.

He taketh great Delight in fishing. Elle tem grande deleitação em pescar.

He spends whole Days in reading. Elle gasta dias enteyros em ler.

O Exemplo está em, *gaming*, *fishing*, *reading*, Gerundios com a dependencia da preposição, *in*.

Notese que o fazer menção do Gerundio em, *di*, e em *do*, he respeitando a terminação Latina; porque

que no *Inglez* tem estes Gerundios a terminaçã em, *ing*, como se vé nos Exemplos.

Tambem serve para Dativo, com os Adjectivos, que Significaõ aptidãõ, e utilidade. Ex.

Paper useful for writing. Papel util para escrever.

Captain idoneus for war. Capitaõ Capás para guerra.

O exemplo está em, *for writing*, e *for war*, postos em Dativo aos Adjectivos, *useful*, e *idoneus*.

Da segunda Contordancia.

Os Adjectivos ou sejaõ Nomes, ou Pronomes, ou Participios Concordã com seus Substantivos, em Genero, Numero, e Cazo, antecedendo a dittos Substantivos; advertindo que no *Ingles* naõ tem a difficuldade, e trabalho como no Latim, para a concordancia nestes accidentes, por Servir o Adjectivo (na Lingua *Ingleza*) sem mudança de terminaõs para todo o Numero, e Genero.

E para saberse com clareza qual he o Substantivo; quando na oraçaõ se encontra hum Adjectivo; se fará a pergunta, *who*, quem, ou *what*, que couza, he aquillo que o Adjectivo significa; v. g. branco, negro, ou outra qualquer qualidade, ou accidente; e a palavra, que responder a esta pergunta, essa he o Substantivo, com quem ha de Concordar o Adjectivo. Ex.

A beautiful Woman pleases. A Mulher fermosa agrada.

The wealthy Traveller sits still. O Caminhante Rico se senta quieto.

The filthy Swine are always grunting. Os porcos Sujos sempre estão grunhindo.

My pale Cheeks suddenly grew red. Minha Face amarela de repente se fez vermelha.

Unjust Gains are esteemed. Lucros injustos são estimados.

O Exemplo está em, *Woman, Traveller, Swine, Cheeks, Gains*, que são os Substantivos com quem concorda os Adjectivos, *beautiful, weary, filthy, my unjust*.

Da terceyra Concordancia do Relativo com o antecedente.

Quando se acha hum relativo, se deve tambem fazer a pergunta, *who*, quem? ou *what*? que Couza? he aquillo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo que está despois do relativo, significa? e a palavra, que responde a esta pergunta, essa he o antecedente, com quem ha de concordar o relativo, em Genero, Numero, e pessoa. Ex.

<i>The Man who is wise.</i>	O Homem, que he sabio.
<i>The Woman who speaketh few Words.</i>	AMulher, qua falla poucas Palavras.

Naõ concorda em Cazo; porque deve estar no Cazo, que o Verbo, ou Adjectivo, seguinte rege, ou outra qualquer dicção. Ex.

<i>The Letters which you sent, pleased.</i>	As Cartas, que tu mandaste agradáraõ.
<i>He came in that Place in which.</i>	Elle veyo a aquelle lugar em o qual.

O Exemplo está em os dois relativos, *which*, estando hum em Acusativo do Verbo, *sent*; e o outro em Ablativo da Preposição, *in*.

Da quarta Concordancia da pergunta com a resposta.

A pergunta concorda com a resposta; isto he que pello mesmo cazo que se fas a pergunta; pello mesmo cazo se da a resposta. Ex.

<i>Who bought this? I.</i>	Quem comprou isto? eu.
<i>Of whom is this, of John, ou John's?</i>	De quem he isto? de Joaõ?

What

What did you buy? That. Que compraste isso ou aquillo?

To whom did you give? To him. A quem o deste? a elle.

By whom was it bought? By him. Por quem foy comprado? Por elle.

O Exemplo está na pergunta, *who*, que estando em Nominativo, com ella concorda a resposta, *I*; e o mesmo nas mais, *of whom*, *to whom*, *what*, *by whom*, em os quais fazendo-se a pergunta pellos, Genitivo, Accusativo, Dativo, e Ablativo; concordão com elles nos mesmos Cazos as respostas.

Do Regimen, Governo, e Dependencia, que huã dicção, ou palavra tem da outra.

Em toda Oração, ou Sentença deve de haver Nominativo, e Verbo, e todo o Verbo pessoal do Modo finito Pede antes de si Nominativo, claro, ou escondido: vejasse o que se disse atrás na primeyra Concordancia do Verbo com o Nominativo.

Os Verbos, que significão, o estado, condição, habito, gestos, costume, ou constituição de alguã pessoa, ou couza, regem antes e depois de si Nominativo. Ex.

He stands streight. Elle está direito.

He is gone to Bed supperless. Elle foy para a cama sem cea.

O Exemplo está em, *streight*, e *gone*, Nominativos depois dos Verbos, *stands*, e *is*, concordando com os Nominativos antecedentes, *he*, *he*.

Os Verbos passivos; de estimar, conhecer, nomear, chamar, regem antes, e depois de si Nominativo. Ex.

Thy Brother is accounted a learned Man. Teu Irmao he estimado, por hum Homen sabio.

<i>Thou hast been found often false.</i>	Tu tens sido achado muitas vezes falso.
<i>The King is called Father of the Country.</i>	O Rey he chamado Pay da Patria.
<i>My Brother is named John.</i>	Meu Irmao se chama Joao.

O exemplo está em *thy Brother, thou, the King, my Brother*, Nominativos antecedentes a os Verbos, *to account, to find, to call, to name*, postós na passiva tendo depois de si os Nominativos, *learned Man, false, Father, John*.

Do Regimen do Genitivo.

Dois Substantivos juntos pertencentes a Couzas diversas, o segundo vay a Genitivo com o signal, *of*, que corresponde a, dos, das, da, de, da Lingua Portugueza. Ex.

<i>The Sight of a fair Picture delights the Eyes.</i>	A Vista de huã boa Pintura de Leyta a Vista.
<i>The Beauty of a handsome Woman is pleasant.</i>	A Belleza da Mulher fermoza he agradavel.

O Signal, *of*, que significa, do, da, de, dos, das, em Portugues; posto depois dos Adjectivos, que significão dezejo, sabidoria, lembrança, Ignorancia, esquecimento, cuydado, modo, culpa, ou outra qualquer paixão do Animo, he signal do Genitivo, que regem dittos Adjectivos. Ex.

<i>Those Men that are desirous of Honour, ought to be studious of Learning and good Manners.</i>	Aquelles Homens, que são dezejozos de Honra, devem ser dezejozos de aprender, e de bons Costumes.
--	---

He

He, who is always mindful of the Master's Commands, is not fearful of Punishment.

Thou art ignorant of natural Things, rude of Letters, and uncertain of the Path of Virtue. Thou and I are both accused of the same Crime.

The richest Man, careless of his Affairs, is reduced to Poverty; but a poor Man, careful of his, obtaineth Riches.

Aquelle que he cuydadozo das ordens do mestre, não tem medo do Castigo.

Tu eres ignorante das Couzas naturais, rudo de Letras, e incerto do Atalho da Virtude.

Tu e eu somos ambos accusados do mesmo Crime.

O mais rico Homem, descuydado de seus Negocios, he reduzido á Pobreza; porem o pobre cuydadozo dos seus, alcança riquezas.

O Exemplo está em, *of Honour, of Learning, of good Manners, of the Master's Commands, of Punishment of natural Things, of Letters, of the Path, of the same Crime, of his Affairs, of his*; os quais estão em Genitivo dos Adjectivos, *desirous, studious, mindful, fearful, ignorant, rude, uncertain, accused, careless, careful.*

Os Nomes Partativos, os Adjectivos partativamente postos, os Interrogativos, e os Numerais regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

Thou hast chosen two Companions, of which one is a Fool, the other idle.

It is a difficult Thing, which of the two Parties I shall take.

Tu tens Escolhido dois companheyros, dos quais hum he tonto, o outro preguiçozo.

He difficultoza Couza, qual das duas Partes tomarey.

Romulus

330 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

Romulus, who built the famous City of Rome, was the first of all the Roman Kings.

Romulo, que edificou a famosa Cidade de Roma, foy o primeiro de todos os Reys Romanos.

None of the Heathenish Gods delivered his Worshipper.

Nenhum dos Deoses gentilicos livrou seu Adorador.

Which is my Book? Neither of these.

Qual he meu Livro? nenhum destes.

O Exemplo está em, *of which, of two, of all the Roman Kings, of the Heathenish Gods, neither of these*, que estão em Genitivo do Numeral, *one*, do partativos, *whether, first, none, neither*.

Os Verbos de acuzar, condemnar, absolver, e admoestar, Regem Genitivo da Couza do que se acuzar, condemna, absolve, admoesta, e Acusativo da pessoa como se verá adiante em seu proprio lugar. *Ex.*

He accuseth another Man of dishonesty.

Elle acuzar outro Homem de dezonestidade.

He condemns his Son-in-Law of Wickedness.

Elle condemna seu Genro de Maldade.

We admonish the Grammarians of their Duty.

Nós admoestamos os Grammaticos da sua Obrigação.

He is acquitted of Theft.

Elle he absolvido do Furto.

O Exemplo está em, *of Dishonesty, of Wickedness, of their Duty, of Theft*, os quais estão em Genitivo dos Verbos, *accused, condemns, admonish, acquit*.

Os Adjectivos de Alegria Regem Genitivo, *Ex.*

He is glad of the Honour. Elle está alegre da Honra.

Os

Os Verbos de enquirir, ouvir, Regem Genitivo da pessoa de quem se inquire, ou ouve; e Acuzativo da Couza, como se verá adiante. *Ex.*

<i>He saith, he came to inquire of him.</i>	Elle dis, que veyo a inquirir delle.
<i>Perhaps you had heard of some Body.</i>	Acazo tu tinhas ouvido de alguem.

As Particulas, *of, from, without*, quando estão antes de algum Verbo, Regem Gerundio ou Participio do presente. *Ex.*

<i>I come from drinking.</i>	Eu venho de beber.
<i>I am never weary of reading.</i>	Eu nunca estou cansado de ler.
<i>Can you not speak without laughing?</i>	Naõ podes falar, sem rir?
<i>Cannot Men be merry without quarrelling?</i>	Naõ podem os Homens estar alegres sem contender?

Os Verbos de receber Regem Genitivo da pessoa de quem se recebe, e Acusativo da Couza, que se recebe. *Ex.*

<i>I receive my Money of Peter.</i>	Eu recebi o meu dinheiro de Pedro.
-------------------------------------	------------------------------------

Do Regimen do Dativo.

A perda ou Proveyto se poem em Dativo, idest, a pessoa a quem se dá a perda, ou o Proveyto se poem em Dativo. *Ex.*

<i>Corn grows for Man.</i>	O Trigo cresce para o Homem.
<i>Hay is mowed for Horses, and Cows.</i>	O Feno he segado para Cavalos, e Vacas.

Os

Os Adjectivos que significão Utilidade, ou aptidão regem Dativo da Couza para que he util, ou apta, *Ex.*

Paper useful for writing. Papel util para escrever.

Captain idoneous to War. Capitaõ apto para a Guerra.

Os Verbos, que significão, *to promise*, prometer, *to pay*, pagar, *to give*, dar, *to sell*, vender, *to send*, enviar, *to offer*, offerecer, *to bring*, trazer, *to buy*, comprar, *to lend*, emprestar, *to provide*, prover, *to tell*, dizer, regem Dativo da pessoa a quem se promete, &c. e Acusativo á Couza que se promete, &c. *Ex.*

My Father promised great Rewards to me. Meu Pay me prometeu grandes Premios.

The Debtor pays to the Creditor great Sums of Money. O Devedor paga ao A-Credor Grande soma de dinheiro.

My Father's Man brought me Bread and Cheese. O moço de meu Pay me Trouxe paõ E queijo.

My little Brother sent me these Gloves. Meu irmão Pequeno me mandou estas Luvas.

My good Uncle will give me many choice Books. Meu bom tio me dará muitos Livros escolhidos.

Lend your Boots to the Servant of my Father, or my Father's Servant. Empresta tuas Botas ao Moço de meu Pay.

When they offered Cæsar a Crown and Sceptre he refused them. Quando offereceraõ a Cæsar a Coroa, e Cep-tro, elle os refuzou.

Thou hast told thy Father many Lyes. Tu diceste a teu Pay muitas Mentiras.

O Exemplo está em, *to me*, *to the Creditor*, *me*, *me*, *to the Servant*, *Cæsar*, *thy Father*, que está

tao em Dativo dos Verbos, *promise, pays, brought, sent, give, lend, offered, told.*

Os Verbos de persuadir regem Dativo da Couza a que se persuade, e Acuzativo da pessoa a quem se persuade, *Ex.*

He persuades me to that. Elle me persuade a isso.

O Signal, *to*, que em Portugues significa, aos, á as, a, para, he de Dativo especialmente se se ensinua alguã aquizicaõ, *Ex.*

To give way to the Time. Dar Tempo ao Tempo.

Antes de palavras Tempo de Movimento insinua dativo, *Ex.*

He lifteth up his Hands to Heaven. Elle levanta suas mãos ao Ceo.

He come to Genao. Elle veyo a Genova.

Depois de huã palavra antes dos Adjectivos, que significão, para, promptidaõ, capacidade, ou inclinação, insinua dativo, *Ex.*

A ready way to Honour. Prompto caminho para Honra.

Depois de huã palavra significante, *in Comparison of*, em comparação de, insinua dativo, *Ex.*

Nothing to Perseus, nada a Perseu; i. e. *in Comparison of Perseus*, em comparação de Perseu.

Depois de huã palavra a que se segue, *according*, conforme, insinua dativo, *Ex.*

He speaks all according to his Will. Elle falla tudo conforme á sua Vontade.

I judge according to my own Sense. Eu julgo conforme a meu proprio Juizo.

Diante

334 Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.

Diante da pessoa, *to whom*, aquem, ou *before whom*, diante quem, alguem se queixa, acuzar, condemna, ou falla, infinua dativo, *Ex.*

He complains to me by Letter. Elle se queixa a mim por Carta.

He made Oration to the People. Elle fêz huã Prática ao Povo.

Depois de huã palavra, que trãs expressão de Cortezia, *Courtesy*, ou Favor, *Kindness*, infinua dativo, *Ex.*

Your Kindness to me have been very manifest, and very great. Vosso Favor para comigo tem sido muyto manifesto, e muy grande.

De dilação, ou prorrogação, *the* tal Tempo, *le* poem em Dativo, *Ex.*

The Soldier's Hope is put off to another day. A Esperança dos Soldados está prorogada a outro Dia.

Do Acusativo.

O Verbo Activo rege Acusativo, *Ex.*

We must love God. Nos devemos amar a Deus.

Os Verbos de acuzar, condemnar, absolver, e admoestar, regem acusativo da pessoa, que se condemna, acuzar, &c. como ja se referio atrás.

Os Verbos de inquirir, ouvir, e receber regem acusativo da Couza, que se inquire, ouve, ou recebe, como atrás se fez menção.

Os Verbos de prometer, pagar, dar, vender, enviar, offerecer, trazer, comprar, emprestar, prover, dizer, regem Acusativo da Couza, que se promete, paga, &c. como ja se disse atrás.

Os Verbos de persuadir regem Acusativo da pessoa a quem se persuade.

Do

Do Regimen do Ablativo.

O Instrumento, Cauza, ou maneyra, com que
alguã Couza he feyta so poem em Ablativo. Ex.

The Mind is distracted with Cares and Fears. O Animo he distrahido
com cuydados, e te-
mores.

The Body is broken with Troubles. O Corpo está quebrado
com Trabalhos.

Soldiers overcome Dangers with daring. Os Soldados vencem os
perigos com a Audacia.

Lions tear Beasts by Strength. Leões despedaçõ Feras
com Força.

Nature is polished by Learning and Art. A Natureza se pule
com a Erudição e
Arte.

Art is perfected by Practice. A Arte se aperfeiçoa
com a Practica.

I struck my Brother, with my Fist and a Stone. Eu ferimeu Irmaõ com
meu Punho, e huã
Pedra.

Do Ablativo Absoluto.

Hum Nome não tendo palavra por quem possa
fer governado, se poem em Ablativo absoluto, e
em Ingles se conhesse este por trazer antes do Verbo
os Signais, *having, being, after, when*, ou outros
semelhantes, e neste Cazo o Verbo se exprime pello
Participio do preterito ou do presente. Ex.

Having thus encouraged his Soldiers. Animados assim seos Sol-
dados.

Ptolomy being dead. Morto Potolmeu.

Antiochus being cut off, and all his Army. Vencido Antioco, e todo
seu exercito.

Cleo-

Cleopatra, his Mother-in-law, promising him the Kingdom of Egypt. Prometendolhe *Cleo-*
patra sua Madrastra o Reino de *Egypto*.

When Demetrius knew this, Cohessendo *Demetrio* isto.

Do Uzo dos Artigos.

Na Lingua Ingleza se uza dos Artigos como na Portugueza. Ex.

The Body and the Soul. O Corpo, e a Alma.

The Head is the highest. A Cabeça he o mais alto

The Stomach receiveth Viſuals. o estomago recebe as Comidas.

The Heart dieth last. O Coração morre ultimo.

The Sight is a fine Thing. A Vista he huã Bella Couza.

Falando porem de Virtudes, Paixões, Vícios, Artes, e Sciencias, não se Uza de Artigo. Ex.

Men must respect Wisdom above Strength. Os Homens devem respeitar o Juizo mais que a força.

Fools despise Wisdom. Os Locos desprezão o Juizo. A Virtude não pode concordar como Vicio.

Justice is without Interest. A Justiça he sem interesse.

Chastity, Modesty, and Humility, are lovely Virtues. A Castidade, a Modestia e a Humildade, são amaveis Virtudes.

Prudence is the Rule of all Virtues. A Prudencia he a regra, de todas as Virtudes.

Pride is the Sin of the Devil. A Soberba he o pecado do Diabo.

Discords are the Ruin of States. As Discordias são Ruinas dos Estados.

Drunk-

Drunkennes is abominable.

Anger doth breathe but Arms and Blood.

Philosophy is Mistress of Wisdom.

Musick is pleasant to the Ear.

Writing knoweth nothing, and teacheth all Things.

Aritbmetick is the Science of Numbers.

Falando de substancias em geral, principalmente daquellas, que não se contaõ, não se uza de Artigo, Ex.

Bread is the staff of Life. If Salt lose its Savour.

I love Milk, Butter, and Cheese.

Beef is the Partridge of England.

Mutton is sweeter than Bacon.

Roast Meat is better than boiled Meat.

Wine doth rejoice the Heart.

Beer and Ale are good together.

Gold and Silver do all Things.

Wheat, Rye and Barley, make Bread.

Grass and Hay, is the Food of Cattle.

A Bebedice he abominavel.

A Ira respira só Armas, e Sangue.

A Philozophia he Mestra do Juizo.

A Muzica he agradavel ao ouvido.

A Escritura sabe nada e ensina todas as Couzas.

A Arismetica he Sciencia de Numeros.

O Paõ he o bordaõ da Vida
Se o Sal perde seu Sabor.

Eu amo Leite, Manteiga, e queijo.

A Vaca he a perdiz de Inglaterra.

O Carneiro he mais doce que o touchinho.

A comida Assada he melhor, que cozida.

O Vinho alegra o Coraçaõ.

A Cerveja, e Ela juntas, saõ boas.

O Ouro, e A prata fazem todas as Couzas.

O Trigo, Senteyo, e sevada fazem Paõ.

A erva, e o Feno saõ Alimento do Gado.

Z

Parsley,

338 *Grammatica Lusitano-Anglica.*

<i>Parsley and Sorrel are good in Broth.</i>	O Apio, e as Azedas são bons no Caldo.
<i>Garlick stinks.</i>	O Alho fede.
<i>Mustard is good with salt Beef.</i>	A Mostarda he boa com Vaca salgada.
<i>After Dinner Mustard.</i>	Depois de Jantar Mos- tarda.
<i>Sugar is sweet, but Pepper, Ginger, Nutmeg, and Mace, are not.</i>	O açúcar he doce; mas a Pimenta, Gingivre Nos Noscada e Flor de Nos Noscada não o são.

Todos os Substantivos, que se podem contar recebem artigo no Singular, mas não no Plural, *Ex.*

<i>I have a Friend.</i>	Eu tenho hum Amigo.
<i>I have Friends.</i>	Eu tenho Amigos.
<i>I have a good Book.</i>	Eu tenho hum bom Livro.
<i>I have good Books.</i>	Eu tenho bons Livros.
<i>I have bought a Knife.</i>	Eu comprey hua Faca.
<i>I have bought Knives.</i>	Eu comprey Facas.

Notese, que estas Regras só tem Lugar quando se fala de Entidades, e Substancias, em sua Generalidade; porem quando a Generalidade se reduz a Couza particular, emtao se uza de Artigo, *Ex.*

<i>The Love of God.</i>	O Amor de Deus.
<i>The Wisdom of Men is Folly.</i>	O Juizo dos Homens he Louquice,
<i>I thank you for the Wine, that you sent.</i>	Eu te dou as Graças pello Vinho, que me mandaste.
<i>I have spent all the Gold and Silver, that I received Yesterday.</i>	Eu dispendi todo o Ou- ro, e Prata, que rece- bi. Hontem.

The

The Mutton that we did eat the other Day was very sweet. O Carneiro, que nos comemos o outro Dia, era muyto doce.

The Beer that I drank last Night was good. A Cerveja que eu bebi a Noyte passada era boa.

The Books, that, I bought, are good. Os Livros, que comprey são bons.

Falando de Couzas diferentes não se repete o Artigo, Ex.

The Kings and Princes. Os Reys, e Principes.

The Eyes and Ears. Os Olhos, e Orelhas.

The Arms and Legs. Os Braços, e Pernas.

The Father, Mother and Children. O Pay, May, e Crianças.

The Brother and Sister. O Irmão, e Irmã.

The Butter and Cheese. A Manteiga, e Queijo.

The Light and Darkness. A Luz, e Escuridade.

Quando se fala das Partes do Corpo, em Lugar do Artigo, se Uza dos Pronomes possessivos, Ex.

My Head aches. Me doe a cabeça.

My Eyes are sore. Meus olhos estão chagados.

My Leg is broken. Minha Perna está quebrada.

I have burnt my Leg. Queimey a Perna.

Is your Belly full? Está Chea tua barriga?

I will break your Neck. Te quebrarey O pescoço.

He hath lost his sight. Elle perdeu sua Vista.

Wash your Hands. Lava tuas Maos.

O Genitivo de pertençaõ ou possessão, como chamão os Latinos, em Lugar quando se fala de duas

peſſoas, ou Couzas pretencentes hua á outra e o tal Genitivo ſe antepoem ſem Artigo, ajuntandolhe hum, s, e interpondo hum Apóſtrofe na Forma abaixo.

<i>The King's Son.</i>	O Filho do Rey.
<i>The Queen's Coach.</i>	O Coche da Rainha.
<i>The Brother's Wife.</i>	A Mulher do Irmão.
<i>My Father's House.</i>	A Casa de meu Pay.
<i>My Sister's Gloves.</i>	As Luvas de minha Irmã.
<i>My Cousin's Book.</i>	O Livro de meu Primo.
<i>My Uncle's Son.</i>	O Filho de meu Tio.

Porem quando dois Subſtantivos vem juntos, e pertencem a Couzas diverſas o ſegundo vay a Genitivo com o Artigo, *of* Signal do Genitivo, como ſe diſſe no Regimen do Genitivo.

Quando ſe fala de Materia de que alguma Couza he feyta, a Materia ſe poem em Genitivo, antecedendo o tal Genitivo a o Nominativo ſem Artigo.

Ex.

<i>A brick House.</i>	Huã Casa de pedra.
<i>A silver Dish.</i>	Hum Prato de Prata.
<i>A scarlet Cloak.</i>	Huma Capa de eſcarlate.
<i>A Silk Stocking.</i>	Huã meya de Seda.
<i>A wooden Box.</i>	Huã caixa de Pau.
<i>A Horn Comb.</i>	Hum pente de Corno.
<i>Brass Money.</i>	Dinheiro de Cobre.
<i>A Holland Shirt.</i>	Huã Camiza de Olanda.

Quando ſe fala, de Couzas que ſe pezaõ, contaõ, ou medem, a Couza contada, pezada, ou medida, ſe poem em Genitivo, poſpoſto o tal Genitivo com o Artigo, *of*, *Ex.*

<i>A Glass of Wine.</i>	Hum Vazo de Vinho.
<i>A Barrel of Beer.</i>	Hum Barril de Cerveja.

A

<i>A Dish of Meat.</i>	Hum Prato de Carne.
<i>A Dozen of Lemons.</i>	Huã Duzia de Limoes.
<i>A Score of Oranges.</i>	Huã Vintena de Laranjas.
<i>A pint of Wine.</i>	Huã Pinta de Vinho.
<i>A Busbel of Wheat.</i>	Huma Fanega de Trigo.
<i>An Ell of Cloth.</i>	Huã Vara de Pano.
<i>A Pound of Butter.</i>	Hum Arratel de Mantega.
<i>A Yard of Ribbon.</i>	Huã Jarde de Fita.

Quando se fala de Muzica, ou Instrumentos, se Uza do Verbo, *to play*, com o Artigo, *the*, acompanhado das Preposições, *on*, ou, *upon*, Ex.

<i>To play upon the Fiddle.</i>	tanger a Rabeca.
<i>To play upon the Lute.</i>	tanger a Laude.
<i>To play upon the Guitar.</i>	tanger a Viola.
<i>To play upon the Virginal.</i>	tanger o Cravo.

Falando de Jogos de Ganhar, ou perder, se Uza do mesmo Verbo, *to play*, com a Preposição, *at*, Ex.

<i>To play at Piquet.</i>	jugar os Piques.
<i>To play at Cards.</i>	jugar as Cartas.
<i>To play at Pins.</i>	jugar aos Paos.
<i>To play at Tennis.</i>	jugar á Pella.
<i>To play at Dice.</i>	jugar os Dados.

Da pergunta, *where*, aonde?

Quando a pergunta, ou questão se fas por, *where*, sem haver Movimento, a Lingua Ingleza, se serve nos Nomes proprios de Villas, Barrios, Aldeas da Proposição *at*, que significa, *em*, na Portugueza, Ex.

<i>The King of England is at London, at Windsor, at New-Market.</i>	O Rey de Inglaterra está em Londres, em Windsor, no Mercado Novo.
---	---

Tambem se uza de, *at*, com a palavra, *Home*,
porem fallandose de Provincias ou Reynos, se serve
da Proposicao, *in* Ex.

The King is in England, El Rey está em *Ingla-*
in Holland, in Picar- terra, em *Olanda,*
dy, in the Country. em *Picardia,* em o
Campo.

Da Pergunta, *whither*, para onde ?

Quando há Movimento nos Nomes proprios de
Villas, cidades, e Barrios se Uza de, *to*, Ex.

I go to London. Eu vou á *Londres.*
I go to Versailles. Eu vou á *Varselles.*

Tambem se uza de, *to*, nos Nomes de Reinos,
Provincias, havendo Movimento, Ex.

I will go to England. Eu hirey a *Inglaterra.*
I am going to Holland. Eu vou a *Olanda.*

Com a palavra, *Home*, se supprime o *to*, Ex.

He goes Home. Elle vay a Caça.

Da pergunta, *from whence* ? *de donde*.

Quando a pergunta se fas, *from whence* ? A Lin-
gua Ingleza uza de, *from*, que significa, de, na Por-
tugueza; em todos os Nomes, sem excepcao de
Reynos, nem Provincias sendo proprios, Ex.

From whence come you ? De donde vens ?
I come from England, Eu venho de *Inglaterra,*
from London, from de *Londres, de Var-*
Versailles. *selles.*

Mas em os outros Nomes que não são proprios,
se uza de *from*, com, *the*, Ex.

I come from the Market. Eu venho do Mercado.
I come from the Church. Eu venho da Igreja.
I come from the Country. Eu venho do Campo.

Da

Da Pergunta, by which Way? por que Parte?

Em todos os Nomes proprios, se uza de, *by*, Ex.

I will go by France, by Eu hirey por França, por
Paris, *by Versailles.* Pariz, por Varfelles.

Em todos outros Nomes, se ajunta o Artigo, *the*,
Ex.

I passed by the Window. Eu passsey, pella Janella.

I passed by the Door. Eu passsey pella Porta.

I passed by the Master's Eu passsey pello Campo,
Country. do amo.

Do Uzo he hum Verbo pessoal em todas as ac-
ções; Affirmativas, Interrogativas, e Negativas.

Prezent.

I do see. eu vejo.

I do not see. não vejo.

Do I see? vejo eu.

Do I not see? não vejo eu?

He doth see. elle ve.

He doth not see. elle não ve.

Doth he see? vé elle?

Doth he not see? não vé elle?

We do see. nos vemos.

We do not see. nos não vemos.

Do we see? vemos nos?

Do we not see? não vemos nos?

You do see. vos vedes.

You do not see. vos não vedes.

Do you see? vedes vos.

Do you not see? não vedes vos?

They do see. elles veem.

They do not see. elles não veem.

Do they see? veem elles?

Do they not see? não veem elles?

Imperf.
 I did see. eu via.
 I did not see. eu não via.
 Did I see? via eu?
 Did I not see? não via eu?

Perf.
 I have seen. eu tenho visto.
 I have not seen. eu não tenho visto
 Have I seen? tenho eu visto?
 Have I not seen? não tenho eu visto, &c.
 You have done. vos tendes feito.
 You have not done. vos não tendes feito.
 Have you done? tendes vos feito?
 Have you not done? não tendes feito?

Plusq.
 I had loved. eu tinha amado.
 I had not loved. eu não tinha amado.
 Had I loved? tinha eu amado?
 Had I not loved? não tinha eu amado?

Futuro.
 I will do. eu farey.
 I will not do. eu não farey.
 Shall I do? farey eu?
 Shall I not do? não farey eu?

Imperf.
 Let him do. faça elle.
 Let him not do. não faça elle.
 Let us go. vamos.
 Let us not go. não vamos.
 Speak. falla.
 Do not speak, &c. não falles.

Do

Do Uzo de hum Verbo Impessoal na voz activa.

<i>It rains.</i>	chove.
<i>It doth not rain.</i>	naõ chove.
<i>Doth it rain?</i>	chove?
<i>Doth it not rain?</i>	naõ chove?
<i>It did rain.</i>	chovia.
<i>It did not rain.</i>	naõ chovia
<i>Did it rain?</i>	chovia?
<i>Did it not rain?</i>	naõ chovia?
<i>It hath rained.</i>	tem chovido.
<i>It hath not rained.</i>	naõ tem chovido.
<i>Hath it rained?</i>	tem chovido?
<i>Hath it not rained?</i>	naõ tem chovido?
<i>It will rain.</i>	choverá.
<i>It will not rain.</i>	naõ choverá.
<i>Will it rain?</i>	choverá?
<i>Will it not rain?</i>	naõ chovera?
<i>Let it rain.</i>	chova.
<i>God grant it may rain.</i>	Oxalá chova.
<i>O would to God it might rain I</i>	Oxalá chavéra!

E por esta forma se se guem.

<i>It blows, ou it doth blow.</i>	aventa.
<i>It freezes, ou it doth freeze.</i>	gella.
<i>It thaws, &c.</i>	desgella.
<i>It doth snow.</i>	neva.
<i>It grieves me.</i>	me ancea.
<i>It beboveth me.</i>	me convem.
<i>It concerns me.</i>	me importa.
<i>It concerns you.</i>	te importa.
<i>It is hot,</i>	está quente.
<i>It is cold.</i>	está frio.
<i>It is fair Weather.</i>	está bom Tempo.

<i>It is foul Weather.</i>	está mao Tempo.
<i>It is dirty.</i>	está lamacento.
<i>It is dry.</i>	está seco.
<i>It falls out sometimes.</i>	acontece algũas vezes.
<i>It is good to be here.</i>	está bom para estar aqui.
<i>It is not good to travel in Winter.</i>	Naõ he bom caminhar de Inverno.
<i>It is dangerous.</i>	he perigozo.
<i>It is better to be alone, than with bad Company.</i>	he melhor estar só que com má Companhia.
<i>It is better to dine late, than never.</i>	melhor he jantar tarde, que nunca.
<i>It is better to bow than to break.</i>	melhor he dobrar, que quebrar.

Do Uzo do Verbo, *to be*, impessoalmente affirmando.

<i>there is.</i>	está.
<i>there was.</i>	estava.
<i>there hath been.</i>	esteve ou tem estado.
<i>there had been.</i>	tinha estado.
<i>there will be.</i>	estará.
<i>let there be.</i>	esteja.

Preguntando.

<i>is there?</i>	está?
<i>was there?</i>	estava?
<i>hath there been?</i>	esteve, ou tem estado?
<i>had there been?</i>	tinha estado?
<i>will there be?</i>	estará?
<i>would there be?</i>	estaria?

Do uzo do Verbo, *must*, dever, ou necessitar.

He Verbo defectivo, se uza do Tempo presente fazendo hum sentido do futuro.

<i>I must go.</i>	eu devo ou necessito hir.
<i>I must do that.</i>	eu devo fazer aquillo.
<i>You must do that.</i>	deves fazer aquillo.
<i>You must prepare.</i>	necessitas preparar.
<i>They must learn.</i>	devem aprender.
<i>We must have Care.</i>	devemos ter Cuydado.
<i>We must all die.</i>	devemos morrer todos.
<i>We must all wonder.</i>	nos devemos admirar.

O Imperfeito deste Verbo, se Expressa pella particula, *should*.

<i>You should have done that.</i>	devias ter feito aquillo.
<i>I should have gone there.</i>	eu devia ter hido lá.

Para os outros Tempos he necessario uzar de Paraphrazes, formandoos com o auxiliar, *to be*, e o Adjectivo, *needful*, que significa Couza necessaria, v. g. para formar o preterito perfeito, se dirá.

It hath been needful. foy necessario.

E da mesma Sorte os mais, &c.

Do uzo do Verbo impessoal na voz passiva.

O Verbo impessoal nesta voz passiva, na Lingua Ingleza ; huas vezes se exprime pella dicção, *they*, v. g.

<i>they speak.</i>	falasse.
<i>they speak good French at Blois.</i>	falasse bom <i>Frances</i> em <i>Blois</i> .
<i>they drink good Wine in France.</i>	bebesse bom Vinho em <i>França</i> .
<i>they speak better English in London than any where else.</i>	falasse melhor <i>Ingles</i> me <i>Londres</i> , que em outra qualquer parte.
<i>they eat good Cream at Blois.</i>	comesse boa nata em <i>Blois</i> .

Outras

Outras vezes se exprime pellas dicções, *Men, People, one, v. g.*

Men know that well.

sabesse bem isso.

Men have not all that they wish for.

naõ se tem quanto se deseja.

One commanded me to do.

emcomendosse-me a fazer.

Men lose many Things for

perdem-se muytas Couzas,

Want of asking.

por falta de Preguntar.

People talk of that.

falasse disso.

One told me so.

assim se me disse.

People tell a great many Lies.

se dizem muytas Mentiras.

Mas mais communmente se uza do Verbo, *to be*, e do Participio do preterito do Verbo, conforme o que se quer expressar, v. g.

It is said,

se dis.

Good Wine is drank in France.

bom Vinho se bebe em França.

The best English is spoken at London.

o melhor Inglês se falla em Londres.

That is well known, I have been commanded.

isso bem se sabe, fuy mandado.

Many Things are lost for Want of asking.

muytas Couzas se perdem por falta de Preguntar.

It will be found.

se achará.

It will be done.

se fará.

Roses are found among Thorns.

se achão Rozas entre Espinhos.

A Friend is known in Necessity.

o Amigo se conheffe na Necessidade.

Pequenos Dialogos para Principiantes.

Small Dialogues for Beginners.

Palavra por Palavra.

Verbatim.

De donde vens tu Senhor?

I. *From whence come you, Sir?*

Eu venho da nossa Igreja com minha Mãe.

II. *I come from our Church with my Mother.*

Tens tu ouvido hum bom Sermão?

Have you heard a good Sermon?

Muyto bom, e muyto Scientifico.

Very good, and very learned.

Quem ha pregado esta Manham?

Who hath preached this Morning?

Elle he o Senhor Lucas voffo Amigo.

It is Mr. Lucas your Friend.

Elle he hum honesto Homem.

He is a very honest Man.

Elle faz muyto bons Sermoins.

He maketh very good Sermons.

Onde vas tu agora?

Whether go you now?

A jantar, e entao a ver hum Amigo.

To Dinner, and then to see a Friend.

Novamente vindo do Campo.

Nowly come from the Country.

Queres tu jantar comigo?

Will you dine with me?

Que tens tu para jantar?

What have you for Dinner?

Nos temos alguã Vaca, algum Carneiro.

We have some Beef, Some Mutton

Alguma Vitela, algum Cordeyro, alguns Graos;

some Veal, some Lamb, some Peas;

Hum par de Coelhos, huã Salada.

A Couple of Rabbits, and Sallad.

Eu

Eu não posso Jantar
contigo hoje.
Será para outra
ocaziaõ.

A Deus, eu sou teu
Servidor.

Eu sou voffo com to-
do meu Coraçãõ.

Onde queres hir eſta
tarde.

Vamos a *Greenwich* ou
Windſor.

Quereis hir a Pé,
ou em Coche?

A Cavalo, ou em Ba-
tel?

Vamos em hum Batel
te rogo;

Porem antes bebamos
juntos.

Huã Botelha de Vinho
em eſta Taverna.

Rapã, chama teu A-
mo; onde eſtã elle?

Senhor, ſe tem ido
a o Campo.

Com ſua mulher e
ſuas Crianças.

Eu poſſo tirar
taõ bom Vinho como
qualquer Homem em
Inglaterra.

Vay depreſſa, ayiate,
deſpacha, corre.

*I cannot dine with you
to-day.*

*It ſhall be for another
Time.*

*Farewell, I am your
Servant.*

*I am yours with all my
Heart.*

II. *I ſhould ab odnor a H.*

*Whither will you go
this Afternoon?*

*Let us go to Greenwich
or Windſor.*

*Will you go on Foot or
in a Coach?*

*On Horſeback, or in a
Boat?*

*Let us go into a Boat I
pray you;*

*But before let us drink
together,*

*A Bottle of Wine in this
Tavern.*

*Boy, call your Maſter;
where is he?*

*Sir, he is gone into the
Country*

*With his Wife and his
Children.*

*I can draw as good
Wine as any Man in Eng-
land.*

*Go quickly, make haſte,
run.*

Entre

Entre tanto concertemos hum Batel.

Com este Barqueiro. Quanto tomarás tu daqui a *Greenwich*?

Dois chilins, Senhor. Isso he muyto terás hum.

Vay, traze teu Batel, corre depressa.

Rapáz tira outra Botelha de vinho.

Traze hum vidro, lavao bem.

A vossa saude, Senhores, acabemos.

Bebe todo, paguemos e vamos.

Vos estais muy apressado; porque tão sedo.

Eu quero tornar sedo; e eu tambem.

In the mean Time let us bargain for a Boat.

With this Waterman.

What will you take from hence to Greenwich?

Two Shillings, Sir.

It is too much, you shall have one.

Go fetch your Boat, run quickly.

Boy, draw another Bottle of Wine.

Bring a glass, wash it well.

To your Health, Gentlemen, let us make an End.

Drink all, let us pay and be gone.

You are very hasty, why so soon.

I will return belimes; and I also.

III.

Eres tu o Mestre da tenda?

Sim, Senhor, a vosso Serviço.

Entre Vm^{as}.

Tens alguãs boas Luvas?

Mostrame alguãs das melhores.

Apalpe estas, proveas.

Ellas são muyto brandas, e huã boa Cor.

Are you the Master of the Shop?

Yes, Sir, at your Service.

Come in, Sir.

Have you any good Gloves.

Shew me some of the best.

Feel this Pair, try them.

They are very soft, and a good Colour.

Ellas

Ellas são muy pequenas, ellas são muy estreitas.

They are too little, they are too narrow.

Quanto pedes tu por estas aqui?

What do you ask for these here?

Meyra Coroa.

Half a Crown.

Esse preço não he razoavel.

That Price is not reasonable.

Tem, ahy estão dois chilins.

Hold, there is two Shillings.

Tens tu Câmaras para alugar?

Have you Chambers to lett?

Vem dentro se te agrada, tu as veras.

Come in if you please, you shall see them.

Esta Caza he muyto bella.

This House is very fine,

Mas as escadas são muyto escuras.

But the Stairs are very dark.

Quanto pedes tu por estas duas Camaras?

What do you ask for these two Chambers?

Queres tu dar-me trez Livras a o Mez.

Will you give me three Pounds a Month?

Dame Sinal, o Con-
certo está feito.

Give me, Earnest, the Bargain is made.

Ahy está huã Coroa, estás tu contente?

There is a Crown, are you content?

Sim Senhor, vem quando tu quizeres.

Yes, Sir, come when you will.

IV.

Sois vos Ingles, Senhor?

Are you an Englishman, Sir?

Sim, Madama, a teu serviço.

Yes, Madam, at your Service.

Eu estou muyto alegre de encontrar a ti aqui.

I am very glad to meet you here.

Que dizes tu de este
Pays?

Elle he o mais bello
Pays do Mundo.

Tens tu estado em Ve-
neza?

Sim, Madama, ella he
huã bella Cidade.

Sabes tu falar Italiano?

Eu entendo melhor
do que falo.

Queres tu jantar comi-
tigo hoje?

Eu me alegrarey de
vossa Companhia.

Não posso por certo,
tenho que fazer.

Más eu virey a Menhã
sem falta.

Vos sereys sempre
bem vindo.

Trazez vossa Irmã
com vós.

Irmão aqui está vosso
Mestre.

Vinde a escrever.

Eu não posso em ver-
dade, eu estou muy do-
ente.

Vos estais sempre in-
disposto quando vos ve-
des vosso Mestre.

Vos estais prejuicozo,
minha May estara agas-
tada.

*What say you of this
Country?*

*It is the finest Country
in the World.*

*Have you been at Ve-
nice?*

*Yes, Madam, it is a
fine City.*

Can you speak Italian?

*I understand better than
I speak.*

*Will you dine with me
to-day?*

*I shall be glad of your
Company.*

*I cannot indeed, I have
Business to do.*

*But I will come to-mor-
row without fail.*

*You shall be always
welcome.*

*Bring your Sister along
with you.*

*Brother, here is your
Master.*

Come to write.

*I cannot indeed, I am
very sick.*

*You are always indis-
posed when you see your
Master.*

*You are lazy, my Mo-
ther will be angry.*

A a

Eu.

Eu aprenderey mais a-
manhã de Manhã.

Senhor, demorate ma-
is commigo.

Eu tenho huã grande
vontade de aprender
hoje.

Agora eu começo a
estar cansado.

Eu imagino que he
bastante por Agora.

Onde queres tu hir
esta tarde?

Eu quero hir ver nosso
Amigo Thomas.

Te rogo lhe des meus
Recados.

Eu quero, eu nao fal-
tarey.

Huã Collecção de Ver-
bos Inglezes e Portu-
guezas para expressar
as accões mais ordina-
rias.

To eat, comer.

To drink, beber.

To taste, provar.

To chew, mascar.

To gnaw, roer.

To swallow, engulir.

To fast, jejuar.

To breakfast, almocar.

To dine, jantar.

To sup, ceiar.

To treat, convidar.

I will learn more to-
morrow Morning.

Sir, stay longer with
me.

I have a great Mind to
learn to-day.

Now I begin to be
weary.

I think it is enough for
this Time.

Whither will you go
this Afternoon?

I will go to see our
Friend Thomas.

I pray you give him my
Compliments.

I will, I shall not fail.

A Collecção de Portu-
guese and English
Verbs to express most
common Actions.

To be hungry, ter fome.

To be dry, ter sede.

To fill or satisfy, satis-
fazer.

To have a Stomach, ter
appetite.

To drink hard, beber
muito.

To get drunk, embebe-
dar-se.

To

to go to Bed, ir para a cama.

to sleep, dormir.

to awake, acordar.

to watch, vegiar.

to dress one's self, compor-se, ou vestir-se.

to undress one's self, despir-se.

to put on one's Stockings, calçar as meyas.

to put on one's Shoes, calçar os Sapatos.

to pull off one's Stockings or Shoes, descalçar as meyas ou os Sapatos.

to comb one's Head, pentear a Cabeça.

to dress one's Head, tocar a Cabeça.

to rest, or repose, descansar.

to snore, roncar.

to dream, sonhar.

to rise, levantar-se.

to powder one's Hair, polvilhar o Cabello.

to curl one's Hair, emcrespar o Cabello.

to paint one's self, pintar-se.

to wash one's Hands, lavar-se as mãos.

to put on one's Hat, por-se o Chapeo.

to button one's self, abotoar-se.

to lace one's self, atar-se.

Acções naturais dos Homens.

Natural Actions of Men.

to laugh, rir.

to sing, cantar.

to cry, or weep, chorar.

to sigh, suspirar.

to groan, gemer.

to sob, soluçar.

to sneeze, espirrar.

to gape, bocejar.

to blow, soprar.

to whistle, fuviar.

to hearken, escutar.

To hear, ouvir.

to spit, cuspir.

to smell, cheirar.

to blow one's Nose, assoar-se.

to see, ver.

to look, reparar.

to bleed, sangrar.

to sweat, suar.

to wipe, limpar.

to rub, esfregar.

to shake, chocalhar.

356 *Grammatica Lusitana-Anglica.*

to tremble, tremer.

to scratch, arranhar.

to pinch, beliscar.

to tickle, fazer cocegas.

to feel, apalpar.

To study, Estudar.

ler, to read.

escrever, to write.

aprender, to learn.

decorar, to get by Heart.

aproveytar, to improve.

*alignar, to sign, or sub-
scribe.*

dobrar, to fold up.

selar, to seal.

*pôr O sobrescrito, to put
the Supercription.*

corregir, to correct.

borrar, to blot out.

traduzir, to translate.

começar, to begin.

*continuar, to continue, to
go on.*

acabar, to make an end.

finalizar, to finish.

poder, to be able.

querer, to be willing.

To speak, falar.

pronunciar, to pronounce.

fazer accento, to accent.

dizer, to say.

contar, to tell.

relatar, to relate.

gritar, to cry out.

chamar, to call.

preguntar, to ask.

responder, to answer.

calar, to hold one's Tongue.

ensinar, to teach.

instruir, to instruct.

mandar, to command, ou

to bid.

reprehenher, to chide.

obedecer, to obey.

*confessar, to confess, ou
to own.*

afegurar, to assure.

negar, to deny.

*proibir, to prohibit, ou
forbid.*

queixar-se, to complain.

contender, to contend.

disputar, to dispute.

razoar, to reason.

Effects

Efeitos do Pençamento.

conhecer, <i>to know.</i>	esperar, <i>to hope.</i>
imaginar, <i>to imagine.</i>	temer, <i>to fear.</i>
agradar, <i>to fancy.</i>	diffimular, <i>to dissemble.</i>
crêr, <i>to believe.</i>	fingir, <i>to feign.</i>
duvidar, <i>to doubt.</i>	provar, <i>to try.</i>
sospeitar, <i>to suspect.</i>	julgar, <i>to judge.</i>
cuidar, <i>to think.</i>	concluir, <i>to conclude.</i>
lembrar, <i>to remember.</i>	resolver, <i>to resolve.</i>
esquecer, <i>to forget.</i>	decidir, <i>to decide.</i>
dezejar, <i>to wish.</i>	

Of Love and Hatred.

Do Amor, e Odio.

amar, <i>to love.</i>	aborrecer, <i>to hate.</i>
acariciar, <i>to caress.</i>	culpar, <i>to blame.</i>
lisonjear, <i>to flatter.</i>	comprimentar, <i>to compliment.</i>
abraçar, <i>to embrace.</i>	
beijar, <i>to kiss.</i>	felicitar, <i>to wish Joy.</i>
saudar, <i>to salute.</i>	congratular, <i>to congratulate.</i>
reverenciar, <i>to make a Bow or Curtesy.</i>	acuzar, <i>to accuse.</i>
louvar, <i>to praise or commend.</i>	escuzar, <i>to excuse.</i>
nutrir, <i>to feed.</i>	condenar, <i>to condemn.</i>
corrigir, <i>to correct.</i>	abuzar, <i>to abuse.</i>
castigar, <i>to chastise.</i>	punir, <i>to punish.</i>
ameaçar, <i>to threaten.</i>	querelar, <i>to quarrel.</i>
bater, <i>to beat.</i>	peleijar, <i>to fight.</i>
açoitar, <i>to whip.</i>	vencer, <i>to overcome.</i>
perdoar, <i>to forgive.</i>	despir, <i>to strip.</i>
	despojar, <i>to plunder.</i>
	A a 3 matar,

matar, to kill.

roubar, to rob.

a fogar, to stifle, ou to
choak.

furtar, to steal.

To take one's Pleasure.

Tomar Divertimento.

cantar, to sing.

apostar, to lay a Wager,

dançar, to dance.

aventurar, to venture.

saltar, to leap, ou jump.

cortar, to cut.

esgrimir, to fence.

baralhar, to shuffle.

cavalgar, to ride.

enganar, to bubble, ou to

zombar, to play the Fool.

cheat.

jugar ás Cartas, to play

Zombar, to jeer, or ban-

at Cards.

ter.

ganhar, to win.

rirse, to laugh at.

perder, to lose.

To be sick.

Estar doente.

tratar de hum doente,

sangrar, to let Blood, ou

to tend or nurse a sick

bleed.

Body.

dar hũa ajuda, to give a

ter cuydado, to take

Chyster.

Care.

tomar Medicina, to take

curar, to dress a Wound,

Physick.

ou cure.

vendar, to bind with a

melhorar, to recover.

Fillet.

Of Bargains.

De Contratos.

comprar, to buy.

trocar, to change, ou

vender, to sell.

truck.

entregar, to deliver.

pagar, to pay.

pedir

pedir emprestado, <i>to borrow.</i>	enganar, <i>to cheat.</i>
prestar, <i>to lend.</i>	tirar, <i>to take away.</i>
dever, <i>to owe.</i>	prometer, <i>to promise.</i>
dar, <i>to give.</i>	guardar, <i>to keep.</i>
alugar, <i>to hire.</i>	mandar, <i>to bid.</i>
aceytar, <i>to accept.</i>	empenhar, <i>to pawn.</i>
refuzar, <i>to refuse.</i>	perder, <i>to lose.</i>
negar, <i>to deny.</i>	rogar, <i>to pray.</i>
tomar, <i>to take.</i>	suplicar, <i>to beseech.</i>
receber, <i>to receive.</i>	obter, <i>to obtain.</i>

Of Life.

Da Vida.

parir, <i>to be delivered, ou brought to Bed.</i>	crescer, <i>to grow.</i>
nascer, <i>to be born.</i>	viver, <i>to live.</i>
baptizar, <i>to baptize, ou to christen.</i>	morrer, <i>to die.</i>
	enterrar, <i>to bury.</i>

Of Motion.

Do Movimento.

mover, <i>to move, ou stir.</i>	passar, <i>to walk.</i>
hir, <i>to go.</i>	caminhar, <i>to march.</i>
vir, <i>to come.</i>	desaparecer, <i>to disappear.</i>
partir, <i>to depart.</i>	correr, <i>to run.</i>
hirse, <i>to go away.</i>	fugir, <i>to run away.</i>
aportar, <i>ou arribar, to arrive.</i>	seguir, <i>to follow.</i>
tornar atrás, <i>to come back.</i>	evitar, <i>to shun.</i>
ir atrás, <i>to go back.</i>	escapar, <i>to escape.</i>
chegar, <i>to go near, ou come near.</i>	tornar, <i>to turn.</i>
estar de pé, <i>to stand.</i>	alcançar, <i>to overtake.</i>
	escorregar, <i>to slide.</i>
	arrimar, <i>to lean.</i>

cahir, <i>to fall.</i>	embalsacar, <i>to amuse</i>
tropeçar, <i>to stumble.</i>	one's self.
continuar, <i>to go on.</i>	enviar, <i>to send.</i>
avançar, <i>to advance.</i>	apressar, <i>to make haste.</i>
distanciar, <i>to go from.</i>	deter, <i>to tarry.</i>
hir ao encontro, <i>to go to</i>	sentarse, <i>to sit down.</i>
meet.	nadar, <i>to swim.</i>
entrar, <i>to go, ou come in.</i>	margulhar, <i>to drive, ou</i>
sahir, <i>to go, ou come out.</i>	auck.
subir, <i>to go, ou come up.</i>	sumergir, <i>to drown.</i>
baixar, <i>to go, ou come</i>	caminhar, <i>to travel.</i>
down.	

Handy Works.

Obras de Maos.

trabalhar, <i>to work.</i>	pezar, <i>to weigh.</i>
tocar, <i>to touch.</i>	atar, <i>to tie, ou bind.</i>
manejar, <i>to manage.</i>	desatar, <i>to untie.</i>
fechar, <i>to shut.</i>	anodar, <i>to knit.</i>
tapar, <i>to stop.</i>	amontoar, <i>to heap.</i>
abrir, <i>to open.</i>	ajuntar, <i>to gather.</i>
levantar, <i>to lift up.</i>	quebrar, <i>to break.</i>
encher, <i>to fill.</i>	despedaçar, <i>to tear.</i>
derramar, <i>to spill, ou</i>	cortar, <i>to cut.</i>
shed.	pizar, <i>to bruise.</i>
molhar, <i>to dip, ou steep.</i>	espremer, <i>to squeeze.</i>
alcançar, <i>to reach.</i>	ter, <i>to hold.</i>
armar, <i>to arm.</i>	esconder, <i>to hide.</i>
tirar, <i>to draw, ou pull.</i>	cubrir, <i>to cover.</i>
arrebatar, <i>to snatch.</i>	descobrir, <i>to discover.</i>
arrancar, <i>to pluck out.</i>	buscar, <i>to seek, ou look</i>
mostrar, <i>to shew.</i>	for.
misturar, <i>to mingle.</i>	achar, <i>to find.</i>
estender, <i>to pull out, ou</i>	fujar, <i>to stain.</i>
stretch out.	enlamear, <i>to dirt.</i>
plantar, <i>to plant, ou set.</i>	limpar, <i>to cleanse.</i>

bar-

barrer, <i>to sweep.</i>	imprimir, <i>to print.</i>
lavar, <i>to wash.</i>	encadernar, <i>to bind a</i>
enchagoar, <i>to rinse.</i>	<i>Book.</i>
pintar, <i>to draw Pictures.</i>	tocar o fino, <i>to ring.</i>
gravar, <i>to engrave.</i>	pentear, <i>to comb.</i>
entalhar, <i>to carve.</i>	remendar, <i>to mend.</i>
edificar, <i>to build.</i>	cozer, <i>to sew.</i>
acender, <i>to kindle, ou</i>	pespantar, <i>to stitch.</i>
<i>light.</i>	ferrar, <i>to shoe a Horse.</i>
estender, <i>to spread out.</i>	

Of the Sound of Beasts.

Do Son dos Animais.

O Cavallo rincha, <i>the</i>	O Lobo uva, <i>the Wolf</i>
<i>Horse neighs.</i>	<i>howls.</i>
O Aino zurra, <i>the Ass</i>	O Caõ ladra, <i>the Dog</i>
<i>brays.</i>	<i>barks.</i>
O Leão brama, <i>the Lion</i>	A Ovelha berra, <i>the Sheep</i>
<i>roars.</i>	<i>bleats.</i>
O Boy berra, <i>the Ox bel-</i>	A Cobra asobia, <i>the</i>
<i>lows.</i>	<i>snake hisses.</i>
O Porco grunhe, <i>the</i>	O Gato mya, <i>the Cat</i>
<i>Hog grunts.</i>	<i>mews.</i>

The Birds are used.

Os Passaros são costumados.

cantar, <i>to sing.</i>	O Papagayo fala, <i>the</i>
chirriar, <i>to chirp.</i>	<i>Parrot talks.</i>
picar, <i>to pick.</i>	a Pega grafna, <i>the Mag-</i>
o Galo canta, <i>the Cock</i>	<i>pye chatters.</i>
<i>crows.</i>	a Galinha poem Ovos,
o Corvo grafna, <i>the Ra-</i>	<i>the Hen lays Eggs.</i>
<i>ven croaks.</i>	

Frazes familiares.

eu vos peſſo dame ſe te
agrada.
trazeme.
empreſtame.
eu te agradeço.
eu vos dou Graças.
vay e traze.
logo.
amado S^r. fazeme, eſte
Favor.

amada Senhora conce-
deme eſte Favor.
eu vos ſuplico.
eu vos rogo ou eu vos
conjuro a fazelo.
eu volo peſſo por Fa-
vor.

obrigame a tanto.

Exprefſões de Carinho.

minha Vida.
meu Amor.
minha querida Alma.
meu Brinquinho.
meu Coraçãozinho.
meu doce Coração.
meu querido Melzinho.
meu querido Minino.
meu lindo Anjo.
meu Tudo.

Familiar Phraſes.

I pray you, or pray give
me if you pleaſe.
bring me.
lend me.
I thank you.
I give you Thanks.
go and fetch.
preſently.
dear Sir, do me that Kind-
neſs or Favour.

dear Madam, grant me
that Favour.

I beſeech you,

I entreat you, ou I con-
jure you to do it.

I beg it as a Favour.

oblige me ſo far.

Exprefſions of Kindneſs.

my Life.
my Love.
my dear Soul.
my little Darling.
my little Heart.
my ſweet Heart.
my little Honey.
my dear Child.
my pretty Angel.
my All.

Para

Para agradecer e Com-
primentar, ou mos-
trar Benignidade.

Eu vos agradeço.

Eu vos dou as Graças.

Eu vos rendo mil Graças.

Eu o farey com Goſto.

com todo meu Coração.
de Coração.

eu vos ſou obrigado.

eu ſou todo voſſo.

eu ſou voſſo ſervidor.

voſſo humiliffimo ſer-
vidor.

vos eſtais muito obriga-
dor.

vos vos dais muito Tra-
balho.

eu nenhum acho em vos
ſervir.

Tu erés muy benigno
ou muito civil.

Iſſo he muito benevolo.
que dezejas tu ter?

eu dezejo que tu ſejas
livre commigo.

ſem Comprimento.

ſem Ceremonia.

eu te amo com todo meu
Coração.

eu tambem.

fiate de mim.

mandame.

*To thank and compli-
ment, or ſheiw Kind-
neſs.*

I thank you.

I give you Thanks.

*I render you a thouſand
Thanks.*

*I will do it with Plea-
ſure.*

*with all my Heart.
heartily.*

I am obliged to you.

I am wholly yours.

I am your Servant.

your moſt humble Servant.

you are too obliging.

*you give your ſelf too much
Trouble.*

I find none in ſerving you.

*you are very kind, or very
civil.*

That is very kind.

*What will you be pleaſed
to have?*

*I deſire you to be free
with me.*

without Compliment.

without Ceremony.

*I love you with all my
Heart.*

and I alſo.

*rely or depend upon me.
command me.*

hon-

honrame com teus mandatos.

tens tu em que mandar-me?

tu necessitas só mandar-me.

dispoem de teu Criado, eu só espero por teus mandatos.

naõ tens mais que falar, tu me fazes muito favor.

deixemos Comprimentos eu rogo, pello.

deixemos Cerimonias, pois na primeira Ocaziõ,

me valerey de teus Favores.

Para afirmar negar, consentir.

he verdade.

he verdade?

naõ he mais que muita verdade.

para vos dizer a verdade, realmente assim he.

quem o duvida?

naõ ha duvida.

eu creio que sim.

eu creio que naõ.

eu digo que sim.

honour me with your Commands.

have you any Thing to command me, ou have you any Commands for me?

you need but command me.

dispose of your Servant.

I only wait for your Commands.

do but speak.

you do me much Honour.

let us forbear Compliments

I pray.

let us forbear Ceremonies.

well then on the first Occasion.

I'll value myself of your Favours.

To affirm, deny, consent.

it is true.

is it true?

it is but too true.

to tell you the Truth.

really it is so.

who doubts it? who questions it?

there is no doubt on it.

I believe yes.

I believe not.

I say yes.

eu digo que não.
 eu aposto que he.
 eu aposto que não he.
 em minha consciencia.
 por minha vida.
 morra eu se te digo fa-
 bula, eu mintira.
 fim, eu juro.
 eu juro como sou Cava-
 lheiro.
 como sou homem de
 bem.
 sobre meu honor ou
 Credito.
 crême.
 eu posso dizerte.
 eu posso asegurarte.
 eu apostaria alguma cou-
 za.
 não zombes.
 falas serio?
 eu falo serio.
 sem duvida.
 tu tens adivinhado.
 dêste na Cabeça do
 Prego verdadeiro.
 eu te creyo.
 pode crerfete.
 isso não he impossivel.
 tudo pode ser.

I say no.
I lay it is.
I lay it is not.
in my Conscience.
upon my Life.
let me die if I tell you an
Untruth or a Lye.
yes, I swear.
I swear as I am a Gen-
tleman.
as I am an honest Man.
upon my Honour, or Cre-
dit.
believe me.
I can tell you.
I can assure you.
I could lay something.
don't you jest.
are you serious, or are you
in earnest?
I speak, or I am in ear-
nest.
I warrant you.
you have guessed right.
you have hit the right Nail
on the Head.
I believe you.
one may believe you.
that is not impossible.
all may be.

Dehir, *dehir*, *de* *de*

mover.

de onde vens?

aonde vas?

eu vepho, eu vou.

vem acima, vem abaixo.

vem dentro, say.

apressate.

naõ te movas daqui.

espera ahy.

vem junto a mim.

vaite.

vay teu caminho.

chegate, ou arredate a-
tras hum pouco.

vem aqui.

espera hum pouco.

espera por mim.

naõ vas tão depressa.

tu vas muy depressa.

tirate da minha Vista.

naõ me touques.

deixa isso.

porque?

porque, por cauza.

eu estou bem aqui.

a Porta está fechada.

a Porta esta aberta.

abre a Porta.

fecha a Porta.

abre a janella.

fecha a janella.

vem por este caminho.

Of going, coming, stir-

ing, &c.

from whence come you?

whither do you go, ou

where are you going?

I come, I go.

come up, come down.

come in, go out.

make haste.

do not stir from thence.

stay there.

come near me.

get you gone.

go your ways.

go back a little.

come hither.

stay a little.

stay for me.

do not go so fast.

you go too fast.

get you out of my Sight.

do not touch me.

let that alone.

why?

because.

I am well here.

the Door is shut.

the Door is open.

open the Door.

shut the Door.

open the Window.

shut the Window.

come this Way.

vay por aquelle camin-
ho.

go that way.

passa por este caminho.

come, ou pass by that
way.

que buscas?

what do you look for?

que perdeste?

what have you lost?

Das Sezois.

Of the Seasons.

que sezaõ te agrada mel-
hor.

what Season pleases you
best?

a Primavera he a mais
agradavel de todas as
Sezoins.

the Spring is the most
pleasant of all Seasons.

tudo se ri na Nature-
za.

every thing smiles in Na-
ture.

o Tempo he muy sua-
ve.

the Weather is very mild.

o Ar he temperado.

the Air is temperate.

nem he muy quente,
nem muy frio.

it is neither too hot, nor
too cold.

todas as Criaturas fazem
entaõ o Amor.

all Creatures then make
Love.

nos não temos. Prima-
vera este Anno.

we have no Spring this
Year.

nada avança, adianta.

nothing forward.

a Sezaõ está bem atra-
zada.

the Season is very back-
ward.

nos temos hum quente
veraõ.

we have a very hot Sum-
mer.

que quente que está?

how hot it is?

está excessivamente quen-
te.

it is excessive hot.

languido, ancedo Tem-
po. não posso aturar calor.

it is faint Weather.

eu suor, estou todo em
hum suor.

I cannot endure Heat.
I sweat, I am all over in
a Sweat.

eu nunca Experimentey
tal Calor, ou Tempo
tao quente.

*I never felt such Heat, ou
such hot Weather.*

esta hum bello Tempo
para os Frutos da
Terra.

*it is very fine Weather
for the Fruits of the
Earth.*

ha muita Abundancia
de Fruta.

*there is Abundance of
Fruit.*

todas as Arvores Cestao
cheas de Fruta.

*all the Trees are full of
Fruit.*

nos necessitamos de huã
pouca de Chuva.

we want a little Rain.

o Tempo da segada he
chegado.

harvest Time draws near.

começasse a segar o
Trigo.

*they begin to cut down the
Corn.*

os Prados estaõ sega-
dos.

the Meadows are mowed.

necessitamos recolher o
Trigo.

we must get in the Corn.

nos estamos na Canicu-
la.

we are in the Dog-Days.

o verao passou, ou se
foy.

the Summer is gone.

o Outono, ou o cahir
da Folha, tem toma-
do seu lugar.

*Autumn, or the Fall of
the Leaf has took its
Place.*

vem chegando a Vindi-
ma.

Vintage draws near.

ha huma bella Vindima,

*there is a very fine Kin-
tage.*

nos Vindimaremos em
tres ou quatro Dias

*we shall gather Grapes
(to make Wine) in three
or four Days.*

(para fazer Vinho).
os Vinhos serao bons

*the Wines will be good
this Year.*

este Anno.

Hue

*Hua Collecção de Ad-
jectivos expressando
diversas Qualidades.*

good, bom.
ill, bad, ou naughty, mau.
wise, sabio.
great, grande.
small, pequeno.
thick, grosso.
thin, delgado.
tall, ou high, alto.
low, baixo.
long, longo, cumprido.
short, curto, breve.
wide, ou broad, largo.
narrow, strait, estreito.
right, direito.
left, esquerdo, canhoto.
new, novo.
old, velho.
fat, gordo.
lean, magro.
heavy, pezado.
dull, entorpecido.
light, leve, ligeiro.
full, cheio.
empty, vazio.
hard, duro.
soft, molle, brando.
hard, difficult, difficultoso
easy, facil.
sweet, doce.
bitter, amargo.
sour, azedo.
clean, limpo.

*A Collection of Adjec-
tives, expressing se-
veral Qualities.*

neat, puro.
dirty, nasty, sujo.
stuttyish, immunda.
sloven, immundo.
hot, quente.
cold, frio.
dry, seco.
wet, molhado.
moist, humido.
strong, forte.
weak, fraco.
stiff, tezo.
handsome, bello.
proper, proprio.
comely, bem parecido.
pretty, bonito.
ugly, homely, feo, mal feito.
flat Nose, nariz chato.
one Eye, monoculo, de
hum ollo.
squinty, visgo, torto.
blind, cego.
purblind, peticego.
lame, coxo.
maimed, estropeado.
crooked, curvo, encur-
vado, corcovado.
bald, calvo.
dumb, mudo.
deaf, surdo, mouco.
toothless, desdentado.
dressed, vestido.

<i>naked</i> , nu.	<i>sincere</i> , sincero.
<i>rich</i> , rico.	<i>liar</i> , mentirozo.
<i>poor</i> , pobre.	<i>deceitful</i> , enganador.
<i>odd</i> , defigual.	<i>cunning</i> , astuto.
<i>expert</i> , experto.	<i>sharp</i> , agudo.
<i>skilful</i> , entendido.	<i>chaste</i> , casto.
<i>unskilful</i> , desentendido.	<i>wanton</i> , lascivo.
<i>drunk</i> , bebedo.	<i>modest</i> , modesto.
<i>healthy</i> , saudavel.	<i>bashful</i> , vergonhozo.
<i>sick</i> , doente.	<i>bold</i> , atrevido.
<i>happy</i> , feliz.	<i>fearful</i> , medroso.
<i>unhappy</i> , infeliz.	<i>affable</i> , afavel.
<i>true</i> , verdadeyro.	<i>courteous</i> , cortez.
<i>false</i> , falso.	<i>rude</i> , rudo.
<i>troublesome</i> , trabalhozo.	<i>clownish</i> , grosseiro.
<i>peevish</i> , rabugento.	<i>agreeable</i> , pleasant, agra-
<i>merry</i> , alegre.	davel.
<i>glad</i> , alegre.	<i>civil</i> , civil.
<i>sad</i> , sorrowful, triste.	<i>kind</i> , benigno.
<i>imprudent</i> , imprudente.	<i>clement</i> , clemente.
<i>wise</i> , sabio.	<i>merciful</i> , misericordiozo.
<i>mad</i> , louco.	<i>pitiful</i> , piadozo.
<i>just</i> , justo.	<i>cruel</i> , cruel.
<i>unjust</i> , injusto.	<i>revengeful</i> , vingativo.
<i>valiant</i> , valente.	<i>stubborn</i> , teimozo, perti-
<i>courageous</i> , animozo.	naz, cabeçudo.
<i>coward</i> , cobarde.	<i>prodigal</i> , prodigo.
<i>loyal</i> , leal.	<i>obstinate</i> , obstinado.
<i>faithful</i> , fiel.	<i>liberal</i> , liberal.
<i>unfaithful</i> , infiel.	<i>covetous</i> , cobiçozo.
<i>holy</i> , santo.	<i>niggardly</i> , escaço.
<i>profane</i> , profano.	<i>grateful</i> , agradecido.
<i>godly</i> , piadozo.	<i>ungrateful</i> , desagradeci-
<i>ungodly</i> , impio.	do, ingrato.
<i>charitable</i> , caritativo.	<i>glutton</i> , glotaõ.
<i>proud</i> , lofty, soberbo.	<i>idle</i> , ociozo.
<i>humble</i> , humilde.	<i>lazy</i> , preguiçozo.
<i>innocent</i> , innocente.	<i>slothful</i> , vagarozo.
	<i>hasty</i> ,

<i>busy</i> , apressado.	<i>few</i> , pouco.
<i>constant</i> , constante.	<i>other</i> , outro.
<i>inconstant</i> , inconstante.	<i>another</i> , esse outro.
<i>all</i> , todo.	<i>alone</i> , só.
<i>none</i> , nenhum.	<i>either</i> , ou hum, ou ou-
<i>any</i> , qualquer.	tro.
<i>some</i> , algum.	<i>neither</i> , nem hum, nem
<i>somebody</i> , alguém.	outro.
<i>certain</i> , certo.	<i>both</i> , ambos.

*Cartas Sobre a Mercancia ou Negocio.**Senhor F. F. Londres, 30 de Janeiro, 1750.*

A. S. de Vm^{te}. de 30. 15 do mez passado receby
 A em 5 do Corrente, pello Navio F. F. Capita
 taõ B. B. Mestre, e nellas advirto q^{ta}. carregara
 Vm^{te}, abordo do primeiro bom Navio destinado p^a.
 esta praça, as fazendas q' recommendey a feu cuy-
 dado na minha ultima, com esta vaõ mais mostras
 mais o q' lhe peço he, de encomendar a o tintu-
 reiro q^{ta}. as corres tenhaõ viveza e q^{ta}. sejaõ de
 dura; pello ultimo, Navio mandey a vm^{te}, a conta
 da venda da partida das meas de seda como tam-
 bem dos 3 Caixõs de chapeos q^{ta}. me vieraõ con-
 signados pello Navio A se se offerecerem mais de
 qualquer dos generos sobreditos sendo acomodados
 bem pode mandalos, por serem agora pedidos,
 com esta condiçam q^{ta}. sejam da moda e de bom
 feitio; tenho contratado por suas 20 Pipas de a-
 zeite pellos primeiros navios de çafra e as 20 Pipas
 de Vinho tinto com as 20 Pipas e 3 quartos de
 Branco ja estam abordo do Navio S. F. Capitão
 F mestre, dos quaes a Factura vay incluza, e os con-
 hecimentos iraõ pello correyo; queyra Deos que
 chegue a salvamento: sendo o que por oras se offe-
 rece.

Mais obrigado Servidor de Vm^{te}. q^{ta}. S. M. B.

Letters on Business, or Mercantile Affairs.

Mr. F. F. London, the 30th of January, 1750.

YOURS of the 3d and 15th of last Month, came to Hand on the 5th Current by the Ship F. F. Captain B. B. Commander; and therein I take Notice, that you intend to put on board the next good Ship bound hither, the Goods I recommended to your Care in my last, herewith I send you more Patterns, but I would desire you to be solicitous with your Dyer, that the Colours may be lively and durable. By the last Ship I remitted you Account of Sales, of the Parcel of Silk Stockings, and the three Boxes of Hats, by the Ship A; and if you meet with a Parcel of either, or both, to your Mind, you may please to send them, being now in Demand, but great Care must be taken of the Fashion and Make. I have taken care to secure your twenty Pipes of Oil for the first Ships in the Season, and put on board the Ship N. your twenty Pipes of Red, and twelve Pipes and three Hogsheads of White Wine, Capt. F. Commander, of which the Invoice goes herewith, and the Bills of Loading shall be sent by the post, and hope will come safe to Hand, which being the Necessary at present, I remain,

SIR,

Your humble Servant,

B b 2

Mr.

Senhor Jasinto Jones,

Meu Senhor,

ESTAServem para avizar a Vm^{ca}. como por este Navio, o *Derby*, tenho feito o Retorno do seu Cabedal em meu Poder em duas Bolsas de Diamantes montando a Pagodas 4396, 25 *Fan.* 10 *Casks* tendoas registrado conforme sua Ordem nos Livros da Companhia, incluzo está Conhecimento, junto com a Factura e sua Conta Corrente fechada, a qual dezeijo q^{ta}. chegue a Salvamento, e q^{ta}. lhe faça boa Conta; como eu estou para Tornar com este Trespasso para *Europa*, á minha chegada a *Londres* terey o Honor de ver a Vm^{ca}. e darlhe huma exacta, conta do Negocio na *India*, e sou Enteiramente.

Fort St. George,
Nov. 12, 1750.

Mais humilde Servidor,
de Vm^{ca} Q. S. M. B.

Abraham Trulock.

Londres, a 4 Março, 1750-1.

A Lisboa.

S^r. João Ferrier.

Meu Senhor,

ESTOU favorecido com a de Vm^{ca}. de 3do Corrente, e acho que em Comprimento á minha Ordem tem Vm^{ca}. comprado os quinhentos Barils de Arenques de fumo a Livras onze por Lastre eu não tenho duvida que esse foy o menor preso porque Vm^{ca}. os podia ter, e que sua boa Qualidade o Corresponda, meu Navio se está preparando com toda a pressa para hir Buscalos elle se pode caregar

Mr. James Jones.

Sir,

TH E S E will advise you, that by this Ship the Derby, I have made the Return of your Stock in my Hands in two Bulses of Diamonds, amounting to Pagodas 4396, 25 Fan. 10 Casks, having enregistered them according to your Order in the Company's Books; inclosed is a Bill of Lading, together with Invoice, and your Account current closed, which I wish may come safe to you, and turn to a good Account, as I am returning by this Conveyance into Europe; at my Arrival at London, I shall have the Honour to see you, and give you an exact Account of the Trade in India. I am entirely,

Sir,

Fort St. Geege,
Nov. 12, 1750.

Your humble Servant,

Abraham Truelock.

London, 4 March, 1750-1.

To Lisbon. Mr. John Ferrier.

Sir,

I A M favoured with yours of the 3d Current, and find, in Compliance to my Order, you have bought the five hundred Barrels of red Herrings, at 11l. per Last, I make no doubt, but that was the lowest Price that you could get them for, and the Goodness does answer it: my ship is getting ready with all Speed to go down to fetch them, and she may be laden at your Key, being she draws no more than nine Feet

B b 4

of

gar em o seu Cáys, sendo que não tira mais de que nove Pes de Agua; como Vm^{ce}. he servido de apontarme, que me apouparia de Gastos quatro peniques por Baril, eu julgo que elle podera levar sette centos Barils ou mais, se assim for, quando elle chegar, Vm^{ce}. o podera despachar, o Capitaõ não tera Ocaziaõ de qualquer dinheiro, assim que não haverá mister de nemhum Suprimento. Agradeço a Vm^{ce}. pella Informaçãõ que me dá em relaçaõ dos Cambios de *Lisboa* a este Lugar mas como eu olho para Remessas do Dinheiro aquy taõ ariscado em Lettras do Exchequer. Vm^{ce}, sera servido de facar sobre mim ao mais acomodado Cambio que lhe for possivel e suas Lettras a o uzual Curso as quais teraõ todo o divido Honor,

Muy ferto Servidor de Vm^{ce}. que S. M. B.

Ambrozio Nimble-Tongue.

Londres 18. Marco, 1750-1.

A Cadiz.

Senhor Joao Fryer,

Meu Senhor,

DIverſas Cartas de Vm^{ce}. me vieraõ á maõ a seu Tempo, como tambem minha conta Corrente a qual tenho notado em Conformidade com Vm^{ce}. ſua ultima foy de 29 do Mez paſſado, na qual me dá Vm^{ce}. recibo das trez Letras importantes ſeis Mill Pieces de Oito as quais meo Irmaõ *Joſeph* mandou a Vm^{ce}. por minha Conta, e por minha Ordem; eu farey hum triſte Negocio com ellas depois do deſembolſo de meu Dinheiro ha tanto Tempo, ademais que o Cambio me cuſtou caro, eu Acho que ſeus limites a Vm^{ce}. foraõ mais ſomenos que o Preço da Prata e Cambio; agora ſendo que tenho eſperado

of Water, as you are pleased to mention, which will save me the Charge of four Pence per Barrel; I judge she will carry about seven hundred Barrels, or more; if so, when she arrives, you may fit her up, the Captain will not have Occasion for any Money, so will want no Supply. I thank you for the Information you give me in Relation to the Exchange between Lisbon and this Place; but as I look upon the Remittance of the Money hence, as hazardous in Exchequer Bills, you will be pleased to draw on me at the most commodious Exchange, that is possible, and your Bills at the usual Course, which shall meet with all due Honour from,

Sir,

Your humble servant,

Ambrose Nimble-Tongue.

London, March 18, 1750-1.

To Cadiz.

Mr. John Fryer,

Sir,

YOUR several Letters came to Hand in due Time, as did my Accompt Current, which have noted in Conformity with you; your last to me was of 29 of last Month, wherein you give me Receipt of the three Bills, amounting to six thousand Pieces of Eight, which my Brother Joseph sent to you for my Account and by my Order; I shall make but a sorry Bargain in them, after so long a Disbursement; besides they cost me a dear Exchange; I find his Limits to you were much under the Price of Plate and Exchange: Now since I have waited all this Time, and there being no Probability of their falling, be pleased to send

perado todo este Tempo e não havendo Probabilidade de sua baixa seja Vm^{ca}, servido de mandarme meu Dinheiro como vem o Cambio tanto para esta praça, ou *Amsterdam*, como Vm^{ca}. julgar me fará melhor Conta, se a Prata ou Cochonilha baixar a preço que a Vm^{ca}. lhe pareça ser melhor do que por remessa de Cambio, em tal cazo investe Vm^{ca} meu Dinheiro em qualquer delles, que deixo inteiramente a Vm^{ca}. estando persuadido que Vm^{ca} actuara em meus Negocios como se foraõ seus proprios, eu me alegraria ouvir da chegada da Frota que podera ser que dese algum alento a o Negocio para que huã pessoa podece fazer algum emprego que a o presente não Convida a nada sendo quanto se offrece

Servidor de Vm^{ca}. que S. M. B.

Londres, Março 21, 1751.

A Cadiz, Senhor Joaõ Fryer.

Senhor,

DO outro lado, está a Cópia da minha ultima de 18 do Corrente, eu supponho que meu Irmão *Joseph* tem feito algumas Remessas a Vm^{ca}. por minha Conta, do que saberey a quantia pello primeyro Correyo de Olanda; com esta mando a Vm^{ca}. tres Letras, importantes quatro Mil pezos de Outo. sobre a boa pessoa de Vm^{ca}. a quem as endousey, valor em minha Conta, cujo Dinheiro, Vm^{ca}. será servido empregar, junto com aquelle que meu Irmão *Joseph* lhe tiver remetido, em dous, ou tres, Navios de Guerra, e me alegrarei que isto chegue a Tempo bastante para alcançar ao Senhor *John Trueman*, e os outros Navios de Guerra, em tal Cazo, e não de outro modo, podera Vm^{ca}. sacar mais do que

my Money, as the Exchange comes either for this Place or Amsterdam, which you judge will turn most to Account. If the Plate or Cochineal should fall to a Price, which you may conceive will answer better than by Remiss of Exchange, in such Case invest my Money in either of them, which I do entirely leave to you, being persuaded, you will act in my Affairs equal to your own. I should be glad to hear of the Fleet's Arrival, for, perhaps, might give some Heat to Business, that a Body could make some Employ, for at present, it does not invite to any Thing, which is all from,

Sir,

Your humble Servant,

Londres, March 21, 1750-1.

To Cadiz, Mr. John Fryer.

Sir,

ON the other Side is Copy of my last to you of the 18th Instant; I suppose my Brother Joseph has made you some Remittances for my Account, of which I shall know the Sum by the first Dutch Post. I herewith send you three Bills, amounting to four thousand Pieces of Eight on your good Self, to whom I have indorsed them Value in my Account; which Money please to employ, together with that my Brother Joseph has remitted you in two or three Men of War, and should be glad this should get Time enough to reach Sir John Trueman's, and the other Men of War: In such Case, and no other, you may draw, over and above what is remitted you for my Account, ten thousand Ducats, and put it, with my other Interest,

que se lhe tem remetido por minha Conta, Dez Mil Ducados, e ponhaos Vm^{ca}. com o meu outro Interesse, em tres ou quatro Navios de Guerra, e seja servido de observar que sem embargo que eu ordeneey a Vm^{ca}. na Cópia da minha antecedente, para carregar em huã Galera ou Navio Marcante tres Mil Ducados, e para sacar; eu revoco a Ditta Ordem, e peço a Vm^{ca}. que não carregue em Galera, ou Navio Marcante, mais de dous Mil Ducados, e que não saque a o presente, mas somente que empregue o que tenho remetido a Vm^{ca}. e seja servido mandarme hua distincta Conta, com inteira informação do Negocio para meu Governo, e fico com todo o devido respeito.

Muy certo Servidor de Vm^{ca}. Q. S. M. B.

Hum escritinho que vay aberto a hum vezinho, ou Amigo, em qualquer ocaſiam.

A O Senhor G. S. que T. M. ou seu servo criado beja a S. M. mil vezes e que lhe faça a merce de lhe mander pello portador desta sendolhe precisamente necessario nesta ocaſiam, e sempre ficara muy prompto ás suas Ordens.

A. Q. D. G.

A Carta ou Instrumento de Procuraçam.

S Aibam todos quantos este instrumento ou Carta de procuraçam virem que eu A. B. de Londres homem de negocio tenho nomeado e constituido e por

rest on three or four Men of War; and please to observe, that notwithstanding I ordered you in the foregoing Copy for to load in any Galley or Merchant-man, three thousand Ducats, and for to draw, I do revoke the said Order, and desire you not to load in any Galley or Merchant-man, more than two thousand Ducats, and for the present not to draw, but only employ what have remitted you, and please to send me a distinct Account of the Cost, with full Information of the Business for my Government, and remain with due Respect,

Sir,

Your humble Servant.

A short open Escrito, or Message, to a Friend or Neighbour, for any Thing upon Occasion.

TO Mr. G. S. that T. M. his most humble Servant, desires the Favour of him to send by the Bearer

having at present immediate Occasion for it, and he shall always remain obliged to him as his

Humble Servant.

A Letter of Attorney.

KNOW all Men by these Presents, That I A. B. of London, Merchant, have named and constituted, and by these Presents do name, ordain, appoint,

por estes presentes, nomeo, ordeno, constituyo e
 faço o Senhor B. C. de _____ o meu verdadeiro e
 legitimo procurador, por mim e em meu Nome e ao
 meu uso pode demandar, arrecadar e receber de T. B.
 Mercador, a soma de _____ a mim devida por
 ditto T. B. dando e por esta concedendo ao meu
 ditto Procurador o meu poder plenario e autoridade
 de exercitar e usar de todas taes acções e outras
 cousas em direito necessarias para a cobrança da ditto
 divida e em meu nome de dar e fazer quitações ou
 outras descargas, e geralmente de fazer e executar
 na materia sobreditta tão plenariamente como se
 eu mesmo fizese ou pudese fazer, estando pessoal-
 mente presente; ratificando, confirmando, e outor-
 gando tudo e qualquer cousa que o ditto meu procu-
 rador legitimamente fizer ou causar de se fazer nella
 por estes presentes. Em testemunha do que Affiney
 e selley esta em _____ aos 20 dias do mez de _____ de
 17 _____ por A. B.
 Affinado e Sellado adiante _____

de T. A. } Testemunhas.
 M. B. }

A Carta ou o Instrumento de Fretamento.

ESTA Carta ou Instrumento de Fretamento con-
 tratado feito aos _____ dias do mez de _____
 do Anno de _____ do nascimento de
 nosso Senhor Jesus Christo, &c. Entre T. B. Mestre
 debaixo de Deos do bom navio nomeado,
 de dozentas e cincoenta toneladas de carga P. M.
 que ao presente esta Surto e ancorado no Rio de
 _____ de hua parte e E. T. M. B. L. &c. ho-
 mens de negocio da outra parte: Certificaõ que o
 ditto Mestre tem dado em aluguer e fretado o Ditto
 Navio aos dittos homens de negocio e que elles

Appoint, and make my trusty Friend, B. C. of Merchant, my true and lawful Attorney, for me, and in my Name, and to my Use, to Demand, sue for, recover, and receive of T. B. of Merchant, the Sum of to me due and owing by and from the said T. B. giving, and hereby granting unto my said Attorney, my full Power and Authority to use and exercise all such Acts, Things, and Devices in the Law, as shall be necessary for the recovering of the said Debt and Acquittance, or other Discharges, in my Name, to make and give, and generally to do and execute in the Premises, as fully as myself might or could do, being personally present; ratifying, confirming and allowing all and whatsoever my said Attorney shall lawfully do, or cause to be done therein, by these Presents. In witness whereof I have hereunto set my Hand and Seal, in the 20th of 17

Sealed and delivered

in the Presence of

T. A.

M. B.

A. B.

The Copy of a Charter-Party of Affreightment.

THIS Charter-Party of Affreightment, indented, made the of the Month of Anno Domini, between T. A. Master, under God, of the good Ship or Vessel, called the of the Burthen of Tuns, or thereabouts, now riding at Anchor, in the River of of the one Part, and E, T, M, B, L, &c. Merchants, of the other Part, witnesseth, that the said Master hath granted and letten the said Ship to freight unto the said Merchants, and that they the said Merchants have accordingly

os ditto's Homens de negocio tem tomado em alu-
 guer pella viagem aos concertos eas condico'es, a-
 saber o ditto Mestre faz concerto, promete e
 otorga, por elle mesmo, os seus Testamenteiros e
 Administradores e com os ditto's homens de ne-
 gocio, e qualquer delles, ou seus e a qualquer dos
 seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constitu-
 intes, por estes presentes; que o ditto Navio forte e
 sa'o de quilha, e bem bastantemente provido de
 mantimentos, enxarcias e gente, e aparelhado de
 todas as couzas convenientes e necessarias para fazer
 a viagem por diante declarada; com o primeiro
 vento favoravel e bom tempo que Deos premitira
 depois da data destes presentes, partira do porto
 de _____ com todas as taes fazendas e Merca-
 dorias que os ditto's homens de negocio ou os Seus
 Constituintes entrementes carregaram ou meteram
 abordo d'elle, e com elle em direitura dara a vela
 e applicara ao _____ como o vento e o tempo mais
 favorecerem ao ditto Navio na sua viagem; e em
 chegando tao perto do ditto lugar de _____ elle
 o ditto Mestre ou os Seus Constituintes dentro de
 Dias de trabalho para se contarem logo
 depois de tal sua chegada, naõ fomite descarga-
 ram entergaram as dittas fazendas e mercadorias
 metidas abordo do dito Navio a o _____ sobre ditto,
 aos ditto's homens de negocio, aos seus Feitores ou
 Constituintes ou a alguns ou algum delles em Sal-
 vamento e bem acondicionadas salvante o risco dos
 mares e o tolhimento de principes e Governadores
 mas tambem receberam, tornarão a carregar e toma-
 ram abordo do ditto Navio de e dos ditto's homens
 de negocio, dos seus Feitores ou Constituintes ou
 de alguns ou algum delles todas as taes fazendas e
 mercadorias que elles ou qualquer delles ali carga-
 ram ou meteram abordo d'elle athe o comprimento
 inteiro da carga do ditto Navio; a saber: tanto
 quanto bem se podra arrumar debaixo da cuberta

cordingly hired her for the Voyage, and upon the
Terms and Conditions following: That is to say,
the said Master doth covenant, promise, and grant
for himself, his Executors, and Administrators, to
and with the said Merchants, and either of them, their
and either of their Executors, Administrators, and
Assigns, by these Presents; That the said Ship,
strong and staunch, and well and sufficiently victu-
alled, tackled, manned, and apparalled, with all
Things meet, needful, and necessary for the Per-
formance of the Voyage hereafter mentioned, shall,
with the first fair Wind and Weather, which God
shall send, after the Date of these Presents, depart
from the Port of with all such Goods
and Merchandizes as the said Merchants, or their
Assigns, shall in the mean Time lade and put on
board her, and therewith directly sail, and apply
unto as Wind and Weather shall best
serve for the said Ship to sail, and being arrived as
near to the said Place of he the said Mas-
ter, or Assigns, shall and will, within
working Days next, from and after such her Arri-
val to be accounted, not only unlade and deliver
the said Goods and Merchandizes put on board the
said Ship at aforesaid, unto the said Mer-
chants, their Factors, or Assigns, or some or one
of them, in Safety, and well conditioned, the
Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes and
Rulers excepted, but also shall and will receive, re-
lade, and take on board the said Ship, of and from
the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, or
some or one of them, all such Goods and Merchan-
dizes, as they or any of them shall there please to
lade and put on board her, to the said Ship's full
and compleat Lading; that is to say, as much as
can conveniently be stowed in the whole Hold, and
between Decks, afore the Main-Mast, Room only
reserved for the said Ship's Provisions, Tackle, and
C c Apparel,

no convés, e adiante do masto grande, Salvante so-
 lo lugar pellos mantimentos enxarcias e aparelhos do
 ditto Navio, cos dittos dias de trabalho
 sendo acabados ou o ditto navio sendo ali mais de-
 pressa despachado, o que primeiro soceder elle o
 ditto Mestre ou os seus constituintes com a primeira
 boa occasiam de tempo e vento favoravel em derei-
 tura navegaraõ e tornaraõ a vir com o ditto Navio
 a sua Carga do ditto porto de descaregar, e re-
 caregar de aqui dentro de
 dias de trabalho logo depois da entrada
 do ditto Navio dada na alfandega desta ditto
 elle o ditto Mestre ou os seus Constituintes
 descaregaram e entregaraõ as dittas fazendas e mer-
 cadorias carregadas abordo do ditto Navio ao seu
 descaregar e recaregar sobre ditto aos
 dittos homens de negocio e os seus Testamenteiros,
 Administradores ou Constituintes em salvamento,
 savante o risco dos mares e o tolhimento de Princi-
 pes e Governadores, e assim se acabara a ditto desti-
 nada Viagem. E os dittos homens de nego-
 cio concertam prometem e otorgam por elles mes-
 mos e qualquer delles, ou seus e qualquer de seus
 Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes por
 estes presentes: que os seus Testamentei-
 ros, Administradores, Feitores o Constituintes naõ
 somente descaregaram e recaregaram o ditto na-
 vio ao seu porto de descaregar e recaregar de
 sobre ditto, e despacharam e descaregaram o mes-
 mo neste na maneira e forma acima decla-
 tado, e dentro dos certos dias e tempos sobre no-
 meados; Mas tambem por inteiro de todo o frete
 que se vencer, para se pagar e pedir por e durante esta
 presente destinada viagem; hem e verdadeiramente
 pagaram ou Causaram que se pague ao ditto Me-
 stre, aos seus Testamenteiros Administradores ou
 Constituintes a Contia de
 de dinheiro corrente de na maneira e
 forma

Apparel, and the said working Days being expired, or the said Ship there sooner dispatched, which first shall happen, he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will, with the then next Opportunity of Wind and Weather from her said unlading and relading Part of afore said, directly sail, return, and come back with the said Ship and Lading unto the port of and here within working Days next after the said Ship shall be entered in the Custom-House of this said he the said Master, or his Assigns, shall and will unlade, and deliver the said Goods and Merchandizes, laden on Board the said Ship at her lading and relading afore said, unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, in Safety, and well conditioned, the Dangers of the Seas, and Restraint of Princes, and Rulers excepted, and so end the said intended Voyage; and the said Merchants do covenant, promise, and grant, for themselves, and either of them, their, and either of their Executors and Administrators, to and with the said Master, his Executors and Administrators, and Assigns, by these Presents, that their Executors, Administrators, Factors, or Assigns, shall and will not only unlade and relade the said Ship, at her unlading and relading Port of afore said, and dispatch and discharge the same at this in Manner and Form as above expressed, and within the respective Days and Times above mentioned, but also shall and will, in full of all Freight to be due, payable, or demandable, for or during this present intended Voyage, well and duly pay, or cause to be paid, unto the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, the Sum of of lawful Money of in Manner and Form following: That is to say, Part thereof within Days

forma seguinte Asaber parte delle
dentro em dias despois da entrada
do ditto navio dado na alfandega de

Item mais delle dentro em dias proxi-
mo seguintes, e o restante do ditto frete inteiro
dentro em dias logo despois da descarga
do ditto Navio aqui em sobre ditto, E

acordase reciprocamente por e entre ambas as par-
tes por elles mesmos, os seus particulares Testamen-
teiros, e Administradores que todos os gastos dos
portos que se vencerem para pagar-se ou pedir-se, du-
rante esta presente destinada viagem; foram pagos
e satisfeitos na maneira e forma seguinte; Asaber

delles pellos dittos homens de negocio ou
seus Testamenteiros ou Constituintes: Alem disso
por este se concerta que podra ser e seja licito aos e
pellos dittos homens de negocio, os seus feitores ou
Constituintes de reter o ditto navio em detença ao
seu porto de descarga e recarga sobre ditto, e tam-
bem a sobre ditto tanto tempo e tantos dias que
se requirem, alem dos dias certos acima apontados
salvo que nam passem dias por inteiro;
Elles os dittos homens de negocio os seus Feitores
Constituintes por cada hum e cada tal dia pagando
ao ditto Mestre ou aos seus Constituintes de dia em
dia como mesmo se vencer para se pagar, qualquer
coisa sobreditta em contrario não obstante; e pello
comprimento de todas e de cada hua das cousas a-
cima declaradas, as quaes par parte e pello que ro-
ca ao ditto Mestre, aos seus Testamenteiros Ad-
ministradores ou Constituintes e cada hum delles
sam e devem de ser avidas, tidas, observadas e
compridas, O ditto Mestre se obriga a sy mesmo os
seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, juntamente
com o ditto Navio, o seu frete, enxarcias e aparelhos
aos dittos homens de negocio aos seus Testamen-
teiros, Administradores e Constituintes e cada hum
delles na soma ou pena de dinheiro corrente de
para

Days after the said Ship shall be entered into the Custom House of *Item,* more thereof within Days then next following, and the remaining part of the said whole Freight within Days next after the said Ship shall be delivered after lading here at afore said; and it is mutually agreed by and between the said Parties to these Presents, for themselves, their several Executors and Administrators, That all Port Charges which shall grow due, payable, or demandable, during this present intended Voyage, shall be paid and satisfied in Manner and form following; That is to say, thereof by the said Merchants, their Executors, Factors, or Assigns, and the other thereof by the said Master, his Executors or Assigns: Further, it is hereby agreed, that it shall and may be lawful unto and for the said Merchants, their Factors, or Assigns, to keep the said Ship in Demurrage at her unlading and relading Port above mentioned, and also at afore said, over and above the respected Days aforementioned, such other Time and Number of Days as will be requisite, so as the same exceed not Days in the whole, they the said Merchants, their Factors, for each and every such Day, paying unto the said Master, or his Assigns Day by Day, where the same shall grow due and payable, any Thing afore said to the contrary notwithstanding; and for the Performance of all and singular the Premises, which on the Part and Behalf of the said Master, his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them, are and ought to be well and truly holden, observed, and performed, the said Master doth bind and oblige himself, his Executors and Administrators, together with the said Ship and her Freight, Tackle and Apparel unto the said Merchants, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, and every

para se pagar bem e verdareiramente por estes presentes e tambem pello comprimento de todas e de cada huã das couças sobre dittas, os quaes por parte e pello que toca aos dittos homens de negocio, aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores, Constituintes ou qualquer delles, Sam e devem de ser guardadas, pagas e Compridas; os dittos homens de negocio se obrigam a sy mesmos os seus Testamenteiros e Administradores, junta e separadamente com a suas fazendas que se carregaram abordo do ditto Navio nesta presente destinada viagem, ao ditto Mestre aos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, e a cada hum delles, na semelhante Soma da pena de de Semelhante dinheiro corrente de para ser pago bem e verdaderamente por estas presentes; Em Testemunha no que as partes Sobredittas affinaram e Selaram reciprocamente estas presentes Cartas de fretamento contrahadas, ao dia e anno primeiro acima declarado.

Sellado entregue
adiante de
A. B. C. D.

A Police de Seguro.

EM o Nome de Deus, Amen

Tanto no seu proprio nome como por ou em o nome ou os nomes de todos e cada pessoa ou pessoas a quem o mesmo pertence, possa ou podra pertencer, em parte ou em todo faz o Seguro, causa asy mesmo e a elles, e a cada hum delles de assegurar-se, perdidos ou não perdidos sobre qualquer genero de fazendas e Mercadorias qualquer carregadas ou para se carregarem abordo do bom Navio por nome da Carga de

of them, in the Sum or Penalty of **Pounds**
 of lawful Money of **well and truly to be**
 paid by these Presents, and likewise for the Per-
 formance of all and singular the Premises, which
 on the Part and Behalf of the said Merchants, their
 Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, or any
 of them, are and ought to be kept, paid, and per-
 formed, the said Merchants do bind and oblige
 themselves, their Executors, and administrators,
 jointly and severally, together with their Goods, to
 be laden on board the said Ship, this present intend-
 ed Voyage, unto the said Master, his Executors,
 Administrators, and Assigns, and every of them,
 in the like Sum and Penalty of **of like**
 lawful Money of **also well and truly to**
 be paid by these Presents. In Witness whereof, the
 Parties aforesaid to these present Charter-Parties in-
 dented, have interchangeably put their Hands and
 Seals the Day and Year first above written.

T. B.
 Sealed and delivered in
 the Presence of

A. B. C. D.

A Policy of Assurance.

IN the Name of God, **Amen,**
 as well in his own Name, as for and in the
 Name and Names of all and every other Person and
 Persons to whom the same doth, may, or shall ap-
 pertain, in Part, or in all, doth make Assurance,
 and causeth himself and them, and every of them,
 to be insured, lost, or not lost upon
 any Kind of Goods and Merchandize whatsoever,
 laden or to be laden aboard the good Ship called
 the **Burthen** **Tons,**
C c 4

de toneladas, P. M. do que he Me-
 stre debaixo de Deos C. T. M. ou quem quer que
 for por Mestre do ditto Navio ou o Mestre delle se
 nomea ou nomeara; principiando a aventura sobre
 as dittas fazendas e Mercadorias de elogo despois de
 carregallas abordo do ditto Navio e assim
 se continuara e ficara athe que o ditto Navio com as
 dittas fazendas e Mercadorias quaesquer chegar
 eas mesmas ahi deicarregadas em Salva-
 mento; e sera licito pello ditto navio; nesta via-
 gem, de parar e deterse em quaesquer portos ou lu-
 gares sem prejuizo a este Seguro. As
 dittas fazendas e Mercadorias por concerto, sam e
 seram avaliadas em Sem que se de outra
 conta dellas mesmas, Tocante as Venturas e riscos
 com que nos os asseguradores contentamonos e que
 tomamos sobre nos nesta viagem, Ellas sam dos
 Mares, das naos de guerra, de fogo, inimigos,
 Corsarios, ladroes, Roubadores, Jettezonas ou fa-
 zendas perdidas e deitadas no mar lettras de Marte,
 e contra Marte, sobrefaltos tomadas no Mar, cita-
 coes, tolhimentos e detenças de todos os Reys,
 Princepes e povos de naçam condicam ou qualidade
 qualquer barratriae contrastes enganosas do mestre e
 dos Marinheiros, e de todos os outros perigos; per-
 das e desastres que ja vieram ou que viram ou pre-
 juizo desaproveitamento ou dano das dittas fazen-
 das e mercadorias ou de alguã parte dellas. E se
 acaso soceder alguã perda ou desventura, sera li-
 cito aos Asseguradores Feitores. Servos e Constitu-
 intes de mandar fazer diligencias e trabalhar por,
 em, e acerca da defeza, Salvamento, e recobramento
 das dittas fazendas e mercadorias ou de alguã parte
 dellas sem prejuizo ao deste Seguro, aos gastos do
 que nos os Asseguradores contribuiremos cada hum
 conforme a Sua conthia nelle assegurada; e nos os
 Asseguradores estamos de acordo e concerto que
 esta escriptura e seguro tera tanta força e valor como
 amais

or thereabouts; wherefore *P. M.* is Master, under God, for this present Voyage or who-soever else shall go for Master in the said Ship, or by whatsoever Name or Names the said Ship, or the Master thereof, is or shall be named or called, beginning the Adventure upon the said Goods and Merchandise from and immediately following the Loading thereof aboard the said Ship and so shall continue and endure until the said Ship, with the said Goods and Merchandise whatsoever, shall be arrived and the same there safely landed; and it shall be lawful for the said Ship in this Voyage to stop and stay at any Port or Places without prejudice to this Assurance. The said Goods and Merchandises by Agreement, are and shall be valued at without further Account to be given for the same, touching the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers are contented to bear, and do take upon us in this Voyage, they are of the Seas, Man of War, Fire, Enemies, Pirates, Rovers, Thieves, Jettezons, Letters of Mart and Counter-mart, Surprizals, Takings of Sea, Arrests, Restraints, and Detainments of all Kings, Princes, and People of what Nation, Conditions, or Quality soever, Baratry of the Master and Mariners, and of all other Perils, Losses and Misfortunes, that have or shall come to the Hurt, Detriment, or Damage of the said Goods and Merchandises, or any part thereof; and in Case of any Loss or Misfortune, it shall be lawful to the assured Factors, Servants, and Assigns, to sue, labour, and travel, for, in, and about the Defence, Safeguard, and Recovery of the said Goods and Merchandises, or any part thereof, without Prejudice to this Assurance, to the Charges whereof, we the Assurers will contribute each one according to the Rate and Quantity of his Sum herein assured: And it is agreed by us the Insurers, that

a mais authentica Police ou escriptura de Seguros dantes
feita em qualquer parte de E assim nos os Assigu-
radores somos contentes e por este prometemos
obrigamos cada hum por sua propria parte, os
nosos Erecyros, Testamenteiros, Administradores
e Constituintes pello verdadeiro compromisso das
coisas acima declaradas, confessando que esta-
mos pagos e satisfeitos do que se nos deve a conta
deste Seguro.

Em testemunha da que nos os Assiguradores, assi-
namos ao pe deste com as contras assguradas

Eu A. B. Sou Contento com este Seguro

por cem libras Esterl. 100 £.

The said Goods and Merchandises by Agreement

are to be valued at

the Account to be given for the same touching

the Adventures and Perils which we the Assurers

are contracted to bear, upon us in this

Voyage, they are of the Seas, Man of War, Fire,

Rovers, Pirates, and all other

perils, and we the Assurers

are to be bound to pay the same

without any delay or denial

and we the Assurers are to be

bound to pay the same

without any delay or denial

and we the Assurers are to be

bound to pay the same

without any delay or denial

and we the Assurers are to be

bound to pay the same

without any delay or denial

that this Writing and Assurance shall be of as much Force and Effect, as the surest Policy or Writing of Assurance heretofore made, in or elsewhere in

and so we the Assurers are contented, and do hereby promise and bind ourselves, each one for his own Part, our Heirs, Executors, and Goods, to the Assured, their Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, for the true Performance of the Premises, confessing ourselves paid the Consideration due unto us for this Assurance, by

In Witness whereof, we the Assurers have subscribed our Names and Seals assured in

I A. B. am contented with this Assurance for One hundred Pounds. Witness my Hand

1767. 1006.

A Bill of Lading

SHIPPED, by the Grace of God, in good Order, and well conditioned, by and upon the good Ship called the whereof is Master under God, for this present Voyage, and now riding at Anchor in London, and, by God's Grace, bound for to say being marked and numbered as in the Margin, and are to be delivered in like good Order, and well conditioned, at the aforesaid Port of the Danger of the Seas only excepted, unto Mr.

or his Assigns, he or they paying for the said Goods with Primage and Average, as is accustomed. In Witness whereof, the Master and Purser of the said Ship hath affirmed to three Bills of Lading, all of this Tenor and Date; the one of which three Bills being accomplished, the other two to stand

prido os outros não valham; feito em
 em de de 1767 Annos
 Do que contem não sey.

Ou Instrumento ou Escriitura de Compromisso.

A Todos quantos este presente Instrumento ou
 Escriitura de Compromisso, virem, de nos
 Acredores de G. M. Mercador de Saude;
 Em como ditto G. M. ao presente fica devendo e
 em direito deve a nos os Acredores delle ditto G.
 M. varias e diversas somas de Dinheiro, &c. As
 quacs em razam de muitas dividas e algũas dellas
 muy grandes, que tambem em direito se lhe devem
 a elle, nem se podem arrecadar sem algua dilaçam
 de tempo, e por serem alguas dellas irrecuperaveis
 sem demanda, elle está por ora muito desabilitado
 de fazer pagamento a nos os seus Acredores da
 nossa inteira e justa divida conforme a sua vontade e
 desejo; ao respeito de que, elle nos pede com todo
 o encarecimento que nos os dittos Acredores, e cada
 hum de nos fossimos servidos de dar e conceder a
 elle o Ditto G. M. aos seus Testamenteiros, Admi-
 nistradores, ou Constituintes, tanta largueza o dilaçam
 de tempo pello pagamento e satisfaçam de nossas
 dividas particulares que lhe parecer justo e rezaõ
 pello alcance e cobrança das dittas dividas, Asaber,
 que nos e cada hum de nos ficassimos contentes a
 tomar e receber de nossas dividas inteira sem
 para se repartirem em partes, para sepa-
 garem em pagamentos diversos na maneira
 e forma Seguinte Asaber, o primeiro pagamento
 della hade ser e o resto pargar-sea em
 proximo pella inteira paga e Satisfaçam
 das dittas dividas especeficadas; E pello mais ple-
 nario comprimento dos varios pagamentos sobre
 dittos

stand void. And so God send the good Ship to
her desired Port in Safety. *Amen.* Dated in

on of 1767

Inside and Contents unknown.

A Letter of Licence.

TO all People, to whom this present Writing
shall come, We the Creditors of G. M. of
Merchant, send greeting. Whereas the
said G. M. at this present Time, doth stand in-
debted, and does justly owe unto us the said Credi-
tors of him the said G. M. divers and sundry Sums
of Money, &c. which, by Reason of many Debts,
and some of them very great, that are likewise
justly owing unto him, and cannot be had or re-
covered without some Respite of Time, and some
of them not without Suit, he is very much disa-
bled at present to make Payment unto us the
said Creditors, our whole and just Debt, as he seem-
eth willing and desirous; in consideration whereof,
he instantly desireth us, That we the said Creditors,
and every of us, would be pleased to give and grant
unto the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators,
or Assigns, such Liberty or Respite of Time, for the
Payment and Satisfaction of our several Debts, as
he thinketh reasonable for the obtaining, getting,
and recovering of the said Debts: viz. That we
and every of us would be content to take, and ac-
cept of our whole Debts in to be divided
in Parts, to be paid at several
Payments, in Manner and Form following: viz.
The first Payment thereof to be and the
Residue to be paid at next in
full Payment and Satisfaction of the said several
Debts: And for the more full Performance of the
said several Payments aforesaid, in such Manner and
Form

ditto em tal maneira e forma como acima se limita e declara, ao verdadeiro intento destas presentes elle o ditto G. M. ao ou antes do fera obrigado a nos os ditto acreadores na mesma conformidade, por hũa obrigaçam que se fara na melhor forma de dereito com todos e cada hum dos pagamentos na maneira em cima limitada, hum certo lugar ou lugares convinientes de nos os ditto Acredores nomeados, e a pena de cada hũa das obrigaçoens ha de ser dobrada da Soma inteira incluza nella mesma para ser a nos entregue e a cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros ou Constituintes, ao ou antes do proximo Seguinte data desta; por esta causa Saibae; que nos os ditto Acredores aqui em baixo assinados, e cada hum de nos para sy em particular, e por seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes ao respeito do emcima especificado e declarado, por estes presentes de vontade propria consentimos, contratamos, prometemos e concordamos ao e com o ditto G. M. ou seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes por estes presentes que nos os ditto Acredores, e cada hum de nos, os nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes aceitaremos do ditto G. M. dos seus Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes, todas e cada hũa de taes dividas e conthias dinheiro do ditto G. M. a nos e cada hum de nos, devidas e vencidas na virtude de taes obrigaçoens, Segurança ou Seguranças sobredittas para se pagarem em tal modo e maneira, e aos taes dias e tempos que acima se limitaõ e requerem. E alem, disso, que nos os ditto Acredores e cada hum de nos, ou nossos e cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores e Constituintes em conformidade ao entregue da ditto Obrigaçam a nos e a cada hum de nossos Testamenteiros, Administradores, e Constituintes, ao custo do ditto G. M. os seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes, Sellaremos assinaremos e
na

Form as is above limited and declared, according to the true Meaning of these Presents, he the said G. M. shall and will, at, or before the be- come bound unto us the said Creditors respectively, by one Obligation in due Form of Law to be made, including all and every the Payments in such Sort as is above limited, at some convenient Place or Places by every of us the said Creditors to be nominated and appointed, and the Penalty of every Obligation to be double the whole Sum included in the Condition of the same to be delivered to us, and every of us, our Executors or Assigns, at or before the next ensuing the Date hereof: Know ye therefore, that we the said Creditors, whose Names are here under-written, and every of us for his own Part, and for his Executors, Administrators and Assigns, for the Consideration above specified and expressed, do by these Presents willingly consent, covenant, promise and agree to and with the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, to accept of the said G. M. his Executors and Assigns, all and every of the said Debts and Sums of Money by the said G. M. unto us, and every of us, owing, and paying upon such Obligations, Assurance and Assurances, as aforesaid, to be paid in such Manner and Sort, and at such Days and Times, as is above limited and required. And further, that we the said Creditors, and every of us, our, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns respectively, upon the Delivery of the said Obligation to us, and to every of us, and every of our Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, shall and will, at the Charge of the said G. M. his Executors, Administrators, and Assigns, seal, subscribe, and, in due Form of Law, deliver to the said G. M. our sufficient general Release, for him, his Executors, Administrators, or Assigns, to bear Date and

na melhor forma e direito entregaremos ao ditto G. M. a nossa geral e sufficiente descarga, para ser rendida por elle o ditto G. M. ou seus Testamenteiros Administradores e Constituintes a data e a limitacam antes do dia e data desta obrigacam nova; em testemunha do que a esta temos affinado e sellado ao dia e no anno, &c.

A Letra de Cambio.

Londres,

por 300 Milres.

A Vista desta minha primeira Letra de Cambio pagará Vm. ao Senhor T. M. ou Ordem a Conthia de trezentos Milreis em dinheiro corrente de Portugal, o Valor, recebido do Senhor T. D. a tempo fara bom pagamento, lançandoa na conta como por avizo de

Ao Senhor T. M. Mercador
em Lisboa.

S. D. V. M.
T. M.

Lisboa em do

1746, por 250 £. Starl.

A Quarenta Dias Vista desta minha Segunda Letra de Cambio, (a primeira não sendo paga) pagara Vm, ao Senhor F. G. & Companhia, ou Ordem a Soma de dozentas e Cinquenta libras Esterlinas em moeda corrente de Ingalaterra, o valor recebido do Senhor J. D. a tempo fara bom pagamento acentandoa na conta com por avizo de

Ao Senhor T. B. Mercador,
em Londres.

H. S.

and Limitation, before the Day of the Date of this new Obligation to be made for the Debr. In Witness whereof, we have hereunto set our Hands and Seals: Dated the

of *Ec.*

Bills of Exchange.

London of 1767 for 300 Milreas.

AT Sight of this my first Bill of Exchange, please to pay to Mr. T. M. or Order, the Sum of Three Hundred Milreas in current Money of *Portugal*, Value received of Mr. T. D. at Time, make good Payment, placing it to Account, as per Advice, from, *S I R,*
To Mr. T. M. Merchant *Yours, H. S.*
in *Lisbon.* *T. M.*

Lisbon of 1746, for 250*l.* Sterl.

AT Forty Days Sight, of this my second Bill of Exchange, my first and third not being paid, please to pay to Mr. F. G. and Company, or Order, the Sum of two Hundred and fifty Pounds *Sterling*, in current Money of *England*, Value received of Mr. J. D. at Time, make good Payment, and place it to Account, as per Advice, from, *S I R,*
To Mr. T. B. Merchant *Yours, H. S.*
in *London,* *F. P.*

O protesto de bñ Letra de Cambio.

SAIBAM todas a quem esta presente escripta.
 ra tocar que aos 11 de Jomez de, do
 anno de 1750 ao requerimento de P. C. Mer-
 cador de 1750 eu M. N. Tabaliaõ de
 notas jurado e admitido pella autoridade del Rey,
 &c. fuy á casa da morada do Senhor T. B. sobre
 quem a Letra de Cambio emcima referida he saca-
 da, e mostrey a original ao ditto T. B. requerendo
 a sua aceitaçam della, o que me respondeo que não
 aceitaria a ditto Letra por huãs razoes que escre-
 vesse ao Senhor T. P. o sacador; pella qual razão
 eu o ditto Tabaliaõ protestey, por estes presentes
 protesto, tanto contra o ditto F. P. o sacador como
 tambem contra o ditto T. B. sobre quem he sacada,
 demais contra todas as outras pessoas, Endorçadores,
 ou outras nella intereßados, por todos os Cambios,
 Recambios, danos e intereßes quaesquer: Em pre-
 sença de H. J. S. T. chamados por Testemunhas
 a este presente acto feito no meu Escritorio em o
 dia e anno acima declarado.

M. N. Notario Publico.

Varias Formas de Recibos.

Dinheiro recebido por inteiro.

Receby 1 Janeiro, 1750, do Senhor Thomas
 Crew, Seis Livras Sete Chilins Seis peniques
 por inteiro comprimento de todas as contas, por

Dinheiro recebido por Conta de meu Amo.

Receby a 22 de Fevereiro 1750, do Sr. Jonas
 Lee, quatro Livras e Cinco Chilins por Con-
 ta de meu amo Moises Trust, por.

Din-

A Protest of a Bill of Exchange.

KNOW all Persons whom this present Writing may concern, that the of in the Year at the Request of Mr. P. C. of Merchant, T. M. N. Public Notary, sworn and admitted by Authority of his most sacred Majesty, did go to the Dwelling-house or Habitation of Mr. T. B. upon whom the abovenamed Bills, of Exchange is drawn, and shewed the Original unto the said Mr. T. B. demanding his Acceptance of the same, who answered me he should not accept the same Bill, for some Reasons he should write Mr. F. P. the Drawer: Wherefore I the said Notary did protest, and by these Presents protest, as well against the said F. P. the Drawer, as likewise against the said T. B. upon whom it is drawn; as also against all other Persons, Indorsers, or others therein concerned, for all Changes, Rechanges, Damages and Interest whatsoever, in Presence of H. J. and S. T. called for Witnesses to this present Act, done in my Office in the Day and Year above mentioned.

M. N. Notary Public.

Various Forms of Receipts.

Money received in Full.

REceived 1st January, 1750, of Mr. Thomas Crew, Six Pounds Seven Shillings and Sixpence, in full of all Demands per

For another's Use.

REceived 22d February, 1750, of Mr. Jonas Lee, Four Pounds Five Shillings, for the Use of my Master Moses Trust, per

D. 2

Money

Dinheiro recebido em parte.

R Eceby a 30 de Março, 1751, do Sr. Jacinto Cook, Cinco Livras Cinco Chilins, em parte de doze Livras e dez Chilins, por Conta de meu pay Antonio Truelove, por

Dinheiro recebido em parte de Contas que não estão ajustadas.

R Eceby a 24 de Abril, 1751, da Senhora Martha Rich, por mãos de Pedro Cornet, onze Livras a Conta, por

Quando hum Rol ou Conta se paga por inteiro.

R Eceby a 15 de Mayo, 1751, a conthia de esta Conta, por

Quando se paga dinheiro a Conta de hum rol.

R Eceby a 6 de Junho, 1751, Sete livras em parte desta Conta, por

Notas ou Obrigaçoens que faz hum Homem quando toma dinheiro emprestado.

Londres, 4 de Junho, 1751.

EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar a o Sr. E. D. Banqueiro do Thezouro de sua Magestade do Excise, ou á sua ordem quarenta dias despois da data desta obrigação quatro centas e trinta livras por valor recebido.

£ 430

p Christovão Wadæ.

EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar a o Sr. Paulo Barker cavalheiro oua sua ordem em sendo requerido trezentas, e noventa, e quatro livras dous Chilins

Money received in Part.

R Eceived 30th of *March*, 1751, of Mr. *James Cook*, five Pounds Ten Shillings, in Part of Twelve Pounds Ten Shillings, for my Father *Anthony Truelove*, per

Money received on Accounts unsettled.

R Eceived 24th *April*, 1751, of Mrs. *Martha Rich*, by the Hands of *Peter Cornet*, Eleven Pounds on Account, per

When a Bill is paid in Full.

R Eceived 15th *May*, 1751, the full Contents hereof, per

When a Bill is paid in Part.

R Eceived 26th *June*, 1751, Seven Pounds in Part hereof, per

Promissory Notes, for a Man's Self.

London, June 4th, 1751.

I Promise to pay to Mr. *Edward Draper*, Cashier of his Majesty's Revenue of Excise, or Order, forty Days after Date, Four hundred and thirty Pounds. Value received

£ 430

per *Christopher Wade*.

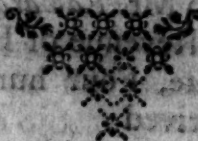
I Promise to pay to *Paul Barker*, Esq; or Order, on demand, Three hundred and ninety-four Pounds, Two Shillings, and Six-pence. Value

Chilins e Seis peniques por valor recebido hoje 17
de Julho, 1751.
£ 394 2 6 per Philip Venbam.

EU abaixo firmado prometo pagar ao Sr. J. T.
oua sua ordem, quarenta e nove libras, e tres
Chilins 6 mezes depois da data desta obrigação por
valor recebido em verdade do que assigney hoje
24 de Agosto 1751.
£ 49 3

N. B. Observe-se q. em notas ou obrigações
sempre se declara a soma recebida sem a qual não
são de nenhuma força nem tem Authoridade.

S. I. N. I. E



Value received this 17th of July, 1751.

£ 394 2 6

per Philip Venham.

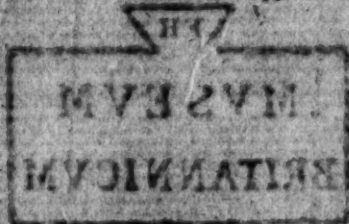
I Promise to pay to Mr. J. T. or Order, Forty nine Pounds Three Shillings, six Months after Date, Value received. Witness my Hand this 24th of August, 1751.

£ 49 3

per William Jones.

N. B. Observe in Promissory Notes that the Value received is mentioned, or they are of no Force.

F I N I S.



Value received this 15th of July, 1751.
 £ 34 2 0

I promise to pay to Mr. J. B. or Order, Forty
 nine Pounds & nine Shillings, six Months after
 Date, Value received. Witness my Hand this
 15th of July, 1751.
 per William Jones.

M. B. Oblige in Promissory Notes, that the
 Value received is mentioned, or they are of no
 Force.

FR
MVSEVM
BRITANNICVM

